

THE
Book of Martyrs,
WITH AN
ACCOUNT
OF THE
Acts and Monuments
OF
Church and State,
FROM

The time of our Blessed Saviour, to the
Year 1701.

Wherein is given a Faithful Relation of the
Sufferings and *Martyrdoms* of the Apostles,
Evangelists, and Primitive Christians, under the
Ten Heathen Persecutions, and of the Anti-
Christian Popish Persecutions that have been in
England, Ireland, Italy, Germany, Bohemia, Spain,
Flanders, France, Hungary, Poland, Lithuania,
Savoy, Piemont, and in other Countries.

Abstracted from the Best Authors and
Original Papers.

Illustrated with Cutts engraved on Copper-plates.

In Two Volumes.

VOL. I.

LONDON, Printed for D. Brogne, at the
Black Swan without Temple-Bar, and W. Turner,
at the Angel at Lincolns-Inn Back-Gate. 1702.



Book of the

of the

of the

of the

of the

of the

of the

of the

of the

Se
fel
th
a
be
th
fa
Fr
ac
Co
ap
in
sen

T H E

PREFACE.

THE Death and Persecutions of the Christian Martyrs, is a Subject so Noble and Useful in it self, and so worthy the acceptance of the Protestant World, that I presume a Compendium of this nature may be ventur'd into the Publick, without the sanction of a long and formal Preface; and therefore to bespeak the Friendship of the Reader, I shall only acquaint him, that I have made this Collection with the utmost care and application, and continu'd it from the time of our Saviour, down to the present Age.

The PREFACE.

That a Book of this nature is extremely needful, 'twill be granted I believe, upon the Account that there is yet no such Regular and Compleat History in being, by which the Memory of these Great Men may be preserv'd; for want of which, in a Generation or two, a great many of 'em will be utterly lost to Posterity.

I must own indeed, that the Death and Persecutions of the Christian Martyrs, have most of 'em been already recorded by Mr. Fox and others; but then the Unhappiness is, that they are either dispers'd and scatter'd about in different Volumes, or lock'd up in obscure and obsolete Language, or what's as bad, Buried in such large Volumes, that in truth 'tis Impossible they should so well Answer the great end, as one intire Methodical and Concise Collection.

The PREFACE.

Books of this Nature should be made as Publick as possible, and fitted even to the meanest Capacity, and this it was that at first prevail'd with me to resolve upon this Undertaking, which howsoever defective it may be otherways; I can assure the Reader it carries with it a very honest and good design.

The Collections are all along made with the utmost Candour of a true Historian, and nothing taken upon trust, or suggestion, so that whatsoever is contain'd in the following sheets, may be rely'd upon as Genuine and Authentick, as far as is consistent with Accounts of this Nature, as the strength of History may be depended upon.

I have been very careful to preserve a regular Method, to avoid Prolixity and Useless Repetitions, and have every where omitted those fabulous and absurd

The PREFACE.

surd tales and surmises, that have render'd most of the Books upon this subject Contemptible ; and withal, I have endeavour'd to confine my self to such a plain and familiar stile, that I hope it will in a great measure Answer the Purposes before mentioned, and be of some service to the Protestant Religion in General.

Under this Presumption (Good Reader) I leave it with thee, with my Prayers to Almighty God, that he would continue to Defend and Protect his Church from all Oppression, Tyranny, and Superstition.



ren
sub
ave
such
hope
the
e o
gion

Rea
ray
ul
hi
nn

I H



A Prospect of the ten Heathen Persecutions



Behold how for Christs sake the Martyres stood
 And Sealed their Testimony with their blood
 Not Death by Cruell torments could divide
 Them from the truth or Make them Start as

THE
STATE
OF THE
CHURCH, &c.

Of the Sufferings and Crucifixion of our Saviour Jesus Christ, with the Sufferings and Martyrdoms of the Apostles, Evangelists, &c.

THE Patriarchs having rested so firmly upon the Promises made them of the Messias, and the Prophets having likewise predicted the coming of Christ according to the Flesh, to compleat the Redemption of Mankind by dying for them, and laying the Foundation of a more glorious Church than that of the Jews, which was darkly veil'd under Types and Figurative Representations: This put the Powers of Darkness upon contriving all ways possible (upon our Blessed Lord's appearing in the World) to suppress our holy Religion in its Infancy, and to that end stirred up their wicked Instruments to persecute and even exterminate it, had it been possible, from the Face of the Earth, by their many and unheard of Cruelties, such as none but Agents for Hell could

The Introduction.

B

have

have had the Hearts to execute, even on Offenders and such as might justly deserve Punishment; much less upon Innocent Persons, *whose gain* (this way only in the true Sense of *St. Paul*) *was Godliness*, at the loss of their Lives, and undergoing all the most exquisite Tortures that the Wit and Malice of their keenest Adversaries could invent.

But not to preambule on a Subject so copious: In the first place we find in the Records of undeniable Truth, That no sooner was Christ, the promised Messias entred upon the Stage of this World in Lowliness and great Humility, to fulfil the great work of Man's Redemption; but *Herod* persecuted him and caused him to flee into *Egypt*, destroying the Holy Innocents, in hopes our Saviour might have fallen likewise in that cruel and promiscuous Massacre. Nor had he long begun to prepare the way for the building up of his Church, but Satan himself tempted him in the Solitude of a Desert Wilderness, that, if possible, he might prevent the Good intended to all the Posterity of *Adam*, whom he had so easily seduced in Paradise: But by this second *Adam* (*The Lord from Heaven*) the grand Deceiver was baffled and put to the foil, tho' he left nothing unessay'd, still inspiring Rage and Malice into his wicked Instruments, even till they had caused the Lord of Glory, who had gone about doing so much good amongst them, first to be betrayed by *Judas Iscariot*, one of his Followers, then buffeted, scourged, mocked, and finally crucified in the Four and thirtieth Year of his taking our Flesh upon him, and in the Seventeenth Year of *Tiberius Nero* Emperour of *Rome*; but in dying to lead the way to those that then were and now are to follow him, he gloriously triumphed over the Malice of Devils and wicked Men, and even over Death it self, by rising from the Grave and ascending into Heaven, where he now sits at the right Hand of God, governing and protecting his Church, and making Intercession for all the Members of it. And

Christ's
Crucifixion.
c. 33.



And now, though God shewed his angry Resentments against the Persecutors of his Son in peculiar and fearful Judgments, as *Judas* hanging himself in Horrour and Despair, *Pilate's* being deposed, and banished to *Lyons*, and there killing himself, *Agripa's* Imprisonment, with the Punishments that fell upon *Herod* and *Caiaphas*, both deposed and dying miserably, and many others who had a hand in shedding that Innocent Blood; and finally, the Destruction and Subversion of the whole Nation of the *Jews* under *Vespasian* and *Titus* his Son; yet other Persecutors took no warning by it, but followed the Steps of those that had waded in Blood before them: For though *Tiberius Caesar* upon receiving Letters from *Pilate* of Christ's Miracles, blameless Life, Dying, Resurrection and Ascension into Heaven; and how he was received as God of many, mov'd the Senate of *Rome* to have him adored as a God, which they foolishly refused, because he was adored as God before the Senate of *Rome* had so decreed and appointed it, &c. *Tertul. Apol. c. 5.* Yet he exercised his Cruelties upon those at *Rome*, who had, in the dawning of the Gospel, had the Heavenly Seed sown in their Hearts; and though, indeed, his Hand was stayed by an over-ruling Power from a general Persecution, yet *Suetonius* accounts him a very cruel Emperour in this and other Barbarities.

The untimely Death of the Crucifiers of our Lord.

Passing over *John the Baptist*, who was beheaded in Prison by *Herod*, before the Crucifixion of our Saviour, the next in the List is *St. Stephen*, accounted by the Church as the *Proto*, or first Martyr, who was cruelly stoned to death for testifying the Truth, and so sealing his Testimony with his Blood, ascended to that Heaven that was opened to invite him to it; as you may find more at large *Acts 7.*

John Baptist beheaded.
St. Stephen the Protomartyr of the Church.

This blessed Martyr no sooner ascended and enter'd into the Rest of his Lord, but the Rage of the Persecutors fell upon *St. James* the Apostle and Brother of *John*, whom *Herod* caused to be slain with a Sword.

St. James slain.

a Sword for his Preaching the Gospel, *Acts* 5. 12. of which Apostle *Eusebius*, quoting *Clement*, says, He being brought to the Tribunal Seat, when his Accuser perceived he would be condemned and suffer Death, he followed him to Execution, and much moved thereat, with remorse of Conscience, after a hearty Repentance for what he had done, rushed in among the Persecutors, and openly declared himself to be a Christian, imploring the Apostle with abundance of Tears, to forgive him the Injury he had done him, which he freely did, saying, *Peace be to thee, Brother*, and kissed him, and so they both suffered together by being beheaded with the same Sword, *Anno* 36. About this time also fell many others; for *Dorotheus* testifies, that *Nicanor* one of the seven Deacons, with two thousand more that believed in Christ, suffered (as he would have it) upon the same day that *St. Stephen* was stoned.

St. Thomas the Apostle preaching in *Hircania*, *Parthia*, *India*, and other wild and barbarous Nations, converted many to the Faith, till Satan envying the progress of the Gospel, stirred up the Pagan Priests and others against him, who finding him in a little Chapel devoutly praying, thrust him through with a Spear, or as some have it, a Dart; the difference however not being much, since certain it is he died by some such Weapon, and slept in Christ beyond the further power of Rage or Malice to molest or disturb his everlasting Tranquility.

The next that tasted of the Cup Christ drank, as he had foretold when he remained on Earth with them, was *Simon Zelotes*; having preached the Gospel successfully in *Mauritania* and other Countries of *Africa*, and as some hold, in *Britain*, was cruelly crucified, praying for his Persecutors and giving Glory to God when he was fixed upon the Cross, continuing so to do till he gave up the Ghost.

Jude, Brother of *James*, called also *Thaddæus*, being sent forth to preach the Gospel to the *Edessens*, wrought

St. James's
Accuser
owns him-
self a Chri-
stian, and
be to thee,
Brother,
and kissed
him, and
so they
both
suffered
together
by being
beheaded
with the
same
Sword,
Anno
36. About
this time
also fell
many
others;
for
Dorotheus
testifies,
that
Nicanor
one of the
seven
Deacons,
with two
thousand
more that
believed
in Christ,
suffered
(as he
would
have it)
up-
on the
same
day that
St. Stephen
was
stoned.

St. Tho-
mas slain.

Simon
Zelotes
crucified.

Jude na-
med Thad-
dæus pur-
to Death.

wrought many Miracles amongst them, by which means he converted many to the Faith; but Tumults and Disturbances being raised by malicious Men, who concluded their *Diana* was at stake by this way of preaching, to shake the Pagan Idolatry; tho' as it is found in the Records of *Edessa*, that he had cured a Prince of the Country of a Languishing Disease, he was by a Contrivance against him slain in *Berito*, under the Reign of King *Augarus*.

The next Champion under the Banner of the glorious Captain of our Salvation, who sealed his Testimony with his Blood, receiving the Crown of Martyrdom, was *Simon* called *Cananeus*, who was Brother to *Jude* and *James the Less*, all Sons to *Mary Cleopha* and of *Alpheus*. This good Man was Bishop of *Jerusalem* after *James*, and as *Dorotheus* writes, was in a cruel manner crucified in *Egypt*, in the Reign of *Trajan* the Roman Emperor. Tho' this seems to be contradicted by *Abdias*, who tells us, that taking his Brother *Jude* with him he travelled into the Country of *Parfidis*, where they converted many to the Faith, doing much good in healing the Sick, Lame and Blind, and shewing divers Miracles to the Astonishment of the People, till the persecuting Spirit was raised up against them; so that in a Tumult of the People they were slain at a City of that Country called *Suaniz*.

Simon the Canaanite murdered.

S. Mark the Evangelist was constituted the first Bishop of *Alexandria* in *Egypt*, where he successfully preached for a time, applauded by a multitude of People who flock'd to hear him preach and be baptiz'd by him; but the Red Dragon, who sought to devour the First-born of the Church, sent out a Flood of Water, that is, a persecuting Spirit, as it properly may be termed, which streamed almost every where, till the Earth opened its Mouth and swallowed it; so that this holy Man, (for mostly the Pillars of the Church were aimed at, thinking, if they were shaken, the rest of the Building would fall of it self) being persecuted, at length his Enemies prevailed

St. Mark's Life and Death.

The Acts and Monuments

to take away his Life; for being in their power, they fastened Ropes to his Feet, and dragg'd him up and down the Streets in a cruel and barbarous manner, raging and exclaiming like so many Infernal Fiends, whilst he, imitating his Master, prayed for their Forgiveness at the Hands of God; at last, having got Fuel together, they made a Fire and cast him into it, but not being quite burnt, his Bones and Ashes were interr'd at a Town not far from *Alexandria* called *Bucolus*, supposed now to be the same with *Boulack*, and so piously this good Evangelist resign'd his Soul to God, suffering Martyrdom in the Reign of *Trajan* the Roman Emperour.

*The Life of
St. Bartho-
lomew,
and man-
ner of his
Death.*

St. *Bartholomew* is held by warrantable Writers of the Ancients, to pass through many Countries, preaching the Gospel, and doing good to all sorts of People that applied themselves to him. in curing their Diseases, and applying Spiritual Remedies to their Souls: Some hold, that being in *India* he translated the Gospel of St. *Matthew* into that Language, which seems to be confirmed by Travellers who have lately been in those Parts. He also did many Miracles, and flourished in great Reputation till such time the Gospel began to flourish, which some envying, secretly raised him Enemies, who set upon him with Clubs and Staves, and after cruelly using him, they crucified him, flea'd him alive, and then to dispatch him cut off his Head, as *Johannes de Monte Regali* has it.

*The Life of
St. An-
drew, and
how he suf-
fered.*

St. *Andrew* Brother to St. *Peter*, according as St. *Jerom* has it in his Book *De Catalogo Scriptorum Eccles.* preached the Gospel of his Lord and Master to many barbarous Nations, as the *Scythians*, *Sogdians* and *Sarrans*; also in the City called *Augustia* Inhabited by *Ethiopians*, and coming into the Country of *Edessa* he was crucified by *Egeas* the Governour of the Country, and buried at *Patris* a City of *Achaia*; and other Authors, as *Bernard* and *Cyprian*, &c. affirm the cause of the Consuls putting

ring him to Death, was, for perswading Men from Idol-worship and only to fall down before and adore the Living God, Maker of Heaven and Earth, and all things therein, and so his persisting, (notwithstanding all Threats and Perswasions to the contrary) to preach the Gospel in Cities, Towns, Fields, and in all places of resort. For this it was he was doom'd to a Cross made of two Trees, their ends fixed cross-ways in the Ground. Upon which he resolutely answers, *That he would not have preached the Honour and Glory of the Cross if he had feared the Death of the Cross*; and so went courageously and undauntedly underwent his Sufferings, saying, *O Cross most welcome and long expected, with a willing Mind and joyful Desire I embrace thee (being the Disciple of him who did hang on the Cross) because I have been always thy Lover and coveted to embrace thee*; so being fastened to it, and having preached to the People from it, with much Chearfulness and Alacrity of Spirit, without a Groan or Sigh, amidst his Cruciating Tortures, he yielded up the Ghost the day before the Calends of December.

St. Matthew otherwise called Levi, first a Publican but after turned a Follower of Christ, and so became an Apostle, wrote the Gospel to the Jews in the Hebrew Tongue, as Eusebius tells us, *Lib. 3. c. 24, 29. Lib. 5. c. 8, 10.* and certain it is, by the power of his Mission he preached the Gospel as the rest did, and underwent the Persecution of wicked Men, tho' Authors disagree about the place where he suffered Martyrdom. *Johannes de Monte Regali* tells us, That after he had preached to the Jews he was first stoned and then beheaded, and so obtained the Crown; to purchase which, he had left all his worldly Goods; but others record of him, That he died in *Ethiopia*.

St. Philip the Apostle, after he had travelled to plant the Gospel amongst the barbarous Nations, preaching Salvation to them; and having converted

St. Matthew's
Conversion
and Death.

St. Philip's
Preaching
and Sufferings.

The Acts and Monuments

many from Pagan Error and Superstition to the knowledge of God and saving Faith in Christ, in his way of returning towards *Jerusalem* suffered Death, by being crucified and stoned at a City named *Hierapolis* in *Phrygia*, where he was buried, as also his Daughter; as *Isidore* in his Book of the Fathers of the *New Testament* affirms.

The Testimony and Sufferings of S. James the Brother of our Lord.

St. *James the Greater* the Brother of our Lord, according to the Flesh, who for his Integrity, Justice and Uprightness in all his Words and Actions: When he sat Bishop at *Jerusalem*, felt, as the others had done, the Rage and Malice of the Persecuting *Jews*; for though nothing but Integrity was found in him, and he turned all his Endeavours to do good to all, yet even for that the Sect of the Pharisees envied him, and laid wait for an opportunity to destroy him; and in order to bring about their malicious Ends, at the time of the Passover, when all the People of the *Jews* were to assemble at *Jerusalem*, they desired him to go upon the Battlements of the Church or Temple and make an Oration to the People concerning Jesus who was crucified, but slyly inculcated to him, that he might do it in behalf of himself seeing he was so Just a Man, and so be taken for the promised Messias, that the People might rely on him, and not be kept wavering; but he so far declined this latter, that being upon the Battlements, when they said unto him, *Thou just Man, whom we all ought to obey, because this People is led after Jesus who is crucified, tell us what is become of Jesus crucified*; he lifted up his Voice and answered, *What do you ask me of Jesus the Son of Man, seeing he sitteth on the right of God in Heaven, and shall come in the Clouds to judge the World*. But when many perswaded of this by his Testimony, glorified God, and cry'd, *Hosanna in the highest to the Son of David*, the Scribes and Pharisees said among themselves, we have not done well that we have caused such a Testimony of Jesus be-
fore

the People, however let us go up and compel him to recant it; but in their wicked purpose, crying out, *O this just Man is also seduced!* they threw him down on the Pavement, where other bloody-minded Men of their Sect cast Stones at him; for not being killed by the fall, he was got on his Knees and praying for them in these words, *viz. O Lord God most merciful Father forgive them, for they know not what they do;* after which, one with a Fullers Club beat out his Brains, and so he passed from an Earthly Seat of Dignity to one more transcendently Glorious in Heaven. And to the Death of this just Man Josephus ascribes, as one main cause, all the miserable Calamities that after beset the City of *Jerusalem* and whole Nation of the *Jews*, because they had acknowledged him to be just, yet for all that wickedly murdered him.

But though this Havock was made of the Church, the Enemy of the Christian Religion, knowing well that it was a good Policy to strike at the Corner-stones, as the best Expedient to overthrow the Foundation, yet God upheld it by a mighty Spirit and Arm, so that the Wisdom of the Adversary bent against it was turned into Foolishness, and *He that sitteth in Heaven* derided their feeble Malice, and laughed them to scorn; for *the Blood of the Martyrs sowed the Seed of the Church*, and made it sprout up like the victorious Palm under oppressing Weights, yielding Fruits of Eternal Life; for even the Constancy of the dying Martyrs, and their chearfulness in the Flames, out of which they would not accept Deliverance on the Terms the Enemies of Christ their Lord and Master proposed, prevailing upon Multitudes who saw them pass to Heaven in their Chariot of Flames, to embrace their innocent Doctrine; so that even many times their Accusers and Tormentors, seeing their Constancy and Resolution, concluded they suffered for a just and righteous Cause that could support them under the fears of Death

Death in its most frightful shapes, turned Christians joyfully sharing with them in their Crowns of Martyrdom.

*St. Matthias his
Life and
Martyrdom*

The next that followed in this glorious Rank was *St. Matthias*, who preached the Doctrine of his great Lord and Master to the barbarous *Ethiopians* and reproving them for their Idolatrous Worship and pressing to them the Knowledge of the True God, was martyred by them in a most inhuman manner at *Sebastopole*, as some Authours have it, in the Year of our Lord 59, others 64, yet all agree that he suffered Martyrdom, and received a glorious Crown as the Reward of his faithful labouring in *Christ's Vineyard*.

*St. Luke's
Preaching
and Mar-
tyrdom.*

St. Luke, whose praise is in the Gospel, travelling with *St. Paul* to *Rome*, departed from thence and preached to divers Nations, till the barbarous Multitude, stirred up by the Idolatrous Priests in *Greece* laid hands on him and intended to crucify him, but not suddenly procuring a Cross, they in their hasty rage wickedly hanged this Preacher of Peace and Glad-tidings on an Olive-tree, some say in the Eightieth Year of his Age, others sooner, but all agree he sealed his Testimony with his Blood, and exchanged a Transitory Life for that Life which is Immortal and Eternally centered in Endless Glory.

of the Ten Persecutions that fell upon the Primitive Church, with the Constant and Patient Sufferings of the Martyrs, Confessours, &c.

The First Persecution under Nero Domitianus, Emperour of Rome, began Anno Dom. 67.

WHAT has been related already may only be said to be the beginning of Satan's Rage, who had not as yet set open the flood-gates (as we may say) of his inveterate and implacable Malice to the Christian Religion, that had so shaken his Kingdom of Darkness; but it was not long before he broke in upon the Church with the violent Inundation of the Ten Heathen Bloody Persecutions, which without any considerable Intermissions, lasted about three hundred years, and were carried on with so much violence, and so many various sorts of Torments under the Roman Emperours, that if it had not pleased God to raise up Constantine the Great a Christian Emperour, to comfort and succour his Church and People, the Christian Religion had certainly been exterminated.

Though at first, as I have said, the Church of Christ was in some measure persecuted in *Judea*

the Reigns of *Tiberius*, *Caius Caligula* and *Claudius Drusius*, Roman Emperours, yet the Persecutions were mostly fomented by the *Jews*; as we find

Jews Fomenters of the Persecutions of par-Christians.

particularly set down in the *Acts of the Apostles*, before and after the Conversion of *St. Paul*: these Persecutions once raised, as *St. Jerom* tells such an Ocean of Blood was shed throughout whole *Roman Empire*, that there is no Day in Year except the first of *January*, to which number of five thousand Martyrs cannot be added.

I. Persecution under Nero.

The first then of these Persecutions was stirred by *Nero Domitius*, a Monster in Nature, about Year of our Lord, Sixty seven; whose causeless Ranny against the Christians was so fierce and cruel that the Executioners of his Malice were glutted and tired with Slaughter, insomuch that the Cities were filled with dead Bodies, no Age nor Sex being exempted from his cruel Decrees, even the dead Bodies of Women were cast out into the Streets without any reverence or respect to Shame, as *Eusebius* tells us. And *Orosius* writing of this Tyrant, says he was the first that raised Persecution in *Rome* and not only there, but throughout all the Provinces of the Empire, supposing thereby to abolish and obliterate the whole Name of Christians from the Face of the Earth; so that as *St. Jerom* and others record it, many of the Christians of those Days concluded him to be that Antichrist that should make such cruel Havock of the Church of God.

St. Peter's Death and the manner of it.

In this Sanguin Persecution, amongst Multitudes of others, *St. Peter* the Apostle was condemned and crucified with his Head downward, as many hold it, at *Rome*, though some disagree to the place; supposing, though the Pope pretends to be his Successor, he never was there, or at least, sat Bishop there, as being before Bishop of *Antioch*, where it is probable he might constantly reside, especially in latter Days. But not to cavel about such niceties *St. Hierom* tells us, That *Simon Peter* the Son of *Jonas* of the Province of *Galilee*, of the Town of *Betsaida*, Brother to *Andrew* the Apostle, being Bishop

Antioch, did preach to the dispersion of them that believe of the Circumcision in *Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia* and *Bithynia*, in the second Year of *Hadrian* the Emperour, which was about the Year our Lord 44, and was not crucified till the last Year of *Nero's* Reign; and that it was his own Request to be crucified with his Head downwards, in Humility, because he would not presume to be crucified the same way that his Lord and Master was, viz. with his Face towards Heaven. It is elsewhere recorded of him, that being condemned, he made his escape out of Prison, but our Saviour met him, and told him, He was come on Earth to be crucified; which he taking for a Reprimand of his dishonourousness, and concluding he meant he must be crucified in him his Servant, he returned back and fully underwent that Death through which he was to pass to Eternal Life and Glory, in those glorious Mansions prepared for him, built without Hands in the Heavens.

Eusebius tells us, That at the same time *St. Peter's* *St. Peter's* *Wife* suffered Martyrdom, and *Peter* seeing her going, himself was hanging on the Cross, was overjoy'd *tyr'd*.; insomuch that calling to her with a loud voice, she *Remember the Lord Jesus*. Nor did *St. Paul* *St. Paul* escape this trying Persecution, but suffered under *and thousands more* *suffer Persecution*. *Abdias* tells us, *the blessed Apostle*, after having suffered many sharp persecutions (as *the Acts of the Apostles* and his own Testimonies testify) being at *Rome* was accused to *Nero*, not only for teaching a new Doctrine quite opposite to the Heathen Worship, but falsely, for attempting to stir up Sedition against the Empire; and being demanded to shew the Order and Manner of his Doctrine, he declared, it was, *To teach all Men Peace and Charity, how to love one another, how to prevent one another in Honour, rich Men not to be puffed up with pride, nor to put their trust in their Riches, but in the living God; Children to obey their Parents, Husbands*

to love and cherish their Wives; Wives to subject themselves to their own Husbands; Subjects to give Tribute to Caesar, and to be subject to their Magistrates and Ministers set over them; Masters to be courteous and not cruel or harsh to their Servants; Servants to be faithful with their Masters. And this he avowed to be the Summ and Substance of the Doctrine taught, which he received not of Men, or by Men, but by Jesus Christ and the Father of Glory, who spake to him from Heaven, the Lord Jesus saying unto him, That he should go and preach in his Name, and that he would be with him, and would be the Spirit of Life to all that believed in him, and that whatsoever he did or said he would justify it, &c.

St. Paul
beheaded

Two of Nero's
Guards
converted,
and how.

More of
Nero's
barbarous
Cruelties,
and his de-
served
Death.

This Doctrine, though righteous and honest in Profession availed nothing with the Tyrant, who neither knew nor practised any good himself, and therefore envied it in others; so that then being dismissed he shortly after received Sentence of Death; but being free of Rome, he had the favour, as the privilege was, to be beheaded with a Sword, triumphantly and singing Praises to God at his Death; which was wrought with Ferrega and Parthenius, two of Nero's Life guard, whom he sent to the Execution to bring him an account of the holy Apostle's Death; that they desired him to pray for them; which doing with much fervency, they soon after were converted and baptized.

After this wicked Emperour had triumphed in the Blood of the Christians some Years, burning their Bodies by Night to light him to and from his drunken Revels, and torturing them by Day for his pleasure, tying the Faces of the Living to the Dead, and so letting them die with the Stench; and committing many other horrible Cruelties, God the Just and Righteous Avenger of his People's Wrongs, brought a Judgment upon him; for the Senate in consideration of his many Outrages and insupportable Villanies, condemned him to be drawn through.

and to be scourged to Death, upon which he
 etly fled in the Night with one Servant, who
 sing to kill him at his desire, in anguish and hor-
 of Mind he complained he had neither Friend
 Enemy that would vouchsafe him so great a
 dness, and thereupon in a desperate phrensicall
 fell upon his own Sword and died, when he had
 ned with much Tyranny and bloody Execution
 Years; which Judgment of God on him may
 and as a fair warning to all cruel Persecutors.

*The Second Persecution of the Church of
 Christ under the Emperour Domitian be-
 gun Anno Dom. 69.*

THE First Roman Persecution beginning under
 Nero, as I have already briefly set forth, *Ves-*
tan coming to the Empire and deposing *Vitellius*,
 gave so much Indulgence to the Christians by
 stinging a stop to the Issue of Blood, that they had
 e to breath in Peace, and the Church again rai-
 her drooping Head, many good Christians re-
 ring from the Rocks, Desarts and Mountains,
 ere they with much Patience had endured a
 world of Hardship for the sake of their Conscience,
Vespasian and his Son *Titus* dying, *Domitian* his
 nger Son succeeded to the Empire with *Nero's*
 rit of Cruelty, raising the Second Persecution a-
 st the Church of Christ more bloody and bar-
 ons, if possible, than the former.

*Domitian
 raises the
 Second Per-
 secution.*

This Emperour is said indeed, as *Nero* did, to be-
 his Government mildly, thereby to take off the
 ous Imputation of having thirsted after his Bro-
 r's Blood; but being a little settled in it, he pull'd
 the Vizard and shewed that inbred Pride, Arro-
 gancy

gancy and Cruelty that was so inseparable from his Nature; bidding defiance to Heaven by commanding himself under severe Penalty to be adored and worshipped as a God; causing his Images, cast in Gold and Silver, to be set up in the Capitol; putting to death and banishing most of the Senatours and Nobility of *Rome* on light pretended Causes, to make way for the Establishment of his unbounded Ambition; and fearing the Lineage of *David*, because of the Prophecies that a mighty King should arise out of them, he put many to death, and especially the Nephews of *Jude* called our Lord's Brother, till he understood by two of that Stock who were plain industrious Tillers of the Earth, that the Kingdom of Christ, at which those Prophecies pointed, was not of this World, but a Spiritual Kingdom, Heavenly and Angelical; and so proceeded to expound to him those Prophecies, and lay open the Mysteries of his Kingdom; with which he seemed so well satisfied that they escaped the Death intended them. And indeed upon this groundless Fear *Vespasian* his Father had causelessly shed much innocent Blood of that Royal Stock.

Simon Bishop of Jerusalem put to Death.

Justus, Simon's Successor in that See.

Being satisfied in this he bent his Fury against the Christians, among other Cruelties putting *Simon* Bishop of *Jerusalem* to death by crucifying him, after he had used many Cruelties towards him to compel him, if possible, to renounce his Faith in Christ, which holy Man was succeeded in his Bishoprick by *Justus*, who by his pious Example converted many to the Faith; and *Domitian* still raging against all the Professors of the Name of Christ, caused the Persecution to spread it self into all parts of the *Roman* Empire, insomuch that *St. John* the beloved Disciple of Christ, Apostle and Evangelist, was grievously persecuted; for Poison having no force over him though he drank it, nor the Cauldron of scalding Oyl into which he was cast being able to hurt him, which so startled the Proconsul of *Ephesus*, that he

too

took him for a Divine Person; he was nevertheless, though he declared his Innocency, and wrought many amazing Miracles, banished to the Isle of *Patmos*, a desolate place, where none but for great Crimes used to be banished; yet here he found so much Heavenly Consolation amidst want and other Extremities, as not only supported him, but shewed him the state of Christ's Church as it shall be to the end of the World; as appears in his Divine Book of Revelations which he wrote here.

*St. John's
Sufferings
and Ba-
nishment.*

Of the Banishment, &c. of *St. John*, *Eusebius* thus writes in the third Book and tenth Chapter of his *Ecclesiastical History*, viz. In the fourteenth Year of *Nero*, in the Second Persecution (says he) *John* was banished into *Patmos* for the Testimony of the Word in the Year of our Lord 97, and after the Death of *Domitian*, who was slain and his Acts repealed by the Senate. *John* was released out of Banishment in the Reign of *Pertinax* the Emperour, and came to *Ephesus* in the Year 100, where he continued until the time of *Trajan's* being Emperour, and there governed the Churches in *Asia*, where also he wrote his Gospel and lived till the Year after the Passion of our Lord 68, being the Year of his own Age 120. And *Irenæus* in his third Book of Hypothesis speaking of *St. John*, says, the Church of *Ephesus* being first founded by *St. Paul*, was afterward confirmed by *John* who continued in that City in the time of *Trajan* the Emperour: And of this Apostle alone it is recorded of all that followed our Saviour, he only died a natural death and slept in peace, the rest falling untimely by Persecuting Hands, and sealing their Testimony with their Blood. As for some Popish Authors they would hold us in hand he is not yet dead but alive and only sleeping (but they know not or agree not where) and so must continue till our Saviour's coming, wresting it from a mis-interpretation of our Saviour's meaning when he said, *What if he tarry till I come*, &c. To return:

*The Account of
Eusebius,*

*and Irenæus
concerning
St. John.*

Flavia a
Roman
Lady Ban-
ished, and
why.

Domitian's Cruelty extending to all Ages and Sexes without any Commiseration, causing most Cities and Towns to be lighted with the Flames of their burning Bodies: Inraged that *Flavia* the Daughter of *Flavius Clemens*, one of the Roman Consuls, was converted to the Christian Faith, determined to put her to death by cruel Torments, but her Youth, Beauty, Tears and Friends pleading for her, her Doom was changed into a milder, which was Banishment into the Isle of *Pontia*; and for all these Cruelties these persecuting Emperours had little other ground than a fear of Christ's Kingdom being set up on Earth in a temporal way, and the Incitement of the Idolatrous Priests who indeed did truly apprehend, that the Church of Christ would prevail against the Gates of Hell, and the spreading of the Christian Religion one day shame and exterminate their Pagan Worship: And upon these and such like Imaginations rose up a World of malicious Slanders, false Surmises, infamous Lyes, and false Accusations to stir up the Princes and Potentates of the Earth to root out this holy Religion, but in vain, for they only *kicked against the pricks*, which in the end, through God's Infinite Mercy proved too hard for them, though they used Policy to ensnare as well as Strength to destroy; for *Justin* tells us, that they (where they found any difficulty to discover it) made the Christians swear to tell the truth, whether they were Followers of Christ or not; and they not daring to falsifie an Oath in so sacred a Cause, their Confessions were held a sufficient Proof for the Laws purposely made for their Destruction to pass Sentence on them and put them to death; and from this Ground the Popish Inquisitors have not failed to take their Measures and outdo in Cruelty these Heathen Persecutors by new Improvements of witty Invention.

Christian
Constancy
and Sincerity.

Again, these Tyrants and their wicked Instruments stirred up by Satan's Rage proceeded to such
Inhu

Inhumanity, as not to be satisfied with Death alone, by a speedy divorce between Soul and Body the common way, but to augment the Misery of the Sufferers, they invented divers kinds of Death no less horrible than various, as by the Epistle from the Brethren in *France* in those days appeared, wherein amongst others they reckon up these, *viz.* Crafty Divers kinds of Punishments made use of by the Enemies of Christianity. Trains, outcries of Enemies, Imprisonments, Stripes and Scourgings, Drawings, Tearings, Stoning, Plates of Iron laid under them burning hot; deep Dungeons, Racks, Stranglings in Prison, the Teeth of Wild Beasts, Grid-irons, tossing on the Horns of Bulls (for pastime to the Tyrants) sawings in sun, fryings in Iron Chairs, beating to death with Clubs, and many other kinds of cruel Deaths; as lingering many of them, as might be, to make the Torments more exquisite; and when they were thus martyr'd their Bodies were laid in heaps and Dogs left to keep or devour them, that their Friends might not have the opportunity to do the last kind office in burying them; as appears, *Ex Epistola Fratrum Viennensium ac Lugdunensium, &c.* and yet as *Nicephorus* tells us, even in this bloody Emperor's Reign, the Christian Church daily encreased, deeply rooted in the Doctrine of the Apostles, and of Men Apostolical, and watered plenteously with the Blood of Saints. *Niceph. lib. 3.* And *Justin Martyr* worthily says in his Dialogue with *Trypho*, That for us (meaning the Christians) none can terrify us or remove us believing in Jesus; and by this it daily appeareth, for when we are slain, crucified, cast to Wild Beasts, into the Fire, or given up to other Torments, yet we go not from our Confession, but on the contrary, the more Cruelty and slaughter is wrought against us the more there be that embrace a Pious Life and believe in the Name of Jesus; just as if a Man should cut the Vine, which makes the Branches grow the better; for the Vine

planted by God and Christ our Saviour is his People's Nourishment and chief Support.

To comprehend the Names and Number of the Martyrs that suffered under this Emperour, though all Writers agree them to be a vast Number, it would be a Task too difficult since Authors vary in their Numbers and in the Names of some of the chief; however, certain it is, that in this as in all other Persecutions the chief were chiefly stricken at; they smote the Shepherds that the Flocks might be the sooner scattered, though here it proved not so by the mighty Influence of God's Spirit upon the Minds of Christians in these Days; they were able in a great degree to teach and instruct one another tho' their Bishops, Deacons, and other Subordinate were taken from them by the violent Hand of Persecution; however 40000 are held by some Authors to have received the Crowns of Martyrdom during this Reign which lasted 15 Years and somewhat more but God in the height of this Emperour's Cruelties to put a stop to the Issue of Blood which had crimsoned the Face of the whole Earth, suffered him to fall by violent Hands; for being conspired against by his intimate Friends he was slain in his Chamber not without the consent of the Wife of his Bosom so that he who had so much delighted in the shedding of Blood was at last murder'd himself.

The Number of Christians martyred in this Persecution.

Domitian's deserved and untimely end.

The Third Persecution of the Church under Trajan the Roman Emperour, began Anno 100.

The Third Persecution under Trajan.

BETWEEN the foregoing Persecution and this the Church had scarce time to take Breath, though

though Cocceius Nerva, a mild and charitable Man, succeeded Domitian in the Empire, yet he held it, some say but ten Months, others scarce a Year, ere Trajan, one fierce and cruel, succeeded and raised the Third Persecution, Anno 100. And tho' upon his first entrance, some Historians say of him he was a mild and just Prince; I suppose they mean he was so in Secular Matters and not in those that concerned Religion, especially the true; for here we find him breathing out nothing but Blood and slaughter, though Pliny the Second, a Heathen, and in great favour with him, wrote to him on behalf of the Christians in meer Compassion to their sufferings, giving him an Account of their innocent and harmless manner of living, as follows, *They are,* Pliny Junior's Epistle in favour of the Christians.
says he, Men of honest and harmless Conversation, and that use at certain times appointed to meet together every day in some Convenient place, and there sing certain Hymns to one Christ their God, and agree among themselves to abstain from all Theft, Murder and Adultery, to keep their Faith and to defraud no Man, which when they depart for that time, and afterwards as opportunity serves meet again, and eat in Society with one another, both Men and Women, without being Guilty of any thing that is Evil, &c.

These and some other Expressions in his Epistle of their Constancy in suffering, and the Malice of their enemies against them; and especially of false Brethren thrust in amongst them pretending to be Christians, only to have the advantage of accusing them thereby to get their Estates, when they had destroyed their lives, made Trajan so far relent, that in his Answer Trajan ordered him not to search after them, or hunt them out, nor credit false Libels of Accusation put against them, that had no Name to them; but if any brought them before him and Convicted them, he was to punish them, but discharge such as would renounce Christianity, and Sacrifice to his Gods upon promise of Amendment.

Tertullian's
Reflections upon
Trajan's
Answer to
Pliny's
Letter.

Tertullian writing upon this Epistle of *Trajan's*, condemns him for having as it were pronounced these Christians Innocent, in that he would not have them sought for; yet being taken up and brought before the Judgment Seat, he would nevertheless have them condemned right or wrong were they never so Innocent; yet this good Philosopher interposing did somewhat abate the Fury, and blunt the Edge of this Persecution, so that the heat of it ceased for a time, though the Governours of Provinces for their own Gain, or out of Envy to see Truth shine with such an innocent and glorious Lustre, on false Pretences ceased not to afflict them; and especially if any Commotion or Tumult was raised they rarely escaped, having the Fault laid on their Shoulders how Innocent soever they were: As in *Jerusalem* after the Emperor had published his Edict, That whosoever could be found of the Linage of David, he should strictly be enquired out and

Simeon Bishop of Jerusalem
put to
Death, and
know.

put to Death without Mercy. Upon which *Hegeffippus* writes there were certain Sectaries of the *Jews*, who accused *Simeon* the Bishop of that City, and Son of *Cleophas* to come of the Stock of *David* and a Christian, but this God turned likewise to the Destruction of some of his Accusers, who proving to be of that Stock were put to Death, and the good Bishop as the same Author further writeth, was scourged during the space of many Days by the Commandment of *Attalus* the Pro-consul, being of the Age of one Hundred and twenty years, in which his Martyrdom he endured with such Patience and Constancy, that the Pro-consul and all the multitude wondered, and so in the close being Crucified he finished his Course.

Phocas Bishop of Pontus
us most
barbarously
put to
Death.

In this Persecution *Phocas* Bishop of *Pontus* was Martyred, because he refused with much Constancy to Sacrifice to *Neptune*, the pretended God of the Sea, being first put into a hot Lime Kiln, and then into scalding Water, where he ended this Life, to live

ve more glorious in another, in which all Tears shall be wiped away.

This bloody Storm likewise hurried from this life to a better, *Sulpitius* and *Servillus*, two Romans; also, *Nereus*, *Achilleus* and *Sagarus*; and in this persecution beside many others suffered the blessed Martyr *Ignatius*, who succeeded *S. Peter* as Bishop of *Antioch*, who being betrayed by false Brethren, was sought after with such Diligence that he was taken and carried with a strong Guard thro' *Asia*, Preaching and Confirming the People as he passed, and when he knew he was to be cast to wild Beasts in the *Amphitheatre* to be devoured, he seemed not in the least to be concerned, telling those that stood by, *Now I am God's Corn; when I am ground small by the Teeth of the wild Beasts, I shall be his white bread.* In his way likewise he admonished all that adhered to Christ, to beware of the new Heresies risen up amongst them, and only cleave to the Doctrine of the Apostles; and when he came to *Smyrna*, where he found *Polycarp* another Father of the Church, he greatly rejoiced and wrote an Epistle to congratulate the *Ephesians*, in which he mentioned *Onesimus* their Pastor, and upon writing to these and others, he exhorted them to be strong in the Lord, Confirming them in the Faith, lest losing the Glory of Martyrdom, they likewise should lose the hope of Salvation. Writing to those of *Syria* he told them, how ready he was to Die and to be offered up, concluding thus, *Now I begin to be a Scholar, I covet or esteem nothing visible or invisible, so I may gain Christ Jesus; let the Fire, the Gibbet, the devouring wild Beasts, the breaking of Bones, the pulling asunder of my Members, the bruising or pressing of my whole Body, or any Torments come upon me so that I may win Christ.*

Sulpitius, Servilius, Nereus, Achilleus, Sagaris, St. Ignatius and many others put to Death.

Ignatius's Exemplary Sufferings and Death.

When the time came that he was to be thrown to the ravenous Beasts, kept up hungry to make them more Fierce and Voracious, he expressed the

ardent Desire he had to suffer for the Sake of Christ, and so patiently endured the Paws and Teeth of the Lyons in the 11th. Year of *Trajan*, Anno 111. having lived as some write in the time of our Saviour's being on Earth, and is thought to be one of those little Children Christ took up in his Arms and Blessed : Therefore, let none mistake this good Man, for *Ignatius Loyola* the Founder of the Order of the Jesuits, for he was of much a later Edition, as you will find in his proper place ; besides this good Man *Publius* Bishop of *Athens*, and many Thousands more suffered, some by the fiery Tryal, and others by other Kinds of cruel Death, and yet under these violent Persecutions the flock of Christ increased still more and more, after a Reign of twenty one Years and about six Months this Emperor passed out of this Life, to receive the Reward of his Cruelty in another.

The Third Persecution against the Christians, continued under Hadrian or Adrian Emperor of Rome.

The Third Persecution continued by Hadrian. Alexander Bishop of Rome, &c. put to Death.

THE Spirit of Persecution being now abroad, the Christians had but little respite from it, for *Adrian* succeeding *Trajan* followed his steps in the same bloody Path, pursuing them with such mortal Hatred, that he soon put *Alexander* Bishop of Rome to Death, with his two Deacons, *Eventius* and *Theodorus*, also *Hermes* and *Quirinus* with their whole Family ; and some Histories make mention that *Zeno* a Nobleman of Rome, with ten thousand two hundred and three, were slain for the Profession of the Gospel of Christ, :nd *Henricus de Erfordia* and *Berg mensis*, lib. 8. make mention of ten thousand that

were crucified in the Reign of this cruel Em-
 peror on Mount *Arrar*, and Crowned with Thorns,
 and thrust into the Sides with Spears in Imitation, *Achaicus*,
 rather Derision to our Saviour; the chief of *Heliades*,
 which were *Achaicus*, *Heliades*, *Theodorus* and *Car-* *Thodorus*,
us; He likewise put *Eustachius* one of his Cap- *&c. put to*
 tains to Death, though returning in Triumph for *Death*.
 being overcome the barbarous Nations, because
 having privately converted to the Christian Religion,
 refused to Sacrifice with him to *Apollo* for the
 story; and so far proceeded his Cruelty, that he
 killed not even his Wife and Children.
 He put to Death *Faustinus* and *Jobita* Citizens *The Con-*
Briar for this Cause, and so great was their *stancy of*
 constancy in the midst of their Torments, that at *Faustinus*
 sight of them, one *Calocerius* cryed out, *Verily* *and Jobi-*
that is the God of the Christians; whereupon being *ta, under*
 apprehended, and owning his Conversion at that *their Mar-*
 time, he was made Partaker with them in *tyrdom*.
 his Martyrdom; and *Nicephorus* makes mention, *Caloceri-*
 that *Anthia*, a Godly Woman, having committed her *us conver-*
 to *Eleutherius* to *Anicetus* Bishop of *Rome*, to be *ted, and*
 instructed in the Christian Religion, he was after- *immedi-*
 ward made Bishop of *Apulia*, where he suffered *ately put*
 martyrdom, together with his said Mother under *to Death*.
 the Emperor. As did *Justus* and *Pastor*, two Bre- *Eleutheri-*
 thren in *Spain*; and *Sophia* with her three Chil- *us and his*
 dren; *Symphorissa* with her seven Children, and ma- *Mother,*
 ny others whose Names for Brevities sake I am con- *Anthia*
 tained to omit. This cruel Man wading so deep in *suffer; to-*
 blood that many of the Idolatrous Worshipers were *gether with*
 troubled at and began to compassionate the suffering *Justus, So-*
 Christians, looking upon such Cruelty as a bloody *phia, Sym-*
 sign of Vengeance to fall upon the whole Empire, *phorissa &*
 that he was so far from relenting, that concluding *their Chil-*
 the Slaughter slackned, he went a Progress to *dren, with*
Athens, and so visited the Country of *Eleusina* where *many o-*
 sacrificing to his Idols after the *Grecian* manner, he *thers*.
 published an Edict, that whosoever were inclined
 to

to persecute the Christians should have free Liberty to do it; which so much troubled the Fathers of the Church, that they found themselves constrained, for the safety, if possible, of so many thousand Lives as were threatned to be taken, with Queen *Esther* to hazard their own, by offering him an Apology in defence of their Doctrine on behalf of themselves and many thousand innocent Souls.

Divers Apologies for the Christians.

This hazardous Enterprize *Quadratus* Bishop of *Athens* a grave and learned Man undertook, where in he set forth the causeless and unjust Persecution of the Christians. The like did *Aristides* an *Athenian* Philosopher, who for his singular Learning and Eloquence, being known to the Emperor and admitted to his Presence, he made a very Eloquent Oration in their Defence; which being Seconded by one *Serenus Granus*, he told the Emperor, *was neither Reason nor Justice that innocent Christians should be expos'd to the Rage and Fury of the incensed multitude, and Condemned and put to Death only for professing the Name of Christ.* Their Attempt being favoured by Divine Providence, so softened the hard Heart of this Emperor, that he melted into Pity and Compassion, and, immediately directed his Letters to *Minutius Fundanus* Pro-consul of *Asia*, Commanding him from thenceforth to Exercise no more such Cruelties against the Christians for any thing that concerned their Religion, there being no other Crimes objected against them, which Disappointment so vexed the *Jews*, who concluded to make spoil and havock of the Christians; that soon after they rebelled against the Emperor, and spoiled the Country of *Palestine*, against whom he sent *Julius Severus* who overthrew fifty Castles in *Fury*, and burnt and destroyed one hundred and eighty Villages and Towns, slaying of that People by Famine, Sicknes, Sword and Fire, about fifty thousand, and rebuilt *Jerusalem*, calling it *Adriapolis*, alluding to his own Name. Not long after this

the Judgment of God overtook him, and he that unconcernedly had shed so much Blood, now by excessive Bleeding was strangled in his own, as some will have it, no Art being able to stop the Effusion of blood at his Nostrils; he died through the loss thereof Anno Dom. 143. when he had Reigned twenty years, and was succeeded by *Antoninus Pius*, a merciful Emperor, who revoked all his Cruel Edicts, and gave great Encouragement to the Christians in allowing such Privileges, as they had not before publicly enjoyed; for which they stiled him *Pater Virtutum*: Especially when his Godly Edict in favour of the Church was read at *Ephesus*, and the publick Assembly, and God so prospered him that he Reigned twenty three years, all which time the Christ's Vineyard flourished, and shot forth many Branches springing up to eternal Life, though though this Indulgence some Weeds of Heresie sprung up that very much perplext the Church of Rome, but not so as to hinder its growth in Grace; yet it might be perhaps for this Cause that God suffered other Persecutions to fall to try who were his, and when they were tryed as Silver in the Furnace of Afflictions, they might come out pure and uncorrupted.

Adrian dies, and is succeeded by Antoninus Pius, a favourer of the Christians.

The Fourth Persecution under Marcus Antoninus Verus, began Anno 162.

Atan's Malice was not yet to cease, being continued as a Trial of Christian Patience, for another Cloud big with Destruction was driving to break upon the Church; for *Marcus Antoninus Verus* Son to the foregoing Emperour, coming to the throne, being destitute of his Father's Goodness, though

The Fourth Persecution begun by Marcus Antoninus Verus.

though he studied Philosophy which should ha
taught him Humanity, began another fierce Per
cution against the Christians, so that they suffer
most cruel Torments and Punishments both in
and *Europe*, and particularly in *France*, of whi
Number was *Polycarp* the Venerable Bishop of *Smy*
na, who in the height of this violent Persecution
amongst many other, most constant Professors of t
Faith became a Martyr, as in due Place shall be d
clared; for before it came to the Turn of this ho
Man, many fell by the Cruelty of the Persecutor
whose Cruelty was such, that the Spectators oft
trembled with Horrour and Astonishment; som
were scourged till their Veins and Sinews lay bare
the Bowels of others fell out, some again were ma
to pass with their already wounded Feet over shar
Shells, Thorns and Nails with their Points upward
and in a word, they were put to undergo all th
Torments and Tortures their Enemies could devi
as is testified by an Epistle from the Congregation
of *Smyrna*, to the Congregation at *Philomilium*, an
other Congregations.

*Divers
sorts of Tor-
ture du-
ring this
Persecuti-
on.*

*Germani-
cus put to
Death.*

Whilst these things were doing, *Germanicus*
Eminent Christian was taken and led to the Flame
where he behaved himself with that Courage and
Constancy of Mind, that he converted by his Word
and pious Exhortations many of the Spectators
the Faith of Christ. Which so incensed the Idol
trous Priests, that they cried out presently to d
stroy him, and seek out *Polycarp*, who hearing the
were in quest of him, like Blood Hounds to satiate
themselves with his Life, was nothing daunted
the News, but betook him to his Prayers to A
mighty God for the Welfare of the Church, and
after dreamed that his Bed taking fire under hi
consumed in a Moment, which he told when h
waked, and concluded from thence that he shou
expire in the Flames for the Name of Jesus Christ
as it after fell out; for his Enemies immediately can

*St. Poly-
carp's
Dream.*

apprehend him, whereupon he fled to another village, but being pursued and discovered at last by the means of a Child, he was satisfied it was God's Will he should seal the Doctrine he had so often preached with his Blood; so that when he might have escaped again he refused to lay hold on the opportunity, and submitted to the Divine Will, on saying the Will of God be done, to those that persuaded him to it. He came down to his pursuers, who stood amazed at his comely Age and Gravity and constant Countenance, and when he had feared them well, he desired an Hours time to pray in private, which being allowed, he prayed with such fervency, that many of them were astonished at it, and repented they had been instrumental in apprehending so holy a Man to bring him to Destruction; however he was carried before the Pro-consul, to whom he gave such an Account of his Doctrine, might have convinced all his Gain-sayers, and turned their Hearts had they not been obstinately bent on his Death; to which being doomed, he went joyfully into the Market-place, where the Jews and others brought Wood out of their Shops to make the Fire, and when he was bound to the stake he prayed thus:

O Father of thy blessed and well beloved Son Jesus Christ, by whom we have attained the Knowledge of thee, the God of Angels and Powers, and of every Creature, and of all just Men that live before thee, I give thee thanks that it has pleased thee to vouchsafe me this Day, that I may have my part amongst the Number of thy Martyrs in the Cup of Christ, unto the Resurrection of Eternal Life, both of Body and Soul, through the Operation of the holy Spirit, among whom I shall this Day be received into thy Sight for an acceptable Sacrifice, and as thou hast prepared and revealed the same before this time, so thou hast accomplished it; wherefore praise thee, bless thee and glorifie thee, by our Everlasting Bishop Jesus Christ, to whom be Glory evermore. Amen.

*St. Poly-
carp's
Prayer be-
fore he suf-
fered.*

When

*Strange
things hap-
pening at
his Execu-
tion.*

When this good Bishop had finished his Prayer the Tormentors proceeded to kindle the Fire; and as the Flames grew vehement they gave way each side, meeting on the top Arch-wise, while the Holy Martyr remained in the midst, singing Praises to God, and as it were untouched by the Fire, which kept as it were at an awful distance from him, and at the same time so perfuming a Fragrancy spread in the Air, as if Myrrh or Frankincense had been cast into the Flames; so that his enemies, perceiving his Body could not be consumed by the Fire no more than the Three Children in the fiery Furnace, they thrust him through the Body with a Sword, and then such abundance of Blood issued at the Wound that it extinguished the Flames, which struck the multitude with Admiration and Astonishment; and lest the Christians, they vainly Fancied, should Worship at the Sepulchre of this Martyr, if he was buried, the Jews and Pagans perswaded the Pro-consul to cause the Body to be burnt to Ashes after he was dead, which scarcely with mighty Piles of Wood could be effected.

This Great good Man had been a Disciple of St. John and ministered to other Apostles, having had the Care of the Church upon him from his younger years, which he discharged with such Care, Integrity, and Faithfulness, that he left a lasting Memorial of his Worth behind him to succeeding Ages, and soon after twelve others, his Intimates, that came from *Philadelphia* took up the Crowns of Martyrdom, and followed him through the Flames to the bright Celestial Mansions of everlasting Peace, who had continued in the Ministry Eighty six years.

*Twelve o-
thers Mar-
tyr'd.*

It would be in a manner endless to take particular Notice of all the Pious Men and Women, that in this persecuting Reign suffered Martyrdom: The most memorable however were *Carpas*, *Papylus*, *Agathonica*, *Felicitas* with her Seven Children, *Jo-*

*More Mar-
tyrs.*

rius, Fælix, Philippus, Silvanus, Alexander, Vi-
 is, Martialis, and Justin. This last Disputing
 with Crescens the Philosopher, and overcoming him
 his Argument with Divine Truth, the envious
 philosopher in revenge of his being non-plus'd and
 fled, contrived all the ways he could to bring him
 Destruction, and never gave it over till he had
 effected it, as the Holy Martyr himself had foreseen
 and foretold in the manner it happened, in the
 year of our Lord One hundred Fifty and Four.
 Neither Piety, Charity, or good Works, adorned
 with Beauty and Innocence could prevail with these
 to defend *Praxedis*, the Daughter of a Roman
 citizen, from Persecution, who observing the harm-
 less and innocent way the Christians lived, did not
 only her self relieve them, but perswaded her Si-
 sters, *Potentiana* to do so too, giving all her time to
 fasting and Prayer, and the burying the Bodies of
 the Martyrs, which were cast out naked into the
 streets and Fields. Yet God at length delivered her
 from their Cruelty that sought her Life, and she
 rested in Peace in the Desarts whither she had re-
 tired to lead a Solitary Life. Under this Tyrant
 likewise *Ptolemy* and *Lucius* suffered at *Alexandria* in
 Egypt, for owning and professing the Name of
 Christ; and when it was told *Lucius* he was to suf-
 fer Martyrdom, he *Thanked them heartily that they*
were so kind to deliver him from a wicked Governour,
and send him unto his good and loving Father; and
 the same Effect spake another that suffered with
 him.
 Under this Emperor the Persecution spread not
 only in *Asia* and *Africa*, but into the furthest Parts
 of *Europe*, so that in *Britain* some hundreds suffered
 Martyrdom, where the Light of the Gospel just
 began to dawn; and the Inhabitants of the Cities
Vienna and *Lyons* in *Germany* and *France*, sent a
 large Epistle of their grievous Sufferings to the Bre-
 thren in *Asia* and *Phrygia*, setting out at large the
 manner

Praxedis
and her Si-
ster Potent-
tiana per-
secuted.

Ptolemy
and Luci-
us suffer.

Persecution
in Eng-
land.

manner of Torments used against them, and their own Constancy and Faithfulness in suffering the worst of Evils for the sake of Christ, and their Holy Profession, desiring to confirm and strengthen others by their Examples, both Men and Women young and old, recommending to all Christians the Meekness, Modesty and Constancy of such Martyrs as had suffered in *France, &c.* for the sake of Christ.

When the People of God had thus long suffered Persecution in the most grievous manner, and no Likelihood in humane Apprehension of stopping the Stream of Christian Blood, the Crys and Tears and Prayers of the Sufferers came into remembrance with the Almighty, so that compassionating them after a Tryal of their Faith and Patience when the least expected it, the Fury of the Execution ceased: a brief Account of the visible cause and manner of which take from *Eusebius*, as followeth :

*Eusebius's
Account of
the Thundring
Legion.*

When the Northern Nations were up in Arms the Emperor, to quell them, raised a huge Army but his Enemies, the *Quadi, Sarmates, Vandals* and *Germans*, when he was far advanced against them inclosed the Emperor and shut him up with his whole Army, insomuch that he was driven into great Streights and Distress ; his whole Camp, besides the other Difficulties it had to struggle with, wanting water for the space of five Days, Insomuch that the Soldiers almost perished with Thirst, cried out and complained they were brought thither on purpose to perish, which made the Emperor almost at his Wits end, as fearing they would Desert, and himself be lost in the Enterprize ; when bethinking him he had a Legion of Christians in his Army, and calling to mind what things he had heard, and what wonders the God of the Christians had wrought, he commanded them to call upon their God for Succour in this time of need whereupon they drew out by themselves, and performed

the
th
r H
en
ome
as th
Ma
ke
here
nd m
g th
Fear
rand
the
the
ased
ner
trating themselves, prayed to God to send Rain,
which immediately fell in such abundance, that all
the Dikes and Trenches were filled with water ;
and this was accompanied with such prodigious
Volleys of Thunder and Flashes of Lightning, that
Lightn'd in their Enemies Faces so continually as it
disheartened them, and abated their Courage and
strength, insomuch that the *Romans* Charging them
at this disadvantage easily overcame and destroyed
them, recovering all the revolted Cities and Towns ;
so that ever after, that Legion of Christians was
called *The Thundering Legion* ; and of this the Em-
peror sent a large Account to the Senate of *Rome*
in a long Epistle, in which, after he had declared
the Streight he was in, and the Danger that
threatned the Loss of himself and the whole Army,
he speaks favourably of the Christians, and among
others has these Expressions, viz.

Arm
rmy
ls and
them
th h
a in
o, be
with
Info
Thir
ht th
Empe
woul
wh
in h
e ha
Christ
all up
need
d pro
tratio
WHEN I saw my self not able to Encounter
with the Enemies, I craved Aid of our Coun-
try Gods ; but at their Hands finding no Relief, and be-
ing coop'd up by the Enemy, I caused those Men which
we call Christians to be sent for, who being Mustered,
I found a considerable number of them, against whom
I was more incensed than I had just Cause, as I found
afterwards ; for by a marvellous Power they forthwith
frustrated their Endeavour, not with Ammunition, Drums
and Trumpets, abhorring such Preparation and Furni-
ture, but only praying unto and trusting in their God,
whom they carry about with them in their Consciences.
It is therefore to be believed, although we call them
superstitious Men, that they worship God in their Hearts, for
they falling prostrate on the Ground prayed, not only
for me, but for the Army also which was with me, be-
seeching God to help us in that our extream want of Vi-
nals and fresh Water (for we had been five Days
without Water, and in our Enemies Land, even in the
 midst of Germany) I say falling upon their Faces,
D they

Marcus Au-
relius An-
tonius's
Letter to
the Senate
of Rome. 1

they prayed to a God unknown of me, and immediately thereupon fell from Heaven a most pleasant and cold Shower, but amongst our Enemies great store of Hail, mixed with Thunder and Lightning; so that we soon perceived the invincible Aid of the most mighty God to be with us: Therefore we give these Men leave to profess Christianity, least by their Prayers we be punished with the like, and thereby make my self the Author of all the Evil that shall accrew by the Persecution of the Christian Religion, &c.

And thus by this Miracle wrought, God stayed the Fierceness of this Persecution; yet did it not so altogether cease, but that much hurt was done to the Christians, by malicious and self-ended Men, and the Emperor sometimes forgetting his Promise and the Mercy received, hardening his Heart like Pharaoh, gave way to the Destruction of many, who suffered Martyrdom for the Testimony of a good Conscience. But when he had Reigned nineteen Years he was cut off from the Land of the Living, and being succeeded by Commodus, the Church had rest, and the Christian Religion was Established in Britain by K. Lucius, the first Christian King that History makes mention of in the World. This King being destitute of able Guides of the Church he Establish'd, because they had been swept away by the foregoing Persecution, sent to Eleutherius then Bishop of Rome, to receive further Instructions from him, as to the settling the Christian Religion in his Kingdom, who sent Fugatius and Damianus with a Letter of Direction in these words, which I shall recite here, to shew how those Bishops of Rome differed from those that have succeeded them, who now Lord it over Kings and Emperors, and Claim an universal Supremacy, viz.

*Christian
Religion
Establish'd
in England
by K. Lucius.*

*Pope Eleu-
therius's
Letter to
K. Lucius.*

YO U have received in the Kingdom of Britain God's Mercy, both the Law and Faith of Christ

we have both the Old and New Testament; out of the same through God's Grace, by the Advice of your Realm, take a Law, and by the same through God's Permission rule your Kingdom, for in it you are God's Vicar.

Upon the Receipt of these Instructions King *Lucius* altered the 3 Arch *Flamens*, and 28 other subordinate *Flamens*, into so many Arch-Bishopricks and Bishopricks. The Arch-Bishopricks were *London, York, and Gloucester*; upon which the Idol Temples were destroyed, and Privileges and Means were granted for honouring of Sacred places, which were then Erected and Consecrated, but after the Death of *Commodus*, who began his Reign in the Year of our Lord 182, and Reigned thirteen years, and also the Reign of *Helvetius Pertinax*, who Reigned not above eight Months, and *Didius Julianus* the 20th. Emperor of *Rome*, who Reigned but two Months, succeeded *Septimius Severus*, who began and carried on the Fifth Persecution in manner as hereafter.

The Fifth Persecution against the Christians, under *Septimius Severus* the Emperor of *Rome*, Anno 195.

THE beginning of this Emperor's Reign was indifferent mild, and continued so for the space of ten years, insomuch that the Christians having enjoyed a long and uninterrupted Tranquillity, began to conclude, That all the bloody Storms of Persecution were blown over; but their Hopes failed them, for Satan had not spent his Rage so much, but that there remained many more behind to exercise their Patience, and try their Faith and Constancy, to the end that when they were tryed they might

might receive the blessed Reward promised to all the Faithful in Christ Jesus.

The Fifth Persecution under Septimius Severus.

Malicious Accusations against the Christians.

Anno 205. the Peace of the Church was again disturbed, through the sinister Suggestions and malicious Accusations of wicked Men, who gaped after the Estates of the Christians, and who so highly incensed the Emperor against them, that he put forth his Edict, Commanding that no Christian should be any more suffered to make profession of his Faith: Whereupon great Persecutions arose every where against them. The chief Accusations though altogether false and groundless, were, That they laboured to raise Tumults and Rebellion in the Empire; that they were a Sacrilegious sort of People, and used at their Meetings to murder People and make use of their Limbs in their Charms; that they eat raw Flesh, and lived Incestuously together. And indeed there was a certain Sect, called *Gnosticks*, that were shrewdly suspected to be Guilty of some of these objected Crimes; but the Orthodox Christians disowned them as lewd and libidinous. They were accused likewise of Worshipping the Head of an Ass, which they supposed, as it was objected, should rise again; as also the Sun, because ere Sun rising they met together to sing certain Hymns, and worshipt towards the East. But the main Crime, as the Pagans held it, against the Christians was, That they refused to fall down and worship their Idolatrous Gods; and this as *Eusebius* testifies was the Cause of this Persecution, *Lib. 6. Chap. 1.*

Instruments of this Persecution.

Leonides Origen's Father beheaded.

As for the chief Instruments in this Persecution they were *Hilarius*, *Vigilius*, *Claudius*, *Hermianus*, Governour of *Cappadocia*, *Cecilius*, *Capella*, *Vesprinius*, and *Demetrius*. The heat of this Persecution raged most in *Africa*, *Alexandria*, *Cappadocia*, and *Carthage*; and it fell first upon *Leonides* the Father of *Origen*, who had the Dignity to take up the first Crown of Martyrdom in this Persecution, by lo

ing his Head ; and *Origen* had fallen, had not his Mother concealed him by the Providence of God, to become a Pillar in the Church afterward, as is recorded of him at large by *Eusebius*, and his own Writings ; but many of his Hearers were taken and suffered Martyrdom, as *Plutarchus* and *Serenus* his Brother, *Heracides* and others ; all these were beheaded ; also *Rhais* and *Potamiena* a noble Woman, who was put to grievous Torments, by pouring scalding Pitch on her and then burning her, which she underwent joyfully, praying for her Enemies, before she entered and after she was in the Flames, so that *Basilides* the Captain who lead her to the Stake, and rebuked those who railed on her (being then much taken with her Beauty, and afterward more with her Courage and Constancy in Suffering) was converted by her Prayers, and himself in a little while suffered Martyrdom by losing his Head. One *Alexander* by his sufferings, and Confessing the Name of Christ in his Torments compelled his Tormentors to relent, and so escaping Death, upon *Narcissus's* being very Aged, and not able to discharge so weighty an Office, he was appointed Bishop of *Jerusalem* in the Life-time of the good old Man as his Partner, and continued in that Station above Forty years, till the Persecution of *Decius* the Emperor, in which he suffered Martyrdom, or as some say he died in Prison before his Execution.

Several others suffer.

Basilides converted and suffers Martyrdom.

Alexander made Bishop of *Jerusalem*, during the Life of *Narcissus*.

His Death.

In this Persecution fell *Andoclus*, whom *Polycarp* before had sent into *France*, being first beaten with Staves and Batts, and then beheaded ; and *Asclepiades* Bishop of *Antioch* hardly scaped Death under grievous Torments, for constantly Confessing the Name of Christ, though he might have been eased of all and promoted to worldly Dignity if he would have renounced his Profession. But *Irenæus* Bishop of *Lyons*, a famous Learned Man suffered Martyrdom in this Persecution, whom *Tertullian* much commends for his Learned Writings and singular Purity of Life.

Andoclus Martyr.

Asclepiades hardly escapes.

Irenæus of *Lyons* suffers Martyrdom.

Perpetua,
Felicitas,
Revoca-
tus, Saty-
rus, devour-
ed by wild
Beasts.

Saturninus
beheaded.

Secundu-
lus dies un-
der the
hands of
his Tormen-
tors in Pri-
son.

The Scots
rebel a-
gainst Se-
verus,
whom he
passes the
Sea to sup-
press.

Severn
whence so
call'd.

Severus's
Death.

Succeded
by Bassia-
nus, who
murders
his Bro-
ther Geta,
and is him-
self mur-
dered by
his own
Servants.
Macrinus

Matthaus in his Book Intituled, *Flores Historiarum*, and some others, make mention of *Perpetua*, *Felicitas*, and *Revocatus* her Brother ; also of *Saturninus* and *Satyrus* two Brethren, and *Secundulus*, who in this Persecution of *Severus* gave up their Lives for their Profession, as being thrown to wild Beasts and by them devoured at *Carthage* in *Africa*, save that *Saturninus* being brought again from the Beasts who would not touch him was beheaded, and *Secundulus* died under his Torments in Prison about the Year of our Lord 202, as *Florilegus* saith,

This cruel Emperor, as most Writers agree, Reigned eighteen Years, when in the latter end of his Reign the *Caledonians* in *Britain* rebelling against him, and overthrowing his Lieutenant with great Slaughter, he passed the Seas to suppress them, having been once there before in Person, and after many Conflicts, with great Loss of his Soldiers, in draining Brooks and Fens, and building Bridges to follow them, he subdued and brought them under, and to prevent their Incursions for the future, cast up a Ditch with a mighty Wall made of Earth, Turf and strong Stakes. One hundred and thirty two Miles long, in the North Borders, between Sea and Sea, beginning at *Tine*, and extending to the *Scottish* Sea. The River *Severn* took Denomination from a great Battle he fought on its Banks, and continues it to this Day. But wearied out with Persecution and the Toils of War, coming to *York* he there finished his Life, about the Year of our Lord 214, leaving behind him two Sons, *Bassianus* and *Geta*. *Bassianus* surnamed *Caracalla*, slew his Brother *Geta*, and Reigned alone ; so that he who had thirsted after the Blood of the Christians, had a bloody Judgment upon his own House ; yet the Murderer survived but six Years ere he was slain by his Servants, to whom succeeded *Macrinus*, with his Son *Diadumenus* ; who after one years Reign were slain by the *Prætorian* Band. Then succeeded

Helio-

Heliogabalus, who before his coming to the Throne was Priest of the Sun, and so his Name signifies, who proved a Monster in Nature for Riot, Luxury and all Uncleanneſs; ſo that he little minded Affairs abroad, upon which many Diſorders happened, and ſome Chriſtians ſuffered by the Malice of their Enemies, but I do not find it occaſioned by any Ediſt he put forth to that Intent, for he minded more his Pleaſures than other Matters, and when he had Reigned about four Years he was ſlain of his own People, who having dragged his Body for ſome time about the Streets of *Rome*, threw it into the River *Tiber* that runs by the Walls of that City, and was ſucceeded by *Alexander Severus* who tolerated the Chriſtians in their Religion, and Com- manded they ſhould live in quiet under his Protection: So that the Church again flouriſhed; but when he had Reigned thirteen Years he was ſlain at *Mentz* by the German Soldiers, together with *Mammea* his virtuous Mother, they being corrupted and inſtigated to it by *Maximinus*, one whom this Emperor had raiſ'd from the baſe Degree of a Muliteer to the greateſt Dignity, who procuring himſelf hereupon to be proclaimed Emperor began the Sixth Perſecution with very great Rigour, in which there fell a great number of all Ages and Sexes.

and Dia-
dumenus
ſucceed, who
being ſlain,
are ſucceed-
ed by the
Monster
Helioga-
balus.
Helioga-
balus ſlain.

Alexander
Severus
ſucceeds,
under whom
the Perſe-
cution ceases.
Severus
and his
Mother
Mammea
ſlain.
Maximi-
nus ſuc-
ceeds, and
raises the
Sixth Per-
secution.

The Sixth Perſecution of the Church under Maximinus Emperor of Rome, began Anno 237.

MAXIMINUS (as is ſaid) being choſen Em- peror by the Soldiers, againſt the mind of the Senate, about the Year of our Lord 237, he fell upon

Maximi-
nus raiſes
the Sixth
Perſecuti-
on.

upon the Leaders and Fathers of the Church more particularly with inveterate Hatred and much Fury, thinking if they were cut off, who were the Teachers and Supporters of the Congregations, the rest might easily be reduced to fall in with the Idolatrous Worship then most in Vogue ; but he had not his end, for God shortened his Days as will appear in the close of this Persecution.

In this Reign *Origen* flourished, and wrote his Book *De Martyrio*. By reason of its not being now Extant, the Account of many eminent Persons, who suffered Martyrdom under this Tyrant, are not come to our Knowledge, though many imagine several placed in the Reign of the last Emperor, who, considering his Indulgence to the Christians, should in all Probability have been placed under this ; and it is imagined the Mistake arose from *Burgomensis's* ill Calculating of the time of their Martyrdom. But seeing they have as yet no place in this Book, and did suffer Martyrdom, I shall set them here in Order as I find them.

*Cecilia's
Constancy
in her Sufferings.*

Cecilia, after she had brought *Valerian* her Husband Espoused and *Tiberius* his Brother to the Knowledge and Faith of Christ, and with her Exhortations had made them constant unto Martyrdom, she was apprehended by *Almachius* the Ruler, and brought to the Idols to do Sacrifice ; but when she abhorred to do it, she was presented to the Judge to have her Condemnation of Death, where she behaved her self with such Modesty and comely Grace, that her Accusers relented and laboured to perswade her to recant ; but in vain, for after she had endured the Torments of a hot Bath with great Constancy of mind and without complaining, she had her Head stricken off ; upon which a sweet Melody was heard as of the Voices of Angels in Consort to the Amazement of the Auditors, and *Urbanus* the Bishop, who had Confirmed her in the Faith buried her ; after which some modern Popish Writers say,

*What hap-
pen'd at
her Death.*

she

he appeared with Angels about her, putting crowns of Gold on her Head, and wrought many Miracles, but these are left to the Reader to believe or disbelieve as he pleases.

Agapetus though he was but fifteen years of Age, being taken at *Præneste* in *Italy* for refusing to Sacrifice to Idols, after he had endured sundry Torments, as Scourging, hanging up by the Feet, and boiling Water poured upon him without complaining, and hereupon being cast to the wild Beasts they fawned on him, and would not be compelled to do him any manner of hurt, he was beheaded with a Sword, and with him suffered *Calepodius* a Roman, whose Body was first dragged through the City of *Rome*, and afterward cast into the River *Tiber* with a Mill-stone fastened to it, for no other Cause but the Profession of the Christian Faith. *Pammachius* a Senator of *Rome* with his Wife and Children, and others, both Men and Women to the number of Forty and two, suffered Martyrdom; and soon after another noble Senator named *Simplicius* suffered, and his Head, with the Heads of others that fell by the persecuting Hands, were set upon the Gates of the City.

Over and above these pious Martyrs of Jesus Christ, *Quirritius* a Noble Man of *Rome* with his Mother *Julia*, and a great number more were put to Tortures and sundry kinds of Deaths, as *Tiberius* and *Valerianus* two Brethren, the last Espoused to *Ecilia* before mentioned; were first broken with Whips, and afterwards had their Heads smitten off; also *Martina* a beautiful Noble Virgin, whom neither Persuasions, nor Torment could prevail with to renounce her Faith, suffered by the Sword.

And thus Cruelty triumphed in the Slaughter, and swam towards the Gates of Hell in a Red Sea of Blood, and in this Persecution *Anterius* Bishop of *Rome*, as *Eusebius* tells us, for no other Cause, but causing the Acts and Deaths of the Martyrs to be

Agapetus, Calepodius, Pammachius and his Wife, and Children. Simplicius, with a great many more suffer death for the Name of Christ.

Quirritius and his Mother Julia, Tiberius and Valerianus two Brothers, and Martina, with a great many more

put to Death. Anterius put to Death, and why.

written,

written, was himself condemned and suffered Death to be added to the List in which the Names of the Blessed were Enrolled ; he further tells us, this Bishop succeeded *Damasus*, though some other Writers disagree about the time of his Elevation to the See of Rome, and how long he continued therein.

Hippolytus Martyr.

Hippolytus call'd a Bishop by *Eusebius*, *Hieronymus* and others, suffered Martyrdom ; but as to the Place wherein he sat as Bishop Historians are silent, except *Nicephorus*, who saith he was Bishop of Ostia a Port Town near Rome ; which is not very likely seeing the Roman Bishops Jurisdiction extended farther ; besides *Galateus* tells us, he was a Bishop of a City of Arabia, but knows not the name of it.

Prudentius in his *Peristephanon*, makes mention of great numbers of Martyrs slain and buried in heaps during this Persecution, Threescore in a Pit ; and particularly says, That *Hippolytus* for the Profession of his Faith in Christ was drawn with wild Horses through Fields, Dales and Bushes, till he was torn in pieces ; and doubtless many more who suffered, had not God in Mercy to his suffering and afflicted People shortened the Reign, and Life of this Tyrant ; for he Reigned but Three years (viz. till the Year 240,) ere he met the Fate he deserved.

Maximinus his deserved Death.

He was succeeded by these Emperors following *Viz.* *Gordian* who Reign'd six Years, a mild Man and a Favourer of the Christians, slain by *Philip* his Successor, who together with his Son and all his Family, in 246 were converted and baptized. The Emperor and his Son Reign'd jointly four Years so that from 240 to 250, Christianity was free from the Fury of its Persecutors. In his time lived the famous *Cyprian*, that eminent Father of the Church. To these good Emperors succeeded *Decius* who raised the Seventh Persecution against the Church of Christ, and carried it on with great Fury to the Ruin and Destruction of many thousand innocent Persons.

the Seventh Persecution under Decius the Roman Emperor, began An. Dom. 250.

DECIUS having invaded the Empire about the Year of our Lord 250, was scarcely settled before he began to shew himself a mortal Enemy to the Christians, raising a terrible Persecution against them. His first Cavil was with *Fabianus Bishop of Rome*, to whom for his Uprightness and Integrity the preceding Emperor had committed the Custody of his Treasure, and whether he found not much as he expected, or for some other Cause, though it was pretended, in the beginning of his Reign, he caused him to be put to Death, and sent forth his Edicts into all the Provinces of the Empire to put to Death without Mercy all that professed the Name of Christ.

Decius raises the Seventh Persecution. Fabianus the first Martyr in this Persecution.

This Bishop in his Life-time, took great Care of the Church, and for the well ordering and governing of it, whence the *Roman* Catholicks, for upholding their Traditions and erroneous Tenents, will have affirmed Ordinances to be his, which are now attributed to him by any of the ancient Fathers.

Now it was that the Tyrant striking at the Root of the Church, in vain hoped to overthrow that which is founded on the Rock Christ Jesus: *Alexander Bishop of Jerusalem*, having by his Constancy and Courage overcome the former Persecution, is again called in Question and brought from his Diocese to *Casarea*, where being led into the Judgment Hall; after a constant Confession and Evidence of Faith made before the Judge, he was Sentenced to Prison, and there by the Torments inflicted on him and other hard usage, finished his Days.

Alexander Bishop of Jerusalem put to Death.

The

Asclepiades Bishop of Antioch Martyr, and Babylas say some.

The next Storm fell upon *Asclepiades* Bishop *Antioch*, who had likewise scaped with Life in *Severus's* time, though some Authors will have it *Babylas* who succeed him in that See; yet it is evident by many, that he suffered in this Persecution under *Decius*, dying in Prison; others not so much dissenting from it, as disagreeing about Point of time. 'Tis not improbable but both of them might suffer in this Reign; some affirm the latter was put to Death, for opposing the Emperors entering the Church, to pollute it with his Idolatrous Worship; and that he suffered Death with great Courage and Constancy of Mind: *St. Chrysostom* tells us, in his Book, Intituled, *Contra Gentiles*, That this latter Bishop was put to Death by *Decius*, for his withstanding his entering into the Temple, being, at his own request, buried with his Chains and Shackles on, and his Body, in the Reign of *Constantine the Great*, was removed to the Suburbs of *Antioch* by *Gallus* Governour of the Eastern Provinces called *Daphnes*, where the Temple of *Apollo* was Erected, whose Image placed there, delivered Oracles to the People; but no sooner was the Body of this good Bishop brought in but the Oracles ceased, complaining that the Body of *Babylas* being buried there was the occasion he could give no more Answers, and so ever after became Dumb. But to proceed:

Forty Virgins put to Death.

Vincentius tell us in his 2d. Book, That in the Reign of this *Decius* forty Virgins, after having been imprisoned and Scourged, were brought forth and put to Death, singing Praises to God, and greatly rejoicing that their Bodies were counted worthy to be offered up as an acceptable Sacrifice to God, and that they were sent to meet the Spouse of their Souls in his glorious Kingdom. In the Country of *Phrygia* in the Town of *Lampsar*, he speaks of one *Peter* who was apprehended for professing the Name of Christ, and suffered cruel Torments by the Command of *Optimus* the Pro-consul; and that in *Troada*, a little

Peter of Phrygia Martyr;

Town

own, other Martyrs suffered, as, *Andrew, Paul, As also*
Nicomachus, and a beauteous Virgin named *Dionysia*. *Andrew,*
likewise in the City of Babylon, divers Christian Paul, Ni-
comachus,
confessors were found, whom Decius commanded and Dio-
nyfia.
to be carried Prisoners to Spain, where they suffered More Mar-
tartyrdom. He further tells us, That in Casarea tyrs.
City of Cappadocia, Vitalis, Theophilus, Ger- Vitalis,
manus, Polychronius, Nestor, and Casarius, suffered Theophi-
lul, and at Perside in the Town of Cardala, Olympiades Germa-
and Maximus resigned their Souls to God by perse- nus, Poly-
cuting Hands; and in Tyrus, Audax and Anatolia chronius,
gave up their Lives to Martyrdom for the Testimo- Nestor, &
ny they bare to the Name of Christ. Casarius,
I find in the Sixth Book of Eusebius, recited out Martyrs.
the Epistle of Dionysius Alexandrinus, that ma- Maximus,
ny during this bloody Reign suffered at Alexandria Olympia-
Egypt, the Persecutors there being, incited to des, Au-
his Cruelty by a Southsayer, who laboured to dax, & A-
to hold his Masters Kingdom, by instigating the anatolia,
people to destroy the Upstarts, so he called the Martyrs.
Christians, and adhere to the ancient Idolatrous
Worship which he impiously affirmed to be the true
Worship of God, whereto he impiously perswaded
the multitude without the Knowledge of the Em-
peror. But at last obtaining full Power, as a fit
instrument to carry on the work of Satan, he ap-
prehended Metra a pious and devout Christian, Metra,
who refusing to joyn with the unthinking multitude Martyr.
the Worship of Devils, was first beaten with
clubs, then tortured, by pricking with sharp Reeds,
and finally carried into the Suburbs of the City and The Matron
Quinta,
son named Quinta, and dragged her to the Idol Martyr.
temple, but she refusing to Worship with them,
and expressing her Detestation and abhorrence of
their Idolatry, they bound her Feet, and drew her
through the rough paved Streets of the City, dash-
ing her against Mill-stones, and scourging her with
Whips,

*Christians
burnt in a
Fire made
of the Wood
of their
own Houses.
Of which
number was
Apollo-
nia.*

Whips, till coming into the Suburbs, they put to Death with cruel Torments ; and bursting into Houses of the Christians as they were at their Prayers, putting up Supplications to God for staying of cruel Persecution, and having robbed them of their Substance, with the Wood of their Houses they made a Fire in the Market-place and burnt them to Ashes. Amongst these was one *Apollonia* a Virgin, whose Teeth they dashed out, and threatened to cast her into the Fire if she refused to blaspheme the Name of Christ, and fall down before their idol ; whereat she pausing a little with her self one seemingly desirous of Life, they had hoped she would comply with their wicked Commandment but the Pious Virgin so far deceived their Expectation, that taking her opportunity she leaped in the midst of the Flames where others were frying and worthy of eternal Memory for her Constancy dying and Patience in suffering, she there took up her Crown of Martyrdom.

*Serapion,
Martyr.*

After these they seized *Serapion* in his own House and after many cruel Torments inflicted on him they threw him from the upper Loft and dashed him to pieces with Stones : But God, to stay the Persecution, sent Division amongst the Heathen inso- much that their Contests growing hot about Niceties in their own way of Worship, like ravening Wolves they fell to persecuting and destroying one another ; so that the Christians had a little breathing time ; especially in *Africa* and some parts of *Asia*.

*Some re-
nounce
their Re-
ligion.*

Under the Reign of this *Decius*, some few that professed Christianity, seeing the cruel Torments that were used, and being urged to it, the Desire of present Life prevailing with them, more than Expectation of a future blessed Estate, renounced their Faith ; but these soon found the hand of God severe upon them, which nevertheless brought them to Punishment, without the Reward of

among

Amongst others, *Nicomachus* being grievously tormented by the Pro-consul at *Troas*, to avoid the torments, cryed out that he was no Christian, and was taken from the Rack, and carried to Sacrifice to the Idols ; which he had no sooner done, but a wicked Spirit (God so permitting it) entered into him, and threw him violently on the Pavement ; that being thus often tormented, in Anguish of Spirit, and Horror of Conscience he bit off his Tongue, with which he renounced Christ and blasphemed his Holy Name, soon after dying distracted.

Amongst whom was Nicomachus,

Serapion an aged Man and a long Professor of Christianity, terrified as the former and over-And Old *Serapion*.
and of Life, though his Years had brought him to the Brink of the Grave, renounced his Faith and sacrificed to Idols ; who finding great Horror in his Mind, he laboured to be reconciled again to the Church, but could not be admitted, seeing he had Apostatized and Sacrificed to Idols ; upon which falling Sick, he continued bemoaning himself a long time, but could not die till a Minister of the Church gave his Son the Sacrament to administer to him, and then he easily gave up the ghost.

The famous *Origen* is said in this Reign to be hurried by force to the Temple, and Incense being put into his hand by the same Force, he was compelled to cast it into the Fire ; whereupon they all cryed with a loud Voice, *Origen hath Sacrificed*, *Origen hath Sacrificed* ; which some who emulated him in the Church, laying hold on as a voluntary Act of this pious Fathers, caused him to be Excommunicated, which cost him many a shower of Tears, and bitter Sighs and Groans, ere he could be re-mitted into the Christian Communion, as his own works amply testify of him ; and further it is said, he was a Man so desirous to keep his Chastity even in dreaming thoughts, insomuch that Preaching often there a great number of beautiful Matrons and Virgins

Origen forced against his Will to Sacrifice to Idols.

*He Gels
himself to
preserve his
Chastity.*

Virgins resorted to hear him and be instructed by him, for the better bringing of the Flesh under Subjection to the Spirit, he made himself an Eunuch to take away any libidinous Desires that might invade him.

*Evaristus
renounces
the Faith;*

Among the Revolters from Christianity, St. Cyprian, Lib. 2. Cap. 8. makes mention of one *Evaristus* a Bishop of *Africa*, who having undergone many Torments, startled at the Horror of Death and made Shipwrack of his Conscience, by leaving his Charge, forsaking his own Flock, and wandering about in other Countries; but in the end died miserably. Also of one *Nicostratus* a Deacon who forsaking his Deaconship, and taking the Good of the Church fled away for fear of the Persecution that grew hot in that Country; yet *Burgomenfis* tells us, he heartily repented afterwards and returning again, patiently suffered Martyrdom.

As also Nicostratus,

But repenting, suffers Martyrdom.

Thus however, though some grew slack in the Duty and Obedience to Christ, and some, though few, Apostatized and renounced his blessed Name yet by all the ancient Fathers it is concluded, that a great number continued stedfast in the Faith whom neither Fear could remove, nor Torment or Death in all his gastly Terrors could affright, so far overcome as to make them shrink a step back from the Profession they had taken upon them, basely betray it; but stood fast like glorious Martyrs to the end, and received those promised Crowns and Thrones, that those who continue faithful unto Death shall be rewarded with in a blessed Eternity.

The Persecutors come to untimely Ends.

As for the Persecutors, most of them came to untimely Ends, either by the immediate hand of God upon them, consuming them with uncommonly Diseases, or the hand of Man which brought them to violent and untimely Deaths.

*Decius
Drown'd,
and his Son
slain.*

As for *Decius* the Emperor, when he had Reigned about two Years he was drowned, and his Son instrumental in these Cruelties, was slain about the

me time in Battle, which fell out as a just Judgment of God upon them.

The Eighth Persecution under Valerianus, and Galienus his Son, began, or forwarding, Anno 259.

After the Death of *Decius*, *Trebonianus Gallus*, and *Volusianus* Succeeded as Co-Emperors, and reigned two Years; after them, *Emilianus* Succeeded and Reigned about three Months; during which Reigns, especially of the Co-partners in the Empire, though I find but little blood shed, yet several Christian Bishops and Pastors, were driven out of their Churches, and sent into Banishment, though they had always pray'd for their Successors; for which, no doubt a Judgment fell upon them, they being both slain by *Emilianus* in a Civil Sedition, who Succeeded them in the Empire, and was also slain at the end of three Months; and *Valerianus*, and his Son *Galienus*, were advanced to the Empire, at whose coming to the Throne, the Persecution was quite extinguished; it so happening, partly by the great Plague that raged everywhere, looked on as the hand of Heaven punishing the shedders of so much innocent Blood; and partly, by reason of the Civil Broils, and change of Emperors: And indeed, *Valerianus* at his first entrance into the Government, and for the space of three or four Years after, seemed to be of a mild and gentle Disposition towards the Christians; insomuch, that *Dionysius* writing to *German*, told him, the Court of Rome was full of the Saints and Servants of God, so that the Emperor's

Gallus and Volusianus, Emperors slain. Emilianus Succeeded, & is slain.

Palace seem'd to be Converted into the Church of Christ.

Valerian
raises the
Eighth
Persecu-
tion.
Instru-
ments
made use
of.
Differen-
ces a-
mongst
Christi-
ans.

But this Tranquility continued not long amongst the *Christians*, before wicked men, Instigated by the malice of Satan, their constant implacable Enemy; and above all, an *Ægyptian Magus* or Conjuror, perceiving that the *Christians* devout Prayers hindred the operation of his Charms, so infatuated the Emperor, that by his Sorceries he changed his Nature from Mildness and Affability to Bloody Cruelty, sacrificing Infants, and quartering Bodies: so that being hardned in wickedness, he raised the eighth Persecution. In the carrying it on, the chief Instruments were *Amilianus* President of *Ægypt*, *Paternus* and *Galerius Maximus* in *Africa*, *Paternus* Vicegerent at *Rome*, *Nicerius* and *Claudius* Prefects, and some others. And something the *Christians* themselves contributed towards their own misery, by the divisions now sprung up amongst them, fomented by false Brethren, who, as *St. John* says, professed themselves outwardly to be *Christians*, yet were not so, but of the Synagogue of *Satan*, which *St. Cyprian* greatly laments in his 4th Book, Epist. 4. Expressing there at large his sorrow for those unnatural divisions; attributing them to their lukewarmness in their holy Profession: and particularly he tells us, that their dissensions were such, that they could not agree in uniting in prayer: for when it was revealed to them in a Vision, in these words, *Petite & impetrabitis*; Pray, and ye shall Obtain: "afterward it was required of the Congregation there Present, to put up their Prayers for certain persons named to them; but they could not agree what persons they should pray for, but differed in their prayers or petitions, which thing (says he) did greatly displease him that spake unto them.

A Vision, the meaning of it. It will not be foreign to our purpose to give some account of a Vision that happened a little before this Persecution.

secution; which, as the Fathers Interpreted it, should befall the Church, viz. There appeared an Aged Man sitting, and at his right Hand, a Young Man very Disconsolate and Pensive, holding his Hand on his Breast; and on the left sat another, having in his hand, a Net, which he threatned to lay to catch the People that stood carelessly gazing: And as he was Marvelling that beheld the Vision, it was said unto him, The Young Man thou seest sit on the right hand, is thus sorrowful, because his Precepts are not observed; but he on the left hand, danceth, and is merry, because an opportunity is given him, to procure power of the Aged Father, to afflict Men.

The Crimes laid to the charge of the Christians, upon which this Persecution was grounded, were, that they were stubborn, obstinately refusing to worship their Idols, and adore the Emperors; and because they professed the Name of Christ: Besides, all the Calamities and Evils that happened in the World; as War, Famine, and Pestilence, were imputed to the Christians, for despising their Gods. Against which, St. Cyprian does eloquently defend the Christians in his Book *Contra Demetrianum*, setting forth Reasons why the Christians cannot Worship Idols or Men, but only the true God, who made Heaven and Earth, and that the Evils that happened in the World, were occasioned by the Wickedness of the People, and particularly of those that shed Innocent Christian Blood, like Water on the face of the Earth. But for his standing up a Champion in this Cause, (as in Conscience, he was dictated) he stirred up many mortal Enemies against him; and tho' by his Words and Writing, he defended his own Integrity, and that of the Christian Religion, basing and nonplusing the most Learned of their Orators, after a second Banishment, he was apprehended in his Garden, by the Command of *Galerius Maximus*, the Proconsul, when refusing to Sacrifice to Idols, the Proconsul fell into a Passion, saying, Long hast thou lived in Sacrilege, and ga-

Crimes
objected
against
the Chri-
stians.

St. Cy-
prian's
Apology
for 'em.

Galeri-
us's
Speech to
St Cy-
prius.

St. Cy-
prius Be-
headed.

thered together wicked Conspirators, and shewed thy self
an Enemy to the Gods of the Romans, and to their Holy
Laws; neither could the God-like Emperors Revoke
thee to the Use of their Ceremonies: And so in heat
Commanded him to be Beheaded; to which Sen-
tence (tho' unjust) he undauntedly submitted his
Neck; and so fell this blessed Martyr, to Rise a-
gain in Glory. In the Year of our Lord, 259. *Xistus*
then being Bishop of *Rome*, as is noted by *Euse-
bius*, enriching the Church to all posterity, with
the useful Writings, which he left behind him, which
neither the Malice of the Enemy then, the Corrup-
tion of Popery since, nor the length of time could
deface.

Pope Six-
tus, the
Second,
and six of
his Dea-
cons Be-
headed.

Soon after the fall of this Holy Father, *Xistus*
or *Sixtus* the Second of that Name, Bishop of *Rome*,
was accused for being a Christian (which he denied
not) and was brought with Six Deacons, to the
place of Execution; where he, with *Nemesius*, and
others his Deacons, were Beheaded, joyfully under-
going their Martyrdoms for the sake of Christ,
who with his rich Redeeming Blood, purchased for
them a sure Inheritance, that none are able to be-
reave them of.

St. Law-
rence's
remark-
able Suf-
ferings &
Death.

The next of Eminent note that fell into the Per-
secutors Hands, was *Lawrence*, who was so in love
with Martyrdom, that when he saw *Xistus* his
Bishop, to whom he was a Deacon, go to Execution,
in a long Oration then made, he desired to die with
him; but the good Old Man, dissuaded him from
it; yet told him prophetically, that God had so de-
termined, that he should shortly have his wish, and
be delivered out of this vale of tears, to sorrow no
more; and accordingly it so fell out, for the Go-
vernour of *Rome*, supposing he had had the Bishop's
Riches, and those of the Church, tortured him in a
cruel manner, to compel him to a Discovery of
what he knew not; and finding in this, he was
frustrated in his covetous Expectations, he fell upon
him

on touching matters concerning his Religion: But
 e shewing them the Poor, as the Receivers of
 Christ, to whom, he said, the Treasure of the
 Church appertained to feed and cloath them; they
 opposing by that he had mocked them, he was
 sentenced to Torments, and Doom'd to Death
 for the sake of Christ, and his Holy Profession; so
 that a large Grid-iron being brought forth, and
 repute under it, he was stript naked, and laid there-
 on, whilst the Emperor stood in view to glut his
 cruel Eyes with the Death of this Holy Martyr;
 but so mightily did God assist his Servant in his Suf-
 ferings, that from this sharp and consuming Ele-
 ment, it is said, he felt no pain, but when one side
 was broyled and scorched to the bone, that his very
 entrails appeared, he with a chearful Voice, called
 to his Tormentors; saying, *Turn, Tyrants, this side*
broyled enough; and so great was his patience and
 constancy in Suffering, that he confounded even his
 enemies, vanquishing both the Tormentors and
 Tyrant with his invincible Courage and Magnani-
 mity; whose Constancy in Dying, also wrought a
 good Work, by Converting a *Roman* Tribune, who
 was a Spectator; so that being Baptized, he openly
 confessed himself a Christian, and dyed a Martyr
 by losing his Head.

*A Roman
 Tribune
 Conver-
 ted, Bap-
 tized and
 Beheaded.*

During this Persecution, *Dionysius* Bishop of *Alexandria*, with his Fellows, were Banished, after
 having undergone sore Torments; as also, were se-
 veral Noble *Romans*. But the good Bishop, even in
 his Banishment, Converted several Infidels in *Ce-*
sarea, where, though an Exile, a great Congregation
 gathered to him; and from thence he went to his
 Church, to comfort and direct them, desiring their
 prayers for himself and his Deacons, that the Lord
 would strengthen them to bear, and pass through all
 sufferings and Afflictions, of what kind so ever that
 were appointed for them.

*Dionysius
 Bp. of
 Alexan-
 dria,
 with his
 Fellows
 Banished.*

To be brief in this cruel Persecution, all Ages,

Sexes and degrees, fell a Sacrifice to the Rage and Malice of their Enemies; both Men, Women, Virgins, Infants, and Youths; of whom, some with Scourgings and Fire, and some with Swords obtained Victory, and got the Crown; so that being born up by the Spirit of God, though they were slain for the sake of Christ, all the day long, they became more than Conquerors, through him that loved them, and gloried to hear God say, *In the time accepted, I have heard thee, and in the Day of Salvation, I have helped thee, &c.*

Fruftuofus, and his two Deacons, Augurius, and Eulogius Burnt, & the Apparition from Heaven thereupon.

Fruftuofus Bishop of *Tarracona* in Spain, was taken from his Flock, in this Persecution, and commanded to Worship the Gods of the Gentiles; but gravely refusing it, he proved they were no Gods, adding, the God he worshipped, was the only true God, the Lord and Master of all created Beings; and as for their Idols, they were only stocks and stones; which so enraged the Judge, that he Sentenced him to the Flames, together with his Deacons; in which they were no sooner put, but their Bands and Manacles fell off, and the Fire for a time, retreated from them; when as it is reported, a Soldier, one of their Guard standing by, saw the Heavens open, and many Glorious Angels appeared, ready to receive the departing Souls of these blessed Martyrs; which astonishing Sight, he shewed to the Daughter of *Emilianus* the President, who had Condemned them. The Deacons that suffered with this good Bishop, were *Augurius* and *Eulogius*, who being in the Fire, constantly confessed the Name of Christ to the shedding of their Blood; and their Souls, together with the Bishops, were seen by the Soldier and the Emperor's Daughter, before mentioned, to ascend Triumphantly to Heaven: Which being told to the President, he stood confounded and amazed for a time, not being able to speak a word; as say *Prudentius* and others.

Priscus, Malchus, & Alexander put to Death.

Besides these, Suffered in *Calarea*, *Priscus*, *Malchus* and *Alexander*; encouraged thereto, by seeing the

the courageous Suffering of other Christians; and from good Authority we have it, that 300 suffered martyrdom in *Carthage*, with innumerable others in different places: but at last, God punished this cruel Emperor; for, being taken in Battle, by *Shapur*, King of the *Persians*, when he had afflicted the Church two, and Reigned about six or seven years; as the *Persian* mounted his Horse, he made him lie down as his Foot-stool, to tread on in getting up, and in that miserable condition he continued till he dyed very Aged: And *Galienus*, though he Reigned longer, ended his Life in Misery and Exaltation, being slain by *Aurelianus*, not in the least endeavouring in his Life time, to free his Father from his slavish Captivity; yet, abated the Rigor towards the Christians; and to him Succeeded *Claudianus*, who Reigned 2 Years.

300
Martyr'd
in Char-
thage,
with in-
numera-
ble others
in other
places.
Valeri-
an's de-
served
Suffe-
rings and
Death.

The Ninth Persecution under Aurelianus
Emperor of Rome; who began his Reign,
Anno 272. or as some say, Anno 273.
Reigning about five or six Years.

TO *Claudius*, Succeeded, after two Years Reign, *Quintilianus* his Brother; a mild and peaceable Prince, yet continued Emperor but 17 Days, and was Succeeded by *Aurelianus*; under whom, *Prosus* in his 7th Book, reckons the Ninth Persecution against the Christians.

This *Aurelianus* began his Reign well, and carried it with much Moderation; though Authors describe him to be of a rough Temper, and by Nature, very severe and rigorous; yet for a time, he tolerated the Christians, and was at *Antioch* when they held their Councils there, without given them

Aureli-
an sets
on Foot
the Ninth
Persecu-
tion

Puts to
death his
Sisters
Son.

any manner of disturbance ; notwithstanding he was at last moved to exercise his Cruelty, by such wicked Instruments as were about him ; causing first his Sisters Son to be put to Death, as *Entropius* tells us, and began to afflict the Christians : For *Vincentius* collecting out of the Martyrologies, has given us a large Catalogue of Martyrs, which in *France* and in *Italy*, saith he, suffered Torments and Death, in the Reign of this Emperor ; whereunto likewise *Orosius* seemeth to agree, in numbering this under *Aurelianus*, to be the Ninth Persecution of the Christians ; though *Eusebius* is silent in it ; only he tells us that he purposing to raise a general Persecution, caused an Edict to be made to that intent, but here God seemed to interpose for the hindring, and putting a stop to his bloody purposes ; for as he was going to Sign it, such a horrible tempest of Thunder and Lightning happened, as if the Dissolution of all things had been at hand, which flashing in his Face, and dazling his Sight, put him into such a fit of trembling, that he threw away the Writing, and would not at the entreaty of any, be induced to Sign it ; so that the Persecution under *Hadrian* or *Adrian* Emperor, who succeeded *Trajan*, which is joyned with *Trajan's*, and both together, accounted but the Third Persecution ; because there was no Reign between them, might have been with more Reason, accounted the Fourth Persecution, and so have proceeded on to the Tenth, and left this altogether out, since the best Historians furnish us with no matter of this kind, that warrants it for a Persecution of the Christian Church : However, seeing custom has so placed it, I have also set it down, as the Ninth Persecution : For this Emperor, after about five Years Reign, was killed by his Secretary, so that likewise, in the Reigns of *Tacitus*, *Florianus*, *Marcus Aurelius*, *Probus* and *Carus*, for about 40 Years, the Church had peace, and mightily flourished for a time, by the Care and Industry of good Bishops.

Aureli-
an kill'd
by his Se-
cretary.
The
Church
has Peace
for 40
Years to-
gether.

ps, Deacons, and Fathers of the Church, of
 om *Eusebius* and others, bear Testimony; but in
 ong a prosperity, Avarice, Luxury and Ease, in-
 duced a world of Mischief; especially, when
 st of these Grave Men, were laid in their
 aves, and upstart Prelates, and other Ministers,
 rless of Persecution, that would have kept them
 s, intruded into the sacred Offices, by Symony,
 d other crafty Devices; in so much, that they
 lt stately Churches and Houses, being favoured
 the Governours and Magistrates; but their Idle-
 ss, and voluptuous way of Living, as is hinted,
 roducing Pride, Corruption soon followed.

This great Liberty and Prosperity, as in other
 ses, is usually seen; soon made those professing the
 ristian Religion, degenerate from that sim-
 plicity and purity, that had, even till now, conti-
 ned in the Church; and for want of Enemies to
 ercise their patience in suffering, they grew fro-
 ard and angry with one another; a thing that
 d not happened till now, striving and contending
 mong themselves on every light occasion, with
 iling words, in the most despiteful manner; Bi-
 shop against Bishop, and People against People;
 d worse than all this, Hypocrisy and Dissimula-
 on rise, as rank Weeds or Tares, growing up to
 oak the Churches Corn; by reason of which, the
 dgment of God, whom they had highly provoked,
 gan by little and little, to fall upon them; for
 ose that were abroad in Warfare under the Em-
 rors, were mostly cut off; many were consumed
 Plagues and Famine; and yet instead of seeking
 Prayer and Supplication, to appease God's An-
 r; and being touched with the Calamities, his
 dgments had brought upon them, they turned
 their backs upon him, and many became a Scandal
 their Profession, and a by-word to the Heathen;
 d wanting others to persecute them; they fell
 persecuting each other, giving themselves up to
 the

*Prosperi-
 ty occasi-
 ons fall-
 ings out
 among
 Christi-
 ans.*

the study of Contentions, Threatnings, Emulation and Mutual Hatred, persecuting one another, as the Tyrants had done.

This being at this time (to the great grief and sorrow of those few that continued upright among them) the State of the Church in many places, might be said of it, as the Prophet *Jeremiah* said of the Church of the *Jews*, *That the Lord took away the Beauty of the Daughter of Sion, and the Glory of Israel, fell down from Heaven, neither did He remember His Foot-stool, in the Day of His Wrath, &c.* And indeed so it happened, for God took away the Hedge from about his *Vineyard*, and suffered the wild Beasts of the Forests, to root up his Vine, and the little Foxes, to pluck off her tender Branches: For soon after the Tenth Heathen Persecution, broke in a bloody Tempest on their Heads, and overwhelmed them in Misery and Confusion; they saw their Temples and Churches levelled with the Ground, and the Holy Scriptures burnt in the Publique Market-places; the Pastors of the Church, fly into Caves and Dens, the Habitations of wild Beasts to hide themselves; and some taken Prisoners were, to their shame, mocked and reproached by their Enemies, and that justly, for the looseness of their Lives. And thus we may see, and take warning hereby, being assured, that God will not spare his own people more than others, if they offend nay, rather punish them worse, for abusing the great Mercies bestowed on them; and as he said to *David* when he punished him, giving the Heathen occasion to Blaspheme.

Tenth Persecution, under Dioclesian, Emperor of Rome; with Maximianus, and others, began Anno 290.

The *Tenth Persecution*, as it was the last stroke God permitted the Heathen Emperors to afflict his Church with, so it proved the heaviest and severe; being not only as a Tryal of their Faith, but as a Punishment for their Rebelling against him, who had the care of Christ's Flock; instead of Administring in Sincerity and Truth, they perverted many from the way of Righteousness.

For *Dioclesian* taking upon him the Government of the Roman Empire, Anno Dom. 284. and including himself alone, not able to weather the Storms that threatned him, chose *Maximianus*, named *Herculius*, his Colleague; and they, by reason of the Invasions, and other Wars that arose in many parts of the Empire, chose to receive Assistance, two others, viz. *Galerius* and *Constantinus*. The first they sent into *Persia*, and the second, into *Britain*; where, well for the Church, (it proved afterwards) he Married *Helena*, daughter of King *Coil*, a *British* Prince; being a Christian Virgin, of flourishing Beauty, and no less Wise and Learned. These four Colleagues obtained many great Victories in *Egypt*, *Africa*, *France* and *Britain*; which Victories so puffed up *Dioclesian* with pride, that he commanded himself to be worshipped as a God; saying, That he was Brother to the Sun and Moon: And adorning his Shoes with Gold and precious Stones, commanded the People to give Adoration, to kiss his Feet. All the Christians refusing to do this, and upon some other complaints made against them, he resolved to cut them off from the Face of the Earth, as people unworthy of a Kingdom.

Tenth Persecution under Dioclesian, &c.

The

An Edict
Publish-
ed.

The Tyrant having thus determined; about the Ninteenth Year of his Reign, in the Month of *March* put forth his Edict, to Demolish and Level with the Earth, all the Churches and Temples of the Christians; to Burn the Sacred Scriptures, and other Holy Writings they had in use among them; which was effected to the utmost of his power; as *Eusebius* notes it, *Lib. 8. Chap. 2.* and to displace such as were Magistrates of that Profession, with the greatest Ignominy imaginable, and to Imprison those of a lower Station; refusing to abjure their Faith, and Subscribe themselves satisfied with the Idolatrous Worship of the *Roman*

This held not long before other Edicts were put forth to persecute them for their Obstinacy (as was termed) in refusing Obedience to the Emperor's Mandates: Nor did the cruel Ministers of his Vengeance, delay, with barbarous Violence, to Execute his Orders, on the Bishops, Deacons, and other Heads of the Church; casting them into Prison, and compelling some, with sundry Torments, and cruel Tortures, to Sacrifice to their Idols; and such refused, who were far the greater Number, were put to Death, after many Buffetings, Stripes and Revilings. The Emperor also, to try the better how his Cruelties would be digested by his Souldiers, put the Marshal of the Field to Death, for another Cause, than his being a Christian: And such of the Soldiery, as refused to submit to the *Pagan* Worship, were cashiered with Ignominy and Disgrace; who joyfully chose to lead a simple and poor Life, rather than abjure their Religion, as was demanded of them: Thus by little and little, wedging in his Cruelties upon them, so that many fled in *Palestine*; that place being first sprinkled with the Blood of Professors, wherein Christ had Preached his Gospel to strengthen and confirm them.

Christi-
ans
thrown to

In *Tyrus* of *Phoenicia*, many were thrown to Wild Beasts; but they, more Merciful than the Tyrant would

ld do them no harm, to the great Astonishment
the Spectators; though they were otherwise
venous Lyons, Bears and Libards, kept hungry
that purpose: Yet they scaped not the Hands
their unmerciful Persecutors, but were slain
the Sword, and their dead Bodies cast into
Sea.

about this time, the Bishop of *Sidon*, coura-
ously underwent the sharp Conflict of Martyrdom;
Sylvanus, the Bishop of *Gaza*; with 39 o-
thers, were set to Work in the Mines of *Phæ-*
a; and there Dyed with hard Labour and
Pain: Nor scaped *Pamphilus* the Elder, of *Cæ-*
a, though a Man so Pious and Devout, that he
esteemed by the Brethren, The Glory of the Con-
gregation; for after being a long time Tormented,
no possibility appearing to make him Abjure, he
entered the Flames; out of whose Fury, his Soul
ascended to the Regions of Bliss.

In *Syria*, all the Heads and chief Teachers of the
Congregation, were committed to Prison, and ma-
ny of them suffered Death, passing to it through a
World of Torments. In *Antioch* also, a great num-
ber were put to Death; some by Burning, others
by Beheading; and some again, Drowned in the
Sea: And *Sulpitius*, Bishop of *Emissa*, with his
disciples, were thrown to, and devoured by wild
Beasts.

In *Tersus* of *Cilicia*, *Tharatus*, *Probus*, and *An-*
dronicus, suffered Martyrdom. In *Mesopotamia*, se-
veral were Hanged up by the Feet, and smoaked to
Death with wet Straw, Brimstone, Pitch, and o-
ther combustible matters: And in *Cappadocia*, they
cut off their Legs and Arms, and cast them into the
Fire, to be devoured of wild Beasts, or to Die
quitting in their Tortures. The like Cruelty
was exercised in *Pontus*; and indeed, no place where
Christians Inhabited, was free from Persecution.

Admirable, and worthy to be Noted, are the con-
stant

Wild
Beasts,
who do
them no
harm.

Bp. of Si-
don. and
Bp. of
Gaza,
with 39
others,
suffer
Death.
Pamphi-
lus
Mar-
tyr'd.

Sulpiti-
us, &c.
thrown to
Wild-
Beasts.

Thara-
tus, Pro-
bus and
Andro-
nicus,
suffer
Martyr-
dom.

Peter, a Pious Man, undergoes great Torments. Instant Sufferings of one *Peter*, a pious Man; notwithstanding his Reverend Age, was drawn by Pulleys, with great Weights at his Feet, stripped naked, and Scourged till his Muscles and Sinews bare; after this, Rubbed over with Salt and Vgar, then tyed to a Spit, and Roasted to Death in a soft Fire, to continue his Torments the longer; yet all this while, he continued Praising and Magnifying God, with the same even Temper, that he paid his Devotions in the Church.

Dorotheus & Gorgonius Strangled. *Dorotheus* and *Gorgonius* being degraded and from the great Authority they had under the Emperor, for refusing to Sacrifice to Idols, by making a free confession of their Faith; after suffering many Torments, were Strangled to Death with Cord being encouraged, patiently to Suffer, by seeing *Peter* undergo his Torturing Death with so much Magnanimity and Constancy of Mind.

Anthimus and Lucianus put to Death. *Anthimus* Bishop of *Nicomedia*, with many others, fell in this Persecution by the Sword; who so little daunted others, as the Tyrant expected that *Lucianus* the Elder, came with a great Troop of Christians into his Presence, and having made his Apology, as to the purity of their Religion, and the innocency and harmless Living of the Professors of it; he, with the rest, willingly and cheerfully submitted to the Sentence pronounced, and the execution of Death thereby appointed them. Nor did *Serena*, the Wife of *Dioclesian*, escape; for she, more with the Constancy of the Holy Martyrs in their Sufferings, and being induc'd thereby to embrace the Faith, was, at the Command of *Hermanus*, put to Death, with many others: So that, in this raging Persecution, all ties of Natural Affection were laid aside, and nothing but Merciless Cruelty took place, rendering the Persecutors more thirsting of Innocent Blood, than the *Pannonian* Bears, *Hyrcanian* Tygers.

Maximianus, one of these Persecutors, taking

Advantage when the Christians were Assembled in a Temple, to celebrate the Feast of the Nativity of our Blessed Saviour, shut up the Doors, and set a guard upon them; causing it to be proclaimed, that who ever would come forth, and Sacrifice to Idols, should be spared; but such as refused, should be burnt, together with the Temple: whereupon, one Holy Man stood up with great courage, in the Name of the rest, declared, *That all in the Temple, were Christians of unshaken Faith and Integrity; and firmly believed, that Christ was their God, their King; that they alone would do Sacrifice to Him, with the Father and the Holy Ghost; and that they were now all ready to offer unto Him, and Sacrifice their Lives in His Cause, who had Redeemed them from everlasting Death, with His most precious Blood.*

Several Christians burnt in a Temple.

This steadfast Answer, so much enraged the Tyrant, that he caused fire immediately to be put to the doors, and burning the Temple, consumed several thousands of them to Ashes; as well Women and Children, as Men; who, with their dying Breath, sang *Hosannahs* in the Flames.

A City in Phrygia, with all its Inhabitants burnt.

The like happened in *Phrygia*, to a whole City, upon their refusing to Sacrifice to Idols; for being compassed with an Army, and shut up in their houses, they were burnt in them.

In *Alexandria* in *Egypt*, the Persecution was great, as well as in other Cities of that Country; which *Phileas*, the Bishop of the *Thumitanes*, has powerfully expressed, in his Epistle to his Flock; cited by *Eusebius*, in the 8th. Book, Chap. 10. There are among other passages of Inhumanity expressed in it, I find this, viz.

Persecution very great in Alexandria.

Power was given, for every one to Torment the Holy Martyrs, as their Rage and Cruelty dictated; and further, they were strictly Commanded, not to shew the least Mercy or Compassion, but so furiously and vigorously to deal with the Christians, that had it been in their power, they might destroy both Body and Soul.

For

For after they had most lamentably Beaten them, they devised a new kind of Rack; in which, laying them right, they were stretched by both Feet, above the fow step or hole, and sharp Shells or Shares strowed under them: Others being laid on the Pavements, were by many new invented and inhumane Torments, oppressed beyond Credibility.

But as all these Torments were marvellously notable, being wickedly contriv'd, and no less grievous and sharp; so neither the Pains they caused, nor the terror of them, were in the least able to dismay the Martyrs of *Christ*, nor overcome them; but they, by their grievous Sufferings, were the rather strengthened and confirmed; joyfully undergoing what ever was inflicted on them. And *Eusebius* tells us, that in *Thebais* he saw the Executioners tired and faint with Slaughtering so many Innocents insomuch, that they were constrained to desist whilst the Blood streamed in the Channells like a mighty Torrent; yet, the undaunted Sufferers, at the last Gasp, Sung Hymns and Praises to God who in his Mercy, delivered them from a miserable World, to be clothed in the white Robes of *Christ's* Righteousness, and Shine in Glory with Him in His Kingdom.

Mauritius and his Soldiers put to Death.

As also Victor & his Band.

Nor did this Fury and Madness of the Persecuting Emperors, refrain from the Christian Souldiers of which there were great Numbers in the Armies who had done them faithful Service in their Wars against the *Barbarians*: For *Mauritius*, the Captain of 6666 *Christians*, was Slain, with all under his Command, at one time, not making any Resistance; and *Victor*, another Captain of the *Christians*, was likewise slain with his whole Band; consisting of 360. only for professing themselves *Christians*. These bloody Wages they received for their faithful Service to such barbarous and ingrateful Masters: Though, without doubt, they met with a better Reward from Him, for whose sake, they

es became a Sacrifice to merciless Cruelty; as
 ng true Souldiers of the Church Militant, fight-
 Manfully under his Banner unto Death, who is
 Captain of our Salvation. These continu'd,
 incessant Acts of Cruelty rather Increasing,
 on wasting the faithful Sufferers, so baffled the
 purposes of their Enemy, utterly to root them out,
 at, tired with shedding of blood, seeing all their
 ugling but in vain, since He who sitteth in Hea-
 n, had them in derision, and turned their world-
 Policy into Foolishness; *Dioclesian* and *Maximi-*
 n, gave it over of their own accord; Command-
 g, That no more should be put to Death: Yet
 any were sent into Banishment; others had one
 e put; some again their Legs Maimed, and sent
 the Mines, not so much for the sake or value of
 eir Labour, as the desire of Afflicting them: So
 at in this Tenth Persecution, some Authors allow
 Hundred Thousand to have been put to Death;
 others more, beside a greater Number that were
 ormented and Afflicted, yet scaped with Life, to
 e happier Days. Thus the Persecution, after so
 uch blood shed, seemed to cease; at least, the
 gor of it was very much abated, for I find no more
 t to Death after this time. Some time after
 ese two cruel Emperors Resign'd the Empire of
 eir own accord; when they had Reign'd 21 Years,
 as *Nicephorus* has it, 22 Years. *Dioclesian* lead-
 g a private Life at *Salona*, and *Maximinian* did
 e like at *Mediolanum*; after they had carryed on
 Ten Years Persecution; with great Rigor;
 alerius, a main Instrument in it, fell into a won-
 derful Sickness; such a sore Swelling arising on the
 ither part of his Belly, that it consumed his pri-
 Members, and bred such abundance of Worms,
 at persisting against all Art, it not being capable
 a Cure, he in great torment, confessed, that this
 as the Hand of God upon him, for his Cruelty to-
 ards the Christians; and immediately thereupon

Persecution
 on ceases.

Miserable
 ble end of
 the Perse-
 cutors.

recalled his Edicts. At length, none being able to endure the stench of him, he in Torment and Anguish of Mind, slew himself. *Maximinus* having lost his Son in the War against *Maxentius*, Dye of a tormenting Pain in his Bowels. *Licinius* being over-come by *Constantine* the Great, was slain by his own Souldiers; which shews, that though they might seem to be Scourges in God's Hand, to chastise the Christians for their Luke warmness and Indifferency in their Profession, as in the foregoing Section, I have shewed to be too sadly rise among them; yet having done with them, he cast them into the Fire of his Indignation. Thus ended the Ten Persecutions; after whom, we Read of no more Emperors, who Destroyed or Molested the Christians, except it were *Julianus*, or *Basilius*, who Expelled one *Zeno*, and was afterward Expelled himself; or *Valens*; for besides these, it is not Recorded, that any of the *Roman* Emperors came to Ruin and Decay, as the others before mentioned.

The Church, after the Ten Cruel Persecutions, Restored to Peace and Tranquillity, by Constantine the Great, first Christian Emperor of Rome, &c.

Maxentius takes upon him the Empire.

WHilst things were at this pass in the *Rome* Empire, *Maxentius* having gotten together a great Army, and overthrown the Forces sent against him, he takes possession of *Rome*, calls himself to be Proclaimed Emperor, and Reigned there with much Cruelty and Oppression, relying much on his Art of Magick, which he professed for his security; many and villainous were the Actions he committed; particularly, causing a *Rome*

Matron

atron to kill her self to avoid his Lust, having
 st himself, Murdered her Husband in his own
 ouse, to gain her, as he thought, the more easily
 comply with his bestial Appetite. This his
 anicendent Wickedness, threatening Ruin to the
 ommon-Wealth, if he were not timely removed,
 e Citizens and Senators of *Rome*, resolving to
 move this Plague, with one consent, Wrote Let-
 rs to *Constantine*, intreating him to hasten with
 s Army, to Rescue them from the Tyrant's pow-
 ; which he failed not to do, raising Forces in
 ritain, *France* and *Spain*, to Recruit his Legions,
 hose Countries, during the Reigns of the Co-
 mperors, having been assigned him as his proper
 ovinces) with Banners display'd he Marched to-
 ards *Rome*.

His Cru-
 elty.

Citizens
 murmur,
 and send
 to Con-
 stantine.

Maxentius hearing what preparations were made
 against him, and having notice by his Scouts, that
 his Enemy was entered *Italy*, fearing a Revolt if he
 presently quitted; he contented himself in the in-
 erim, to keep close within the Walls, and sent out
 his Generals, to take the passes and narrow
 freights, and Skirmish with *Constantine*, thinking
 to weary him out, and wast his Soldiers; him-
 self at the same time, practising his Charms, of
 which, it was said, *Constantine* stood in more dread
 than of his Forces; for it was generally Rumour'd,
 he had deliver'd himself up to the Devil, to attain
 the Empire of *Rome*; and that he had often ripped
 up Women with Child, taking the Infants from
 their bleeding Wombs, to use in his Soceries;
 however, some Battles were Fought, and *Constan-*
ine prevailed; till at length, as it is Recorded,
 being in a great streight, and much perplexed in
 his Mind, about the Success of this Undertaking,
 chancing to cast his Eye towards Heaven, he saw a
 brightness, resembling a Cross, and certain Stars
 it, of an equal Magnitude, Composing, as Let-
 ters, these Words in *Latin*, viz. *IN HOC VINCIS*;

Cross in
 the Hea-
 ven, en-
 courages
 Constan-
 tine.

In this overcome; surpriz'd and astonish'd at the Sign in the Heavens, it is further added, going to his Repose, *Christ* appeared to him in a Vision shewing him a Cross like that he had seen before commanding him to represent it on his Banner, and advance against the Enemy, over whom he should obtain the Victory; which command, he readily and punctually obeying, and found what had been promised answerable in the Event; for approaching now much nearer to *Rome*, the Tyrant Mustred all his Forces, to oppose him in the Field, and hereupon Battle was joyned beyond the River *Tyber*; where *Maxentius* breaking down the Bridge, called *Pons Milvius*, caused another deceitful Bridge to be laid over, in order to draw his Enemy into the Danger but after a bloody Slaughter, being overthrown and in the Flight, Hurry and Confusion, himself being forced upon it, carryed away, as it were, by the press of his Men, his Horse falling, the weight of his Armour sunk him to the bottom of the River; where, with a great Number of his followers he was drowned, and left the unrivalled Empire to the Victor; who (to the great joy of the Citizens, seeing open their Gates) entered *Rome* in Triumph, and being mindful of the Sight in the Air, and of his Vision, that had so justly answered to his Wish, he immediately set all the Christians at Liberty, who remained in Prisons since the last Persecution, which had circled the space of 300 Years, from the first Persecution of the Church of *Christ*; if we continue it to the 6th. Year of *Constantine* the Great, whilst Persecuting *Licinius* Reigned as co-Emperor.

Constantine gains
a Compleat
Victory.

The Citizens of *Rome* overjoyed at the Success of *Constantine*, who had delivered them from the Tyranny of *Maxentius*; Received him, as it is said, with open Gates, he entering with the Banner of the Cross carried before him, portrayed in the Figure with Gold and precious Stones; and for Security

ays, Magnificent Feasting was held; and soon after, his Image was set up in the Market-place, holding a Cross in its Hand. Thus the Church did rest under *Constantine*; who, during his Life, did always the Banner of the Cross carried before him in his Wars; under which, proving Victorious: He granted great Privileges and Immunities to the Church, and gave great Respect to those Christians that Lived worthy of their Calling, and their Profession: so that great Tranquility ensued, and continued without any open slaughter by persecution, for about One Thousand Years; till the Bishops of *Rome* copying by the Heathen Emperors, and yet out-doing their Original, set the World into a flame again; Persecuting the Church of Christ, in a more terrible manner than any before them had done, and by their bad Example, bringing up Princes and Rulers that were their Creatures, to do the like; as in their proper place will be noted.

Constantine now, together with *Licinius*, being established in the Empire; put forth their Edict, granting, and giving all Men Liberty to practise their Religion, as their Conscience dictated, without any Let or Hindrance, Compulsion or Restraint; which was so well taken of the *Romans*, and esteemed by all Men, that the Copy of that Edict, for Establishing the Worship of God after the manner of the Christian Religion, was treasured up amongst their choice Records in *Rome*: Which may be found at large, in *Euseb. Lib. 10. Chap. 5.* But for brevities sake, I am here constrain'd to omit it; however, take this passage in it, most conducing to our purpose, viz.

Also among others, we have provided for the Christians, that they may have again the possession of such places, in which heretofore they have been accustomed to make their Assemblies; so that if any have bought or purchased the same, either of us, or any other, the

same places, without either Recompence or Money, forthwith, and without delay, restored again to the said Christians; and if any Man have obtained the same by gift from us, and shall require any recompence to be made to him on that behalf, then let the Christians repair to the President, being the Judge appointed for the place, that Consideration be had of those Matters by our Benignity. All which things, we Will and Command, that you see to be given and restored freely, and with all diligence, unto the Society of the Christians, &c.

Licinius
still per-
secutes
the Chri-
stians.

Now as for *Licinius*, we cannot find that he complied with this cordially, but rather for fear of *Constantine*; who, by his gracious Carriage, Clemency and impartial Administration of Justice, had ingrossed to himself, the good Affections of the Romans. For, in the Provinces where he Commanded, and had most Power, he nevertheless, kept a private Persecution on foot; upon which, many chose rather to fly into the Wilderness, and to live in Caves, than trust themselves under his Jurisdiction: For like a Tyger's Whelp, having once tasted blood, his cruel Nature prompted him to be still sucking, and to throw off this Yoak, that he might have again, his full swing at Persecuting. He broke the Union, by conspiring against the *Licinius* of *Constantine*; which discovered, caused matters to come to open Hostility, and divers Battles were fought; first in *Hungary*, where *Licinius* was overthrown, and flying into *Macedonia*, was again discomfited; his Forces, both by Sea and Land, were discomfited; and in *Thessaly*, was slain by his own Soldiers; as hath been already hinted, in the foregoing Section. Thus happily were the Christians, in other parts, as well as at *Rome*, rid of a cruel Persecutor.

He re-
volts, en-
gages
with
Constantine, and
is slain
by his
own Sol-
diers.

For in the time of the afore-mentioned Persecution, *Britain*, though distant from *Rome*, felt the force of it: For *Alban* the Protomartyr of this Nation

suffered by losing his Head, at a place called
en, *Holmehurst*, now *St. Alban's*; Taking from
is good Man, a new Denomination. Also *Aaron*
d *Julius*, suffered for the sake of a good Consci-
ce, at *Leicester*: And some Authors will have it,
at in those Days, a Thousand Christians suffered
Litchfield.

The before-mentioned *Constantine*, was Son to
Constantinus Chlorus, and *Helena*, Daughter to King
oil, or *Coilus*, a *British* Prince; she being at the
me of her Marriage, held to be a Christian; and
o wonder if she laboured to encline her Son to that
rofession; especially after the Death of her Hus-
nd, who dyed at *York*, whose Early imbibed
inciples, now growing into Practice, no wonder
they rendered him the most accomplished Empe-
or, that the Christians could hope for: He having
nce embraced the Christian Religion, he ever after,
ost devoutly and religiously Reverenced it; and
ommanded by his Edicts, that the whole Empire
ould profess it, and no other. As for his being
aptized, *Eusebius* tells us in his *Life*, *Lib. 4.* he
eferred that even to his old Age; and the Reason
e gave for it, was; that he intended to be Bap-
ized in the River *Jordan*: Nor did he spare any
ains or Labour for the Welfare, and well Settle-
ment of the Church: For when any complained
f a disagreeing between the Bishops or Pastors,
e would mildly perswade them to heal their brea-
thes among themselves, and be cautious of any Dis-
ention, to give occasion of Scandal; promising to
ide the Schisms of the Church, and other Diffe-
ences, if possible, with his Royal Robe, rather than
hey should appear in their nakedness to the Eye of
he World; and proceeded to put out many favou-
able Edicts, on the behalf of those that appro-
ed themselves steadfast, without wavering in their
faith, not runing upon new fangled Doctrines and
Opinions, as some did, by misapplying, and not

The Pa-
rentage
of Con-
stantine.

rightly expounding the Texts of Scripture; and those that did so, he discouraged, yet laboured to reclaim, by Mildness and gentle Perswasions.

No less was the Care of this good Emperor, Erecting, Restoring and Enriching the Churches in all Cities, and providing a sufficient Competence for the Ministers, and other Subordinates; and writing to *Milinus* his Consul, he declared his Will and Pleasure to him, in relation to the Churches of the Christians, That he should procure vigilantly for the same, that all such Goods, Houses and Gardens as did before belong to them, should be restored; and that he therein might be certified with speed, he also freed all Bishops, Deacons, and such as were concerned about the Service of the Church from publique Taxes, Impositions and secular Offices; that they being so privileged, and all impediments removed, that might hinder their Ministry, might improve in their Functions, to the common benefit of their Hearers, and those over whom they had Charge, might be the better instructed, whilst all things were made easy and peaceable to them.

To the Province of *Palestine*, and the Countries adjacent, he directed his Edict on the behalf of the Christians; for the releasing such as were in Captivity, and for the restoring again, such as had been thrust out of their Possessions, or sustained any Loss in the former Persecution; and for the Comforting and Refreshing of such as had been heretofore Oppressed; declaring in the same Edict, that both Body and Soul, and all his Endeavours, were devoted to the Service of God.

Many other Edicts he set forth, and sent into the Provinces of the Empire, in favour of the Christians; wherein, his Zealous Care, and Princely Beneficence, was in a wonderful manner expressed towards them: where no Churches were, there he commanded new ones to be Erected; where the

The Pope In his humble Stale.



were Decayed, they were Repaired; and where too little, Enlarged and richly Endowed: Nay, when at any time, the Bishops required a Council to be held, he granted their Petitions; and what in their Councils and Synods, they Established, if it was Orthodox, he Ratified and Confirmed. Which plainly shews, that in those Days, the Bishops of Rome were more modest than to arrogate a Supremacy, but rather submitted the Approving and Confirming their Decretals and Ordinances to the Emperor; and so they did some Hundred Years afterwards.

As for the Arms of his Soldiers, which newly sprung from Gentility, not forgetting his Vision and Victory, he Garnished with the Sign of the Cross, that thereby they might the sooner blot out of their Remembrance, their old superstitious Idolatry, and in Spirit and Truth, worship the only true God. He also took into his Service, and bountifully Rewarded, all such Soldiers as had been Cashiered upon the Account of their being Christians, and prescribed them, a certain Form of Prayer, by way of their Confession of Faith; in these Words, viz.

We acknowledge thee only to be our God; we confess thee to be our King; we invoke and call upon thee, our only Helper; by thee, we obtain our Victories; by thee, we vanquish and subdue our Enemies; to thee we Attribute whatsoever present Conveniences we Enjoy; and by thee we hope for good Things to come. To thee we direct all our Suits and Petitions, most humbly beseeching thee to protect and conserve, Constantine our Emperor, and his Noble Children; and beg of thee, our Everlasting King, to continue them in long long Life, and give them Victory over their Enemies, through Christ Jesus our Lord. Amen.

This Good Emperor gave Liberally to the Maintenance of Schools, Erected for the Encouragement of Piety and Learning; and granted large Privileges to Universities, commanding the Scriptures

to be diligently kept, and continually Read in Churches; and liberally Relieved the Necessities the Poor, remitting the fourth part of his Revenues to be disposed of to these and other pious Uses. Some Authors hold, he was Baptiz'd in his old Age, by *Sylvester* Bishop of *Rome*; but others disagreeing, and it appearing dubious, we leave it doubtful: However, for the favour he shew'd to the Church, and his own pious Life, God bless'd him with a long and happy Reign: For as *Eutropius* affirmeth, he Reigned thirty Years; and *Leo* tells us, he Reigned thirty and two Years, abating two Months: Removing the Seat of the *Roman* Empire into the *East*, viz. to *Constantinople*, Anciently call'd *Byzantium*; Leaving *Rome* to the Government of the Bishop and his Clergy, together with the Senators, and other Governours. His Tomb of grey Marble, continues at *Constantinople* to this Day; even the *Turks* continuing a Veneration to the Memory of this worthy Emperor. Not accounting the six Years that *Licinius* Reigned with him, the time of the Persecution, amounts to just 300 Years, when it ceased in this great Emperor who laid a lasting Foundation for the honour of the Christian Name: Upon which account, his Memory will flourish in the Minds of good Men, till Time is swallowed up in Eternity.

The Second

BOOK

CONTAINING,

The Three next

Centuries :

O R,

Three Hundred Years following.

With such material Matters, as have more especially happened in ENGLAND, From the Reign of King Lucius, to the Reign of King Egbert.

HAVING thus successfully (as I hope) gone thro' the first three Hundred Years; wherein the Primitive Church suffered grievous Persecutions, under the wicked Jews and Heathen Tyrants, and thereby, finished one Book: My next Undertaking is, to shew its flourishing State; which in an uninterrupted Series, continued the other three Centuries, from the time of King *Lucius* to *Gregory*, and so on to the Reign of King *Egbert*; wherein is more particularly

Christi-
an Reli-
gion first
encou-
rag'd un-
der K.
Lucius.
in Eng-
land.

cularly laid down things, that during the ment-
ned space happened in *England* and *Scotland*, &c.
It is agreed by all credible Authors, that the
Christian Religion in this Island, first found Encou-
ragement and Protection under King *Lucius*, a Wi-
and Godly Prince; though it is not denied, that
some degree it had been before professed, but mo-
ly in private, and often under Persecution; yet
not so grievous as in some other places, on which the
Roman Emperors had their Eyes more fixed, as being
nearer to their Residence; and perhaps, because
this Nation held them hard to it a long time, ere
they could gain an absolute Conquest over it. For
it was about 300 Years after the coming of *Julius*
Cesar, ere they pierced so far into the Northern
parts as to discover, whither it was an Island, or
by some Isthmus joyned to the Continent. And though
the Papists value themselves much upon it, that we
received the Christian Religion from *Rome*, *Eleuther-
ius* being Bishop of that See, after which it was
more especially Confirmed by Pope *Gregory*, who
sent hither *Augustin* the Monk, about 600 Years
from the Incarnation of our Saviour; yet many Au-
thors worthy of Credit, contradict them, and say,
we had not the Christian Religion first planted a-
mong us by any Assistance from the See of *Rome*.
For to say no more, it evidently appears, that
King *Lucius* had Established it before he sent *Elu-
thius* and *Medunus*, two Learned Men of his own
to *Eleutherius*; and that they were only sent to him
for farther Instructions. And *Gildas* affirms, that
the *Britains* received the Gospel in the Reign of
Tiberius the Emperor, which was in the Days of the
Apostles. Nay *Tertullian*, among other Nations,
mentions that they Received it from the Apostles.
And *Origen* tells us, the *Britains* were knowing in
the Christian Religion very early. So *Beda* our
Country Man, called for his Sanctity and great In-
tegrity. *Venerable Beda*, says, that in his time, al-

at a thousand Years after Christ, there was a
 distinction in keeping of *Easter*; for here it was
 not after the manner of the Eastern Churches,
 not according to that of *Rome*; which mainly
 differed in this particular, *viz.* the former kept it
 the full Moon, what Day of the Week soever it
 was, and not precisely on the *Sunday*. And *Ni-*
chorus also, *Lib. 21. Cap. 40.* says, that *Simon*
Notus did spread the Gospel of Christ to the
 Western Ocean, and brought it into the Isle of *Br-*
itain. Nay, *Petrus Cluniacensis*, who writ to *St.*
Bernard, affirms, that the *Scots* in his time, did
 celebrate their *Easter*, not according to the *Roman*
 manner, but after the manner of the *Greeks*, &c.
 And as the *Britains* were not under the *Roman See* in
 that time, so neither were they under the *Roman Le-*
gal in the time of Pope *Gregory*; nor would the Bi-
 shops here, admit any Primacy of the Bishop of *Rome*
 to be superiour to them. And the Epistle of *Eleu-*
therius to *K. Lucius*, set down in the fore-going
 book, assumes no such Arrogancy, as a Primacy o-
 ver the Church of *Britain*; but stiles the King,
God's Vicar in his Kingdom, thereby allowing, the
 supreme Power under God, was in him, not in the
 Bishop of *Rome*. But of this, as I think, having
 spoken enough, it not being very material to the
 purpose, that so great a stress should be laid on it as
 the *Romans* would oblige us to think there ought,
 to hinder us from separating from them, who ac-
 count theirs our Mother Church: I now come
 briefly to shew, the difference there is between the
 true Church of *Rome*, and that which was formerly
 extant; which if nothing else could be alledged, is
 sufficient Ground for our reforming and separating
 from them.

If we should grant, that *Eleutherius* might be con-
 vincing, by wholesome advice, to the establishment
 of the Church in *Britain*; yet what weight will this
 carry in it, considering, in his time, it may be pre-
 sumed,

sumed, the *Roman Church* was in its Purity, uncorrupted with Traditions and Errors that have since crept into it. For then, neither was there so much as mention made of any universal Bishop, setting up himself, as the supreme Head of all Churches and above all Councils. This was a matter strange and unknown, till *Boniface* came to the Chair; which was about 400 Years after; neither was there any mention made of the Mass, nor Propitiatory Sacrifice on Hallowed Altars, for the releasing Souls out of Purgatory; no, for since as such a Doctrine the Primitive Church never held it, so it never once so much as heard of it: but these were introduced by Priest-craft, to purge the Ignorant People out of their Wealth, and enrich the Ecclesiasticks at the price of their Labours, who were so easily drawn away to believe whatever they would impose on them.

Primitive Roman Church described.

As for the Ancient Church of *Rome*, it was without Pomp, or vain Ostentation. The Communion was administered at plain Tables, where the Christians lovingly assembled, and Received it according to Christ's Institution; not in any wise thinking of *Transubstantiation*. They indeed made Oblations, and Gifts were offered as well by the Priests as the People, because they held it unkind and uncharitable to come before the Lord empty handed: but this was given to support the Necessities of the Church, and to relieve the wants of such Poor as were of the Congregation, or Ministred unto it; according as *St. Paul* had in his time Exhorted the Christian Congregations to do, as a Laudable Work of Mercy and Charity. It was not spent on lazy drones, in Luxury and Riot; nor went it to cram the Coffers of the Bishop of *Rome*, and enable him to contest with Princes, and raise Wars and unnatural Commotions to devastate or depopulate Cities and Kingdoms, that refused to subject their Wills to his peevish Humours; neither were then any Images

Saints departed, set up in Churches, nor any Re-
 ks or Pilgrimages, then in use or esteem. Priests
 re not then denied Marriage, but a Marriage-
 te in the Clergy was looked on as honest and
 commendable, and so continued Praise-worthy, in
 ost, till the Pope-dom of *Hildebrand*, almost a
 thousand Years after. The Service was then in
 e Vulgar Tongue, as *St. Jerome* testifies; and
 e Sacrament Ministred in both kinds, as well to
 e Laity, as to the Priests, as *St. Cyprian* tells us,
 his Book *de Consecrat. Dist. 2.* At Funerals, the
 iests flocked not together, selling Trentals, nei-
 er were there Virgins appointed for sweeping
 argatory; but only a Funeral Concion was used,
 ith Psalms of Praises and Hymns; also Hallelujas,
 and such like befitting Christian Devotion, in the
 solemnest manner; as is left on Record, by *Nazi-*
zen, Ambrose, and Jerom.

In the Lord's Supper, and at the Baptism of In-
 ants, they differed in the Ceremonies, much from
 what the Church of *Rome* now uses. Both *Austin*
 and *Paulinus*, in *Britain* Baptized in Rivers, and
 not in Hallowed Fonts; as *Fabianus* testifies, *Chap.*
19, and 120. The Order and Religion of the Monks
 and Friars, as now they are, were not so much as
 dreamed of in the Ancient *Roman Church*, for the
 space of almost a thousand Years; nor was Infalli-
 bility attributed to the Bishop of *Rome*: But when
 Errors and Traditions were brought in for Gain,
 being not at all warranted by the Holy Scripture,
 nor practised in the Primitive Churches, this last
 was found necessary for supporting them, otherwise
 they must unavoidably have fallen to the ground.
 But the Popes who introduced them, setting their
 Seals of Infallibility upon them; this gilding over,
 has caused them to be so readily caught at and swal-
 lowed by those less wise than the *Bereans*, whom
St. Paul styles Noble, *because they diligently searched*
the Scriptures, to try the Doctrine that was taught
 them

them by it, as the only touch-stone to discover whether it was true or false. And indeed, to prevent this, the Scriptures are prohibited the Laity that they may wander in the dark Mountains of Ignorance; and though they may stumble perchance at these Errors, yet must not perceive them to be blocks, laid on purpose in their way to stay them in their blind Devotion, till they become like those the Prophet mentions, *That had Eyes, but saw not; Ears, but heard not; Hearts, but could not understand* the truth contained in God's Holy Word.

Now if these are not sufficient Causes (to which indeed I might add many more) for us to separate from them, let them pretend what they will, that we first received the Christian Religion from the *See of Rome*, as it was Antiently; I confess a Man must needs be at a loss to know, what are sufficient Inducements, to Reform from an Erroneous Church keeping still the Ground-work of Faith, and Purity of Doctrine, so far forth as it is warranted by the Word of God: and agreeable to that; held by and practised in the Primitive Churches, when the Stream run clear, and was not thus defiled, as we now find it to be by corrupt and unwarrantable Doctrines of Men, maintain'd by Fire and Sword where they have the power in their hands: and indeed, only spreads as *Mahomet* the *Impostures* false Religion does; that is, no farther than it is carried and upheld by force and Arms. Having spoken sufficiently as to these particulars, it is time I return again to King *Lucius*, the first *British* Christian Prince, and indeed, the first in the World that we read of, that publickly Asserted and Established the Christian Religion in a National Church.

*Piety of
Lucius.*

I have, in the foregoing Book, told you, that he changed the Arch Flammins, and subordinate Flammins into so many Arch-Bishopricks, and Bishopricks; and that the Idol Temples were dedicated to the Service of the true Religion. It remains to

ate further, that when he had compleated this
 rious Work, he Reigned prosperously, the
 blessing of God every were following him, and ren-
 dering him successful in all his undertakings; mul-
 titudes of Christians flocking hither out of other
 Nations, as to a Sanctuary, from Persecution;
 who were encouraged and allowed Maintenance,
 according to their degrees and deserts. But since
 the best of Kings are mortal as well as other Men,
Lucius, after a prosperous Reign, to the un-
 speakable grief of the Nation, Dyed, and was ho-
 nourably Buried at *Gloucester*, 17 Years after his
 Baptism; leaving no Issue, as Heir of his Vir-
 tues to succeed him in the Throne: After which,
 the Barons and Nobles could not accord among
 themselves, as to the Succession of the Crown; which
 the *Romans* perceiving, siezed it into their
 hands; whereupon insued innumerable Miseries to
 the Nation: For sometimes the Idolatrous *Romans*,
 and sometimes the *Britains* Reigned, as Violence
 and Victory dealt the Lot amongst them, and one
 was Murthered another, till in the end, the *Pagan*
 Saxons being called in, they deprived them both of
 the Dominion of *Britain*.

His
 Death.

There go, as currant in other Countries, many *Romish*
 monkish Stories of this good King: That leaving *Stories*
 his Kingdom when he had received Baptism, he in *related of*
 poor Habit Preached in *France, Angustia, Suevia,* *him.*
Germany, and other Countries, and at length, was
 constituted Rector of the Church of *Curace*, and
 offered Martyrdom for the profession of his Faith
 in Christ: but these are rejected as Fables, both by
 our own, and other Historians; who affirm, he
 lived in peace and tranquility in *Britain*, and was
 buried as afore-mentioned, in the Year of our Lord
 187. and reckon his Conversion to be in the
 Year 187. some of them holding he Reigned, in all,
 the space of *Seventy and Seven Years*; a longer
 Reign than any King ever enjoyed after him.



Having

Having thus far proceeded, it will now be requisite, that I prosecute the History; and briefly touch on the State of the Land, between the time of King *Lucius*, and the entring of the *Saxons*, who were the Kings thereof, and in what order they succeeded, or rather invaded one another.

Britain
falls into
the hands
of the
Romans.

After the Death of *Lucius*, *Severus* the Roman Emperor laid sole Claim to the Kingdom, who brought in again the Idolatrous Worship. Yet I do not find but the *Britains* were tolerated; especially in Private, and the Christian Religion, though in less Latitude, continued to be professed and practised. To him succeeded *Bassianus* a Roman; next *Cerausus* a Britain; then *Alectus* a Roman; after him, *Asclepiodotus* a Britain; next *Coilus* a Britain; then *Constantius* a Roman; who Married *Helena*, Daughter to King *Coilus*, on whom he begat *Constantine* the great, the first Christian Emperor, of whom I have already spoken at large; only I shall add, that this *Helena* is said, first to build the Walls of *London*, and then of *Colchester* her Father's chief Seat, about the Year of our Lord 305. Afterwards going to *Jerusalem*, found the Cross, whereon our Saviour suffered, in a Vault wherein the *Jews* had concealed it; upon which she built many Churches, and gave largely to the Maintenance of such as officiated in the Ministry. *Constantine* succeeding his Father, was succeeded by *Octavius*; and to him succeeded *Maximinianus* a Roman Born, but his Mother a Britain. After him *Gratian*; then *Constantine*, a Britain by his Mothers side; and so successively *Constance* a Roman; *Vortigern* a Britain, who was deposed by siding with the *Saxons*, and his Son *Vortimer* Advanced; but he was Poisoned by his Step-mother *Rowena*, Daughter to *Hengist*, a Saxon Prince; and *Vortigern*, upon his Promise to defend his Country to the utmost against the Invading *Saxons*, was destroyed; but failing herein, he by the means of

Wife enclining to the *Saxons*, was, together with
er, overwhelmed with Wild-fire, and burnt to
death in a Castle whither he had retired. The *Saxons*
by this means, getting strong footing, (as *Saxons*
also by the frequent coming of more Forces) kept out *gain*
the *Romans*, subdued the greatest part of the *Britain*
ains; and then divided the Country thus gained, *ground*
into Seven Divisions, or petty Kingdoms; called, *in Bri-*
by long Custom, the *Heptarchy* of the *Saxons*; of *tains*
which I shall have occasion hereafter to speak more
particularly; and at present, think it proper to
insert what memorable occurred, during the strug-
gling for Sovereignty, ere the *Saxons* got possession,
divided the Spoil, and brought in with them
their Idolatrous Worship, to pollute the Christian
churches.

In those Days, this Land (as it still continues *Fertility*
through Divine Providence) was such a Store-house *of Bris-*
and Granary to the *Roman* Empire, that when *tain:*
they lost it, through Dissentions among themselves,
and Revolts of their nighest Conquests, they inge-
nouly confessed, they lost the fairest Jewel in the
Imperial Diadem: and indeed, one main occasion
of its loss was, by draining it of the Flower of all
the Youth, to serve them in their Wars abroad;
some Authors making mention of a Hundred Thou-
sand at once sent into *France*; as also, Eleven
thousand Virgins to People the wasted Country of
Armorica, or *Britanie*: The chief of whom was *Exhalt.*
Red of
its Youth
of both
Sexes by
the Ro-
mans.
Insulted
by the
Scots &
Picts.
The chief of whom was *Exhalt.*
the Daughter of *Dionets*, a *British* Prince.
Many of which perished in the Sea by Ship-wrack;
and those that were driven on shore, refusing to sub-
mit to the Lust of the *Barbarians*, were by them
sacrificed; others of them were taken by Pirates;
that few arrived safe at *Armorica*; by which
means the *Britains* being much weakened the *Picts*
and *Scots* insulted over them; Burning and Rava-
ging the Country with almost incredible Slaugh-
ter; and the *Romans*, to whom in their Extremity,
they

Forc'd to
call in the
Saxons.

Guetelinus,
Arch Bp.
of London begs
aid of
Constantine.

Saxons
by Treachery be-
come
Masters
of Britain.

The Idols
they Wor-
shipped.

they sent mournful Epistles to demand Succour, not being at leasure to assist them any more, they were constrained to call in the Saxons; who in the end made a prey of them, proving greater Enemies than the others had been.

In this great Distress of his Country, Guetelinus Arch-Bishop of London, secretly conveyed himself into *Armorica*, or *Little Britain*, in *France*, and brought with him, *Constantine* the King's Brother, attended by many Valiant Men; who fighting courageously, rescued the Country out of the hands of the Infidels. This *Constantine* was Father to *Constantine Aurelius Ambrosius*, and *Uter*, who afterward Reigned Kings in *Britain*; and by this happy Victory Religion was restored, and flourished all the Reign of the before named *Constantine*, and during the Life of the good Arch-Bishop. But *Constantine* Succeeding his Father *Constantine*, was Murthered by *Vortigern*: who calling in the Saxons treacherously subdu'd the *Britains*, by Murthering the chief Nobility at an appointed Treaty for Peace going thereto privately Armed, and upon the watch Word given falling upon them. Thus they settled themselves in *Britain*, bringing in a great number of Idols, with which they prophaned the Christian Churches. The principal of these Idols and to whom mostly they paid their Devotions were; (1.) The Image of the *Sun*, in the form of a half naked Man, with Rays about his Head, holding in his two Hands, a wheel of circling Fire. (2.) An Image representing the *Moon*; having the Face of a Woman, a Hood with Ears to it, and a short Coat like a Man; holding the Moon encreasing before her Breast. (3.) *Tiwis*, the Image of a Man in regal Garment, standing on a Pedestal, with a Scepter in his Hand, representing one of that Name, the first and chiefest Man among the *Germans* that gave them Laws. (4.) *Woden*; An Image representing a King Crowned, with a Sword in one hand, and

Shield in the other; figuring one of their Victorious Princes of that Name. (5.) *Thor*; an Image representing a King Crowned, sitting in a Regal Chair; having also been a great Man amongst them. (6.) *Friga*; an Image representing a Woman, Armed with a Sword in one hand, and a Bow in the other, in Memory of *Woden's* Queen. (7.) *Scater*; an Image representing an Old Man, in close girt Garments, holding a Basket of Fruit in one hand, and a Wheel in the other; imitating him that first taught them *Agriculture*: And to this, in order, they dedicated the Seven Days of the Week. They also Adored two other Images, called Death and Hell; and to these they generally offered humane sacrifice.

As for these *Saxons*, they being *Frits*, *Angles*, *Jutes*, *Suevians*, and others the strongest Nations of Germany, agreed so well among themselves till they were Established, as to divide the whole Kingdom into Seven petty Monarchies, called the *Saxon* Heptarchy; as that of *Kent*, the *West Saxon*, *South Saxons*, *East Saxons*, *Northumbrians*, *East Angles*, and *Mercians*. The *Britains*, who esteem'd themselves peculiar Friends, for their Courage in rescuing their Country from a dangerous Enemy, too soon found by their Tyranny and Oppression, that they had far the worse Enemies now amongst them. Since it appears, that no sooner had these *Pagan Saxons* got sure footing in *Britain*, but contrary to their promise, and the expectations of the *Britains*, they began so miserably to waste, pillage and destroy; slaughtering Men, Women and Children, that Innocent Blood flowed in all the Cities and principal Towns into which they had entered. They also demolished the Churches, and conceiving an inveterate hatred against the Clergy, they were slaughtered where ever they could be found; burning the books of the Holy Scripture, and leaving no cruelty un-
 G 3 un-

Britain
by them
divided
into seven
King-
doms.

Their
Cruelty
and Op-
pression.

under *Dioclesian*, this proved the sharpest that ever happened in *Britain*; begining about the Year of our Lord 462. when, too late, King *Vortigern* (who a little before had been taken in Battle by them, and was now released, upon his surrendering his chiefeſt Cities into their hands) ſeeing the miſerable deſtroy of his Country; yet deſtitute of power to oppoſe or remedy it, fled into the Mountains of *Wales*.

Britains
invite a-
ver Aug.
Ambro-
fius and
Uter
Pendra-
gon.

Upon the King's flight, the *Britains* being left in great diſtreſs, ſent privately to *Aurelius Ambroſius* and *Uter Pendragon*, Princes of *Armorica* or *Britany*, Brothers to *Conſtans*, whom *Vortigern* had treacherouſly Murthered; imploring their Aid (by laying open their Sufferings at large) to reſcue their bleeding Country from the Tyranny and Oppreſſion of the *Saxons*; which they ſo far compaſſionated, being themſelves ſprung from the Race of the *Britains* by the Mothers ſide, though their Father was a *Roman*, that they waſted over with a conſiderable Army; and *Aurelius*, immediately upon his Landing, was Crowned King by thoſe that had ſent for him. Then leading his Army into the Field, (after *Vortigern* was overwhelmed with Wild-fire, and burnt, for Murthering *Conſtans*, and betraying his Country to a mercileſs Enemy) he gave Battle to the *Saxons* wherein, after a bloody Encounter, Victory declared on his ſide, and *Hengiſt* (as our Ancient Chronologers write) was taken in the Field; and the Inſtigat[i]on of *Gildas* the Biſhop of *Glouceſter* Beheaded. [His Brother *Horſus* being ſlain before in the Wars againſt *Vortimer*; and the Town where he fell, was then called *Horſus's Town*, or *Tomb* now *Horſhead*.] As to *Hengiſt's* being beheaded it does not agree with our Modern Hiſtorians; who ſay, he ſettled his Kingdom in *Kent*, and Reigned there ſome Years after this Battle was fought. However, by this ſucceſſful Victory, and ſome of

who gain
a ſignal
Victory o-
ver the
Saxons.

Hengiſt
& Hor-
ſus ſlain.

hers that followed; a great part of *Britain* was recovered; in which the Churches were Rebuilt, and Religion Established. This happiness continued not long, ere *Aurelius* was craftly poisoned, as is said, by *Piscentius*, Son of *Vortegern*; who in the disguise of a Physician, administered Physick to him, and was succeeded by his Brother *Uter*, Sir-named *Pendragon*, about the Year of our Lord 497. who in a Battle, took *Osta* and *Cossa*, two *Saxon* Princes, and brought them Prisoners to *London*: but making their escape, they fled to *Germany*, and their levying a great power, returned; and with them, such numbers of the *Pagan Saxons*, who had heard of the fruitfulness of the Country, and its pleasant Situation, that the *Britains* neither under *Uter*, nor *Arthur*, who succeeded him, and of whom so many incredible Stories are told in Monkish Histories, were long able to make good their ground against them. And the *British* Princes that succeeded them, fainting under these continual fatigues, the Land fell to the possession of these invading *Pagan Saxons*, about the Year of our Lord 568. The remaining *Britains* retiring into the Mountains of *Cambria*, or *Wales*; enduring much Hardship, and many other Miseries among those craggy Rocks and Cliffs, and whither the *Saxons* concluded it not worth their while to pursue them.

Aurelius
us poisoned.

Succeeded
 by
Uter.

Saxons
sole masters
 of
Britain.

The Reason why God suffered this Persecution, is noted by *Gildas*, who lived in those Days, to proceed from the irregular Living, and Wickedness of the *Britains*: For, says he, They fell not into one single Vice, but even into all manner of Wickedness; but especially into that which is the overthrow of well-govern'd States, viz. the hatred of Truth, the Love of Lyes; embracing Evil instead of Good; more regarding Vice than Vertue, and receiving the Devil instead of an Angel of Light: Not only the Commonalty are guilty of this, but the Congregation of the Lord, and their Bishops and Teachers, without any

Vice of
 the People,
 Ruin
 of *Britain*.

difference. And therefore (continues he) it is no wonder that such People, so degenerated from all good, should lose that Country which they had in so prophane a manner defiled: Insomuch, that it may be said, the Land spued them out as it did the Canaanites.

I go not about in a Book of this nature, to give a particular of the Reigns of the petty Saxon Kings, which more properly belongs to a Chronicle; but rather of such things as happened relating to Religion, and what befel the Church, and the Well-fare or Oppression of the Christians by Tyranny and Persecution, for the profession of their Faith.

There are noted then to have been in Britain, these following Persecutions, as it were in the Infancy, or primitive Times of Christianity, amongst the People then Inhabiting this Island, viz.

The several Persecutions in Britain.

(1.) That under *Dioclesian* already mentioned, in which *Alban*, *Julius*, *Aron*, and innumerable besides, suffered Martyrdom for the Name of Christ.

(2.) The Persecution of such as professed the Christian Faith under *Gnauius*, and *Melga*; the one Captain of the *Huns*, and the other of the *Picts*. For these making an Inroad into Britain, and perceiving it destitute of Strength, because the *Romans* had drained it of War-like Men, and Provisions to recruit and supply their Armies abroad, made miserable Havock; spoiling and laying waste the Churches, and destroying those that professed the Name of Christ, without Mercy; sparing neither Grey Hairs, nor tender Infancy from cruel Slaughter.

(3.) The Persecution before-mentioned under the *Pagan Saxons*.

(4.) The miserable Slaughter made of all Religious Persons; particularly by *Grumundus*, a *Pagan* King of the *Africans*; who Landing here, as he was roving in search of Adventures, and joyning

with

In the Saxons, stirred up a grievous Persecution
 against the Christians: Insomuch, that *Theonius* Bi-
 shop of *London*, and *Theodosius* Bishop of *York*,
 with the rest of the People that could escape the
 cruel Hands of the Persecutors, fled, some into
Wales, and others to the Mountains of *Wales*,
 after those that had gone before them, about the
 year of our Lord, 550. and this Persecution con-
 tinued to rage more or less, to the time of *Ethelbert*
 King of *Kent*, Anno 589. As for the Persecution
 in this Land (which the Saxons named *England*, from
 the East *Angles*, or *Angelon*, a place then so named
 in *Germany*) suffered under the Pagan Danes, and
 the *Norwegians*: I shall relate it in its proper place;
 together with others that fell nearer to the Age we
 live in; and in the mean time consider reviving
 Christianity, as it grew up and flourished under the
 Saxon Princes; who being once converted to the
 Faith, proved the devoutest, for the most part,
 of all others, especially in those times; for they
 endowed the Churches very liberally; some became
 monks, others went on Pilgrimages, and some a-
 gain, by their own pious Examples, kept up their
 subjects to a strict Devotion and Reverence of
 God's Holy Name. But to proceed;

England
 so named
 by the
 Saxons.

In the Reign of *Ethelbert*, the Fifth Saxon King
 of *Kent*, the Faith of Christ was first received of
 the Saxons, or English Men, by the Care and Father-
 ly Indulgence of *Gregory* Bishop of *Rome*; which
 in an ancient History, I find to be regularly Re-
 corded thus.

Gregory
 Bishop of
 Rome,
 introdu-
 ces the
 Christian
 Faith in
 Britain.

When *Pelagius* was Bishop of *Rome*, *Gregory* seeing
 several Youths standing in the Market-place of that
 City, very fair and beautiful, which were brought
 from this Island to be sold, demanded of what
 Country they were; and being inform'd they came
 from *Britain*, or *England*, out of a Province then
 called *Deira*, and that they were Heathens gene-
 rally in that Country, he lamented their miserable
 State;

State; saying, *Ah! what pity is it, but that these Persecutors should be delivered De ira Dei, from the Anger of God.* And he succeeding *Pelagius* in the Roman See, and remembring what he had seen and heard, he sent hither *Austin* the Monk, with about other Preachers, sending Letters to certain Bishops who lived now retired for fear of the Persecution, to be aiding to them in all things that might conduce to the propagation of the Gospel; one of which I take Englished in the following Words.

*Gregory, the Servant of God's Servants, to his Servants of the Lord. For as much as it is better to take good things in hand, than when after they be begun, to think to revolt back from the same again, therefore you may not, nor cannot, dear Children, with all fervent study and labour, must needs go forward in that good Business, which by the help of God you have well begun; neither let the Labour of your Journey, nor the slanderous Tongues of Men deter you, but that with all fervency, you proceed and accomplish the thing which the Lord hath ordained you to take in hand; knowing, that your great travail shall be rewarded with great Glory hereafter. Therefore as we send *Austin* to you again, whom also we have ordained to be your Governour, so do you humbly obey him in all things, knowing it shall be profitable for your Souls, whatsoever at his Admonition you shall do. God Almighty of his Grace defend you, and grant me to see in the Eternal Country, the fruit of your Labour; that although I cannot Labour as I would do with you, yet I may be found partaker of your Tribulation; for that my will is good to Labour with you in the same Fellowship together. The Lord God keep you safe, most dear and beloved Children,*

Dated the Tenth before the Calends of August, in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord *Maurice*, most Virtuous Emperor, the Fourteenth of his Empire.

I should have told you, that *Austin* and his
 companions entring on this Undertaking, were,
 first seized with a Panick Fear, being unwilling
 venture their Persons among a cruel People
 (they heard them in other Countries to be) who
 shed so much Christian Blood; therefore, for
 their better Encouragement, this Epistle seems to
 have been written; and being emboldened by it,
 they set forward, and Landed at the Isle of *Tha-*
in Kent. Now *Ethelbert*, who had Married a
 Christian Lady out of *France*, being at his Palace
 call'd *Richbourg*, some what Eastward from *Canter-*
bury, came a few Days after their Landing, to the
 place where *Austin* resided to Commune with him,
 and inform himself better of the true Cause of his
 coming from so far a Country, than a bare Ru-
 bour could satisfie him.

Against the King's Approach, *Austin* had (as
 his Historian tells us) Erected a Banner with the
 crucifix, and proceeded to Preach to him out of
 the Word of God; urging the Verity of it, and
 the great Benefit to be received by it: To which
 the King replied, That his words carried much of
 reason in them; but (it being altogether new to him)
 he could not so suddainly fly from a Religion he
 had been Educated in, and Confirmed by the Law
 of his Country: Yet since they came so far on this
 account, they should not be Molested by him or
 any of his; but on the contrary provided with
 such Necessaries as were convenient for their Sub-
 stance; and continue under his Protection, with
 free Licence to Preach for the Instruction of his
 subjects, in order to instruct as many as they could
 in the knowledge of their Religion, and the Faith
 they professed.

This gracious Encouragement banished their
 fears, and emboldened them to go in procession to
Canterbury, then called *Dorobernia*, singing Halle-
 lujahs, and the Letany used at *Rome* in those
 Days,

Austin,
Grego-
ry's Le-
gate,
fearful of
going in-
to Bri-
tain,

But is
well re-
ceiv'd by
Ethel-
bert.

Days, beginning thus; *We beseech thee O Lord, thy Fury and Anger may cease from this City, from thy Holy House, Hallelujah, &c.* Being the same used in Rome when the Plague raged there. And entering the Gates, they had, by the King's express Command, a place of Residence appointed them; where they continued Preaching to and Baptizing such as they could Convert to the Faith, in the East side of the City, in the Church of St. *Martin*; whither *Ethelbert's* Queen, who was a Christian, usually resorted to hear the Word of God, as in her Marriage Contract it was agreed so that in a little time, the King (seeing their innocent and harmless manner of Living, and understanding they Taught, as Doctrine, nothing but what was beneficial to a good Life, and agreeable to humane Society, for the well flourishing of his Kingdom) embraced the Christian Religion, hearing *Austin* gladly, and admonished his Subjects to follow his Example, by many Arguments, and weighty Perswasions: In so much, that in a little time, they were for the greater part brought over to become Christians.

Austin
made a
Bishop by
Ethelbert.

This good beginning (through the Favour and Mercy of God) being made in England, King *Ethelbert*, to encourage *Austin* and his Followers in the propagation of the Faith, Established him in his Bishop's See, at *Christ's-Church*, in the aforementioned City; building also, for the better Accommodation of his Monks, the Abby of St. *Peter and Paul*, on the East side, where *Austin*, and all the Kings of Kent were Buried; from whom to this day, the place is called St. *Austin's*: He being Consecrated Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, by the French Bishop *Arelatensis*, called *Etherius*; which Consecration *Gregory* approved by *Lawrence*, whom *Austin* had sent to Rome to give him Account of his proceedings. This Messenger likewise brought him Instructions how he should behave

him

self in the Administration of his Function; particularly relating to those Questions he desired to be resolved in.

β. How he ought to behave himself towards Clerks, and the disposal of the Oblations that were offered on the Altar by the Faithful?

γ. Concerning the Marriage of Clerks, who should not contain themselves within the Bounds of Celibacy without it?

δ. By what Rule he should go, there being one *Faith*, and yet in Ceremonies the Churches were divers; as in particular, the Mass differed in manner, according to the Custom of the *French* Church, from that at *Rome*?

ε. What Punishment was to be inflicted on such as pilfered and stole Goods out of the Church?

ς. Whither two Brethren might not Marry two Sisters, being far off from any kind of Kinship as to consanguinity?

ζ. What degrees of Kindred might Marry, whether it was lawful to Marry with a Step-mother, and her Kindred.?

η. Whether such as were joined in a pollute and unlawful Marriage, might not be separated, and refused to be admitted to the Holy Communion.

θ. In what manner he should deal with the Bishops of *France* and *Britain*?

ι. How long after its Birth a Child might continue unbaptized? When a Woman was to be Churched? And how long after Delivery Men must abstain from the use of the Marriage-bed? At what time after, a Woman might enter the Church, and receive Holy Communion? And whether, after a Man had carnal knowledge of his Wife, he might not be purified by Water, before he enter the Church to partake of the Holy Mystery? All which things he inquired of the Bishop, must be laid open to the Ignorant People, the better to gain them for profelytes.

To

To these the Bishop Answered modestly, as came a good Prelate, giving his Reasons for allowing the greater part, and submitting things indifferent to the custom of the Country, and the inclinations of the People; that by removing all Obstacles where matters were not contrary to the Article of Faith and good Manners, so great a work as the propagation of the Gospel, which by the blessing of God, had already found such Acceptance might not be hindered, not thinking it reasonable as did many of the Bishops that succeeded him out of Pride and Vain-Glory, to hazard all the points of Nicety, and matters indifferent, on which Religion it self laid no stress.

Other Coadjutors
sent over
by Gregory.

Austin
made
Primate
of Eng-
land.

This good Foundation being laid, Gregory sent more Coadjutors; as *Melitus*, *Justus*, *Paulinus* and *Ruffinus*, with instructions at large, and other things useful and ornamental for the Church; together with his Letters to *Austin*; wherein he settled an order between the two Metropolitan Sees, the one to be at *London*, and the other at *York*: He granted however to him during his Life, the precedency of the Archiepiscopal Sees, and Primacy of all *England*; but upon his decease, to return to the two afore-mentioned Sees. Other Letters he directed to *Melitus*, and *K. Ethelbert*; the first, containing his Opinion what was to be done with the Idolatrous Temples and *Fanes*, as also the Sacrifices of Oxen which was, that the Temples should not be demolished, but converted into Christian Churches and that their Sacrificing, to prevent any disorder might be laid aside by degrees, and not on a sudden. In the second, which was to the King, after Prayers to God, he commendeth the goodness of the King, by whom it pleased God to work such a felicity to the People; exhorting him to persevere and continue in the Godly profession of the Christian Faith, in suppressing the Works of Idolatry, and in governing the People after the Godly

Example

ample of the Emperor *Constantine* the Great: tly, comforting him with the promise of e to come; adding to all this good Council, beautifie his Soul with Holiness against the hour of ath, that he might reign with Christ in Life Eter-

And now *Austin* was so elevated and puffed up h his unexpected success, that having received pall from *Gregory*, and of a Monk become an ch-Bishop, he grew to so great a height of Pride r Arrôgancy, that upon complaint made, the od Bishop of *Rome* found himself constrain'd to d him an Epistle, wherein he admonished him to ore moderate temper, and not to be proud or puffed for the Miracles wrought of God by him, in Con- eing the People of England, but rather to fear and mble, least so much as he was puffed up by the out- rd work of Miracles, so much he should fall inwardly ough the vain Glory of his Heart, &c.

And thus, through God's great Mercy, Chri- anity having again got footing in this Island, it read with a wonderful swiftness. *Melitus*, who s principally sent to the East Saxons in the Pro- ce of *Essex*, &c. prevailed with *Sigebert* the King ereof, to receive the Christian Religion, and s ordained Bishop of *London*.

This *Sigebert*, together with his Uncle *Ethel-* t, first built the Church and Minster of *St. Paul's*, nstituting it the before-named Bishop's See; who gether with his Collegues, assembling at a place erward called *Austin's Oke*, gave charge (or as ne say, *Austin* did it) That the Bishops should each the Word of God with him to the *English* en; and also that they should, among themselves, reform certain Rights and Customs in the Church; d particularly for keeping *Easter*; Baptizing af- the manner of the Church of *Rome*, and the like. t to these, the *Scots* and *British* Bishops would not ord; refusing to renounce the Custom which had so

Melitus
prevails
with
King *Si-*
gebert to
receive
the Faith.

Sigebert
Builds
St. Pauls.

so long continued among them, unless it was altered and established in a general Synod: Which gave occasion to a story, That *Austin* shewed a Miracle to confirm himself in the right, by restoring a Blind Man to Sight, which none of them could; and thereupon a Synod was called, when the *Bishops* consulting a certain Wise Man, how they ought to manage this affair, whether to receive the Opinion of *Austin*, or reject it; he said, *If he be the Servant of God, agree unto him*: Whereupon they demanded, how they should be satisfied he was so. To this he replied, *If he be a Servant of God, he will be of a meek and humble heart, appearing lowly in his own eyes; and to prove him (you being the greater number) mark if at your coming he rise up and courteously receive you, then he is a good Man; but if he neglect and disregard you, you ought to despise him as a proud Man, not following the steps of Christ, whose Religion he professeth*. This advice they took, and found *Austin* proud as they suspected, for (relying upon the Grandeur of his Primacy in this Realm) he kept his Seat, and never so much as offered to meet and salute them; which, after some hot Disputes, caused them to depart, and leave him only accompanied with his own Retinue, breathing Threatnings after them, *That if they would not take peace with their Brethren, they should have war with their Enemies; and if they disdained to preach with them to the English Men in that way of Life, they should not fail to suffer at the hands their deserved Death*; which not long after fell out, by the means of *Ethelfred K. of Northumberland*; who being a Pagan, made fierce War on the Britains that Inhabited Wales and the Borders, besieging Chester, over-coming *Broknel*, the Count, with great slaughter, putting to the Sword at the same time many Hundred Monks of Chester and *Bangor*, whom he understood had prayed for the Success of his Enemy, saying, *Though they be Weaponless, they had however fought against him*.

*Austin's
great
Pride.*

Prayers. Some Authors aver, that Eleven hundred Monks were slain at this time, and that *Austin* under hand had enabled the *Northumbrian* King, with a Summ of Gold and Silver, to carry this War against the *Britains*, that his words being thus verified, might be taken for a Prophecy, and make the British Bishops stand more in awe of him than they had done. But soon after *Ethelfred* was slain by *Edwin* a Christian Saxon Prince, who succeeded him.

Austin, as Authors inform us, having on a Christ-day Baptized Ten Thousand Saxons, or Angles, in the River *Swale* near York, and finding by many symptoms the date of his Life very near expiring, ordained *Lawrence* his Successor in the See of *robernia*, or *Canterbury*; and about this time, or soon after, Dyed *Gregory* Bishop of Rome, of whom it is said, he was the basest of all his Predecessors, and the worst of all those Bishops that succeeded him in that See. Also *David* Bishop of *Kaerleon*, now *Carlisle*, translated that See to *Menevia*, and then was succeeded by *David* of *Wales*, Dyed much about this time; so that *Austin* sat about Fifteen Years in the See of *Canterbury*, and then Dyed, not greatly lamented, by reason of his intolerable Pride.

To *Gregory* Succeeded *Sabinus*, who held not the Episcopal Chair above Two Years, doing little worthy Note, ere he was Succeeded by *Boniface* the third, who held it but One Year; yet in that short time, committed many Disorders in the Church; by flattering *Phocas*, and applauding his wicked action in Murthering *Mauritius*, together with his wife and Children, to make way for himself to the Empire, he procured a grant, That himself and his Successors in the See of Rome, should have the pre-eminence over all other Bishops, and that their Churches should have an immediate dependency on the Roman See, as the universal head of all the Churches of Christendom, *Boniface* alledging this for a Reason, That *St. Peter* left to his Successors, the

Eleven hundred Monks slain by

Austin Baptizes 10000 Saxons,

His Death

See of Rome made universal Bishops Head.

Bishops of Rome, the Keys of Binding and Loosing, &c. and on this sandy Foundation they have built their Claim ever since. This was taken up much about the time, or but a little after *Mahomet* the Imposture broach'd his erroneous Tenents. However *Phocas's* Treason and Murther was not long unrevenge'd; for being taken by *Heracleus*, who succeeded him, he caused his Hands and Feet to be cut off, and his Body to be cast into the Sea.

Edwin
First
Christian
King of
North-
umbria.
St. Pe-
ter's
West-
minster
Built.

During these Transactions, the Christian Religion very much encreased. The *Northumbrians* now (under *Edwin* their first Christian King) generally embracing the Faith in Christ, and many stately Churches were Erected and Dedicated to the Service of God; particularly that of *St. Peter's* in *Westminster*, by the Encouragement of *Ethelbert* who gave largely himself to that stately Building and encouraged others to do the like, after which ensued Peace, and great Plenty, as a blessing for the Pious and Charitable Undertakings of the Christian Saxons, in promoting the Well-fare of the Church of Christ; also the Kingdom was so generally free from all Villainy, that the Northern Parts, before infested with Thieves and Murderers, was so clear of them, that a Woman laden with Gold, might have passed from Sea to Sea without no one offering the least Violence to her. But this lasted not long; for *Edwin* and his Son *Offricus* being slain, in a Battle fought between them and *Cadwallo*, or *Cadwallo* King of the *Britains*, joined with *Penda* King of *Mercia*, a Pagan-Saxon Prince, they miserably wasted the Country, sparing neither Age nor Sex, not so much as distinguishing Pagan from Christian; so that the Province of *Northumberland* was destitute of a Bishop for the space of 30 Years; for *Paulinus* the Bishop, perceiving the Desolation of that Country, fled into *Kent*, where *Edelburga* *Edwin's* Queen, and *Enffleda* her Daughter *James* his Deacon staying behind, Baptizing and Preaching as advantage gave him opportunity.

Cadwal-
lo and
Penda
waste the
Country.

During the former Progress of Religion, I find that *Erpenwald* King of the East *Angles*, by the means of *Edwin* the *Northumbrian* King, was brought over to the Christian Faith, and Erected Churches in his Dominions, dedicating them to the Service of God. *Oswald* claiming the *Northumbrian* Kingdom as his Right, raised an Army, and Marched against *Cedwallo* and *Penda*: when in the Field, he made his Prayers to God, and humbly besought Him for Help to withstand his Enemies for the Salvation of his People; after which, he joined Battle at a place called *Densbury*, some say *Heavenfield*, where he vanquished his Enemies, tho' far exceeding him in number, slaying the greater part of them, and Reigned over the *Britains* and his own Dominion 22 Years, leaving behind him (as *Gaufridus* says) a Son Named *Cadwallador*, who was the last King of the *Britains*; those that followed being only stiled Princes of *Wales*. Thus the Christian Religion was again restored, where for a long time it had been extinct. This Prince is much commended by Authors, for his fervent Zeal in Religion, and his Pity towards the Poor, which together with his other great Virtues, raised him to such a pitch of Glory, that after his Death he was Canonized as a Saint.

Erpenwald receives the Faith.

It is Recorded of this *Oswald*, that being banished into *Scotland*, he there learned that Language; after when King, he sent for a Bishop called *Aidanus*, a very Learned Man; who, Preaching in *Scotch* to the People, the King Interpreted his Words, and Expounded to them the Scriptures. Also hearing some poor People crying in the Streets, miserably oppressed with Penury, he sent the Victuals from his own Table, to supply their Wants, and breaking a Silver Plate that stood before him, divided it amongst them.

Oswald for his great Virtues Canonized.

The West Saxons remained, especially many of them, as yet Unconverted: *Berinus*, sent into *Brit*

Walfer
First
Christian
King of
Mercia

tain by *Honorius* Bishop of *Rome*, was cast by Ship-wreck where *Kingols* and his Brother *Quiacelinus* Reigned; who were Converted by his Preaching, and became Christians, together with most of their Subjects, being before Rude and very Barbarous. *Penda*, King of the *Mercians*, after a long Tyranny and Cruelty exerted, being slain in Battle, by *Oswy* Brother to *Oswald*, that large part of *England* which the *Mercian* Kingdom extended it self in, soon after received the Christian Faith; of which *Walfer* is accounted the first Christian King; who, upon Marrying *Ermenilda*, Daughter to *Ercombert* King of *Kent*, was, through her Perswasions, Baptized, and caused his Subjects to follow his Example.

At this time a great Dispute arising between the *British* Bishops, with whom the *Scottish* Bishops sided, and the *Romish* Bishops, the Controversie grew warm between them, as to the particular time of celebrating *Easter*; many Learned Arguments pro & contra were used; and King *Oswy* being present at the Debate, gave it for the *Roman* Bishops, concluding his Sentence, *That since the Bishops of Rome claimed Succession from St. Peter, who was the Door-keeper of Heaven, he would not gain-say him; but that as he was able, he would obey his Orders in every point, lest when he came to the Gates of Heaven, St. Peter should shut them against him: And upon this simple Reason, the Multitude also immediately consented; which so much displeased Coleman the Scot, who was then Arch-bishop of York, and the chief Maintainer of the Argument against the Roman Bishops, that taking the Bones of Aidanus with him, he left the Kingdom in great distaste.*

After whom *Wilfrid* was Arch-Bishop of *York*; but being at variance with *Theodorus* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, he was by his means displaced, and *Cedda* promoted to that See; upon which, *Wilfrid* went to *Rome* with grievous Complaints, but *Theo-*

dorns by his Wealth, had such Proctors there, that the other finding it in vain to sue longer, returned, and Landing amongst the South Saxons, and building an Abby in *Silescie*, he Preached amongst them Fifteen Years, urging it to *Ethelwold* their King, that he was bound in honour and conscience to embrace Christian Religion, since upon that condition he had received the *Ile of Wight* of King *Volfer*; which so wrought upon him, that he resolv'd to keep his Promise, and so was Baptized by *Berinus*; and *Volfer* being his God-father, Married his Daughter the same Day.

Ethelwold becomes a Christian.

Upon this, *Wilfrid* being tolerated by King *Ethelwold*, Preached to the South Saxons, who willingly embraced the Christian Religion as the other Saxons had done; and at the time of Baptizing, abundance of Rain fell, which being wanting for three Years, had caused a great Dearth in those parts, which now ceased; and the Country became fruitful, which before had been the death of many thousands; a great number of whom, to prevent lingering Misery, had thrown themselves from the Rocks into the Sea. *Wilfrid* also taught them to make Nets for taking of Fish, which mainly supplied their Wants. *Alfrid* hearing this, who reigned in *Northumberland*, after the Death of *Alfrid*, slain in the Streights of *Scotland*, restored *Wilfrid* to the Arch-Bishoprick of *York*. And now the Christian Religion gloriously spread it self in parts of *Britain*: *Theodorus* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, the better to Establish it, by the Authority of the Synod held at *Hatfield*, divided the Province of *Mercia* into five Bishopricks, placing the Bishops Sees at *Chester*, *Worcester*, *Litchfield*, *Canterbury*, and *Dorchester*. Thus the Church had peace during the Heptarchy of the Saxons, and under several of their sole Monarchs; till the Danes Invaded, and in a barbarous manner wasted the Country, as in due place will appear.

Mercia divided into five Bishopricks.

Ethel-
dred *K*
of Mer-
cia be-
comes a
Monk

The Nation now flourishing in Peace and Plenty, a great Number of Religious Houses were Erected. *Etheldred* King of *Mercia*, after he had Reigned 30 Years, was made a Monk, and afterwards Abbot of *Banbury*; at what time a great stir was made about the manner of shaving Monks; some affirming that the Apostles, (who in this they inclin'd to imitate) were not all shaved; the main stress therefore for bringing in this needless Ceremony was laid upon St. *Peter* (whom in Scripture we cannot nevertheless find any more shaved than the rest, bating what baldness thro' Age effected) however, *Beda* in the Twenty First Chapter of his Fifth Book, relates the contention they made in reference to this at large, but not being pertinent to the matter in hand, I pass it over.

K The
King
resigns
his
Crown
and goes
on Pilgrim-
age to
Rome.

His
Queen be-
comes an
Abbess.

King *Ine*, at the perswasion of *Ethelburga* his Queen, was so taken with a Religious Life, that he voluntarily resigned his Crown to *Ethelardus* his Nephew, whom he constituted to Reign over the West Saxon Kingdom; and putting himself into mean habit, went on Pilgrimage to *Rome* with great devotion, after he had Reigned Thirty Seven Years: his Queen becoming Abbess of a Nunnery at *Barkin*, Seven Miles from *London*, founded by *Erkenwald*, and ended her Days there, when she had Governed discreetly and religiously many Years. As for *Ine*, he was joyfully receiv'd at *Rome* the crafty Bishop carressing him for his own ends. In requital of which, he allowed him a grant of Chimney Money, (which Popish Authors since call a Tribute due to the See of *Rome*,) viz. a Penny for every Fire-hearth or Stove throughout his Dominions, which we call *Romescot*, or *Peterpence*; and long after peremptorily demanded and payed in many parts of *England*. *Ine* proved during his Reign a Valiant and Virtuous Prince; being the first of the *Saxon* Kings I read of, that made wholesome-Laws for the benefit of his Country.

which were above Fourscore in Number, but brevity constrains me here to omit them, which good Example was follow'd by some others of the Saxon petty Princes.

And now, so famous the English grew for Learning and Piety, That *Beda*, especially, was accounted a Miracle of his Age. *Sergius* Bishop of Rome, hearing of his Fame, and standing in need of his great Ability, writ to *Celfride* Abbot of *Wire*, requiring him to send this venerable Man to Rome, to discuss certain Controversies and Causes relating to Learning, which none of the Italian Prelates were capable to perform. I do not find he undertook this hazardous Journey; but having Wrote many good Books, and Translated the Gospel of St. *John* into the English Tongue, being Aged 62 Years, or more, as some say, after a Seven Weeks Sicknes, he Dyed. It is Recorded of him, That in the Persecuting times, Preaching in a quarry of Stones, and his Auditors whom he held long, sinking away, without regard to what he then Preach'd, the Stones (but how true this may be, I determine not) cry'd out, well done venerable *Beda*, and from which time he was called venerable *Beda*, and is so mentioned in some Authors to this Day, though he Dyed in the Year of our Lord, 735.

Beda a famous Man about this time.

Stones proclaim him venerable.

His Death.

A Religious Life in these Days appeared so innocent and beautiful, that more Kings than yet I have mentioned, laid down their Crowns to embrace it: For *Celfus*, or *Ceolulfus*, K. of Northumberland, after he had Reigned Eight Years, was born a Monk in the Abby of *Farn*, otherways *Landsfarn*, or *Holy Island*; (by whose means the Brother-hood were allow'd to drink wine and ale on certain days, who before were contented with Milk and Water) and was succeeded by *Egbert* his Cousin, Brother to *Egbert* Arch-bishop of *York*; who again brought thither the Pall, which his Predecessors had neglected from the time *Paulinus* left

Celfus King of Northumberland, born a Monk.

Synod
 assembled
 by Cuth-
 bert
 Arch-
 Bishop of
 Canter-
 bury.

that See, and fled into *Kent*, as is before mentioned. He also Erected a famous Library in that City and laboured all he could for the Advancement of Religion.

About the beginning of *Egbert's* Reign, *Cuthbert* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, assembled a Synod of Prelates at a place called *Clonesho*, who passed 30 decrees, for the better regulating the affairs of the Church, and for the decency and ornament of Religion. The principal of which were;

That Bishops should be more diligent in their Offices, and in Admonishing the People of their failings.

That they should live in Peace together, notwithstanding they were separated.

That every Bishop once a Year should visit all the Parishes of his Diocess.

That Bishops should Admonish their Abbots and Monks to live Regular, and that Prelates should not oppress their Inferiours, but love and cherish them.

That none should be admitted to Orders, before his Life and Conversation was well examined, &c.

A Copy of these Decrees and Orders, *Cuthbert* sent to *Boniface*, otherways named *Winfride*, an English-man, then Arch-bishop of *Mentz*; and afterward, (as some Authors have it) suffered Martyrdom, under the cruelty of the *Goths* or *Vandals*, who breaking in upon the *Roman* Empire like a mighty Torrent, waded in Christian blood. This *Boniface* writ a long Epistle to *Ethelbald* King of *Mercia*, Admonishing him of his Adulterous Life, as also of his Cruelty and Oppression of the Church of God; but it little availed, though the good Man discharged herein his Duty. For this lascivious Prince set Spies upon the Nunnery, and where he heard of any extreamly beautiful Virgins, he would by fair means or force, satisfy his Lust.

And now the East *Angle* Kingdom of the *Saxons* together with the East *Saxons*, and even the whole

Islands

and, being converted to the Christian Faith, and the true Religion Established, Persecution ceasing all our borders, the Bishops of Rome, out of pride and Covetousness, began to trouble the Kingdom, by placing and displacing Bishops; pretending a Right to it, as being the Successors of St. Peter, who, (they alledged) having the power given him to bind and loose, it was as amply derived to them as it had been in himself. This much troubled the English Clergy; to have strangers obtruded here, who being the Bishop of Rome's Creatures, minded so much the Government of the Church, as raping up the Treasure of the Nation; having no regard to what right or wrong Method they might find it by, to supply him that was their support in their Dignities; rejecting any Complaints made against them for these Abuses and Extortions; which caused the Clergy to degenerate, and by their bad Example, the Laity grew careless, and lukewarm in their Religion; for which God punished them, by suffering Contentions and Debates to produce a War, that after much blood shed in the field, and many secret Assassinations, put an end to the Seven petty Kingdoms of the Saxons; which were all subdued to the West Saxons; and with much struggling, Egbert became sole Monarch of England.

England becomes one sole Monarchy under Egbert.

Upon this King's entrance on the Government, and thirty two Monasteries, Nunneries and Abbeys, founded by several Kings and others, in the space of 200 Years; besides Churches and Chapels: and that the first Cross and Altar set up in England, was in Heavenfield, in the Northern Parts; upon the occasion of Oswald King of Northumberland's fighting with Cedwalla or Cadwalla, King of the Britains, &c. where he kneeled and prayed for victory, which (according to Polybron. Lib. V. p. XII.) was in the year of our Lord 635.

The number of Monasteries, &c. in England

and find farther, that nine Kings of the Saxons were made Kings

Nine Saxon Kings

Shew
 down.

made Monks; some of which I have already mentioned, yet here (however) take them all in order *viz.* [1.] *Kingils*, King of the *West-Saxons*. [2.] *Ine*, King of the *West-Saxons*. [3.] *Ceolulf*, King of *Northumberland*. [4.] *Egbert*, King of *Northumberland*. [5.] *Ethelred*, King of *Mercia*. [6.] *Offa*, King of the *East-Saxons*. [7.] *Kenred*, King of *Mercia*. [8.] *Sebbi*, King of the *East-Saxons*; And [9.] *Sigebert* King of the *East-Angles*. But whether these Princes did well, to leave the Helm of Government, and sequester themselves from public Affairs, occasioning thereby many Wars, and Disturbances, when in their proper stations they might have been more beneficial to the publique; or whether this Zeal flowed freely from themselves, or was stirred up in them by those, who designed thereby to reap advantage in secular matters, I will not determine; however, this I must say, in what station soever God has placed a man, that is his proper province; and if by deserting it, the Good he fancied he brings to himself, redounds to the harm of others, is no ways warranted to be Just and Reasonable. But forbearing to censure, I shall conclude this second book of 300 years, with a succession of the Arch Bishops of *Canterbury*, from *Austin* to the sole Monarchy under *Egbert* the *West-Saxon* King, which are in number seventeen, *viz.*

Number
 and
 Names
 of the
 Arch Bps.
 down to
 the sole
 Monar-
 chy.

Austin continued in that See 16 years. *Laurence* 5 Years. *Melitus* 5 Years. *Iustus* 3 Years. *Honoratus* 25 Years. *Dens dedit* 19 Years. *Theodorus* 22 Years being all *Italians* and other *Foreigners*. *Bertin* an *English* Man 37 Years. In his time the state Monastery of *St. Martin* was erected in *Canterbury* by *Withred* and his Brother, Kings of *Kent*. *Fulginus* 3 Years. *Nothelinus* 5 Years. *Cuthbert* 5 Years: This Bishop at his death strictly commanded, that no Solemn Funeral, or Lamentation should be made for him; perhaps considering, as he had behaved himself, it would be done but in mockery.

guinus 3 Years. *Lambrigtus*, or *Lambertus*
 Years. In his time *Offa* translated the *Metropolitan*
 from *Canterbury* to *Litchfield*, by the grant of
 Pope *Adrian*. *Ethelardus* 13 Years. This Arch-
 bishop, by his Epistle to Pope *Leo*, obtain'd the
Metropolitan See again to *Canterbury*. *Ulfredus* 28
 Years. *Feolegeldus* 3 Years, and *Celnothus* 41 Years.
 During the Course of these 17 Arch Bishops, there
 were 34 Popes, or Bishops of *Rome*. The word
 Pope, or more properly *Pa-Pa*, in brief signifying
 Father *Patriarcharum*, that is Father of the *Patri-*
archs or *Bishops*, as claiming Supremacy since the
 time of *Boniface*, of whom I have already spoken.
 And so much for the time of the *Saxon Heptarchy*
 seven Kings ruling together from the Reign of
Ingist, to *Egbert* the first sole *Saxon* Monarch of
England.

The

on t
Exp
he
ma
with
to ti
art

L
L
safety
Dea

The Third

BOOK

CONTAINING

The following Three

Centuries :

O R,

Three Hundred Years :

in the Reign of King Egbert, till the Expiration of the Saxon Monarchy, upon the Invasion of William Duke of Normandy, commonly stiled the Conqueror ; with such material things, as from time to time happened in Church and State ; and particularly of the Danish Persecution.

Egbert (whose blood was much thirsted after by *Brightric*, because he was near allyed to the West Saxon Crown, and of a War-like Spirit) being compelled for safety, to fly into *France* ; he remained there till the Death of his Persecutor ; and then returning, was

Egbert
subdues
several
petty
Kings.

Names
his Coun-
try Eng-
land.

Danes &
Norwe-
gians
invade
England.

was by the West Saxons received, and in a little time insinuated himself so far into their favour by his Princely behaviour, that they owned him King, and invested him with the Regalia. After which, he in a set Battle overthrew Bernulf King of *Mercia*, who had not only despised him but invaded his Country. He also subdu'd the Kings of *Kent* and *Northumbria*, and compelled them to become his Tributaries. Soon after he took *Chester* from the *Britains* or *Welsh*, which they had possessed till that Day. Thro' these and other Victories, he had peaceable possession of *England* and that Animosities might cease among People under one Government, he gave strict command that the *Saxons* should be generally called *Angles* and the Country he possessed, *Anglia*, or *England*. Tho' indeed, this Name had been given to it before, (as I have already mentioned) tho' not well Established, because of the Dissentions amongst the different Nations that Inhabited it: And the Name was continued to it, throughout the Rebellions and Changes in Government that afterwards happened.

About the *Thirtieth* Year of this *Egbert's* Reign in the Year of our Lord 833. The *Danes* and *Norwegians*, who had before tasted the sweets of this flourishing Island; leaving their own Cold and Barren Climate, Landed, with a considerable Force on the Isle of *Sheppy* in *Kent*; where they committed miserable Spoil and Slaughter; especially upon Church-Men, being themselves *Pagan* Idolaters. But near a place called *Carrum*, or *Tarrum*, *Egbert* encountered them, and tho' he Fought valiantly yet wanting his former Success, he was constrained to leave them the Field, and retire to recruit his Forces; many of his valiantest Commanders and Soldiers being slain. This Victory gave the *Danes* an opportunity of wasting most of the Eastern parts of the Island; Demolishing Churches,

velling Religious Houses with the Ground; not
 aring any Monks, or others professing Religion,
 less the Nuns, and others of their Sex to satisfy
 their Lust; and these too many times when they
 were satiated, they ript up alive, and put to many
 mentable Deaths. Returning again the next
 year, in the Western Parts, K. Egbert, with a small
 power; gave their great Army a terrible overthrow,
 and drove them out of the Kingdom; yet this did
 not so much discourage them, as to deter their
 standing again; Persecuting the Christians where
 ever they came with all manner of Torments. Inso-
 much, that the Abbess of *Colding*, being a virtuous
 lady, and fearing the violation of her own, and her
 Nuns Chastity, by her Example, caused them to
 cut off their Noses and upper Lips, that their de-
 formity might deter these lustful Satyrs from at-
 tempting to defile them: but it availed not; for
 after they had deflowered them, they cruelly Murde-
 red them all, in revenge, as they said, for their de-
 forming themselves to hinder their brutal affections to-
 wards them. These Enemies often joyning with the
 Britains, mortal Enemies to the *English* Nation in
 those times, forbore not these their Hostilities, till
 under *Canute* their King, they totally subdued all
 that was then properly called *England*. Nor did
 the *Scots*, at times, fare much better; they making
 the two Kingdoms the Theatre whereon they acted
 these bloody Tragedies; for upwards of 250 Years;
 but when they had gained their ends, they held it
 in succession but three Reigns, viz. *Canute* Reigned
 19 Years. *Harold Harefoot* his Son, 4 Years; and
Harold Canute, another of his Sons, 2 Years: When
 the *Danish* Line being extinct, *Edward* Sir-named
 the Confessor, Son of *Etheldred*, an *English-Saxon*
 monarch, returning out of Banishment, received the
 crown as his Right, Reigning 24 Years. After
 whom *Harold* the Son of *Earl Godwin*, taking upon
 himself to be King, when he had Reigned scarce a
 Year,

Abbess of
Colding
 and her
 Nuns
 cut off
 their
 Noses.

Danes
 under
Canute
 became
 Masters
 of *Eng-*
land.

Edward
 Confes-
 sor King.

Harold
 King.

who is
subdu'd
by William
Duke
of Nor-
mandy.

Year, in a mortal Battle, fought between him and William Duke of Normandy, afterward Sir-named the Conqueror, lost his Life and Crown, in *Sussex* the place from that memorable Battle fought in it being ever since called *Battle-field*.

K. Egbert dies.

But to come closer to the subject in hand, King Egbert (during these troublesom times) having ruled over the *West-Saxons*, and as sole Monarch of

Ethelwolfe his Son succeeds him.

England 37 Years, dyed, and was buried at *Winchester*; leaving his Son *Ethelwolfe* (who before was Bishop of *Winchester*, as *Hoveden* reports) to take up on him an uneasie Government: The necessity of the times constraining him to lay down his Crosier, and take up the Sword, in order to succour his bleeding and languishing Country; in which the *Danes* by this time had got strong footing; having (for that purpose) obtained a dispensation from the Bishop of *Rome* to quit his holy orders, &c. he began his Reign with Clemency and Charity, being very liberal to the Church; giving away all his Goods and Lands in *West-Saxony* to pious uses; exempting Clergy-Men from all secular matters; that might be any way chargeable to them: which Privelege or Exemption, he granted in a Charter too long to be here inserted, without intrenching on my intended brevity and when he had fought some battles successfully and a little settled the Kingdom, he went to *Rome* accompanied by *Alfrid* his youngest Son, whom he committed to the tuition of Pope *Leo* the fourth; rebuilding the English-School, which had been founded in that City by King *Offa*, rather, as some have it, King *Ine*, which a little before had been consumed by fire; confirming hearty money, and over and above allowing 300 Marks to be Payed by *England* for these uses, viz.

One Hundred for maintaining the light of *St. Peter*. One Hundred for the Light of *St. Paul*. And the remaining Hundred to the use of the Pope to be disposed of as he should think convenient

his done, He returning to *England* by the way of *Ethel-*
France, marryed *Judith*, Daughter to *Charles* the *wolf*
ald, King of that Country; who after his death, *marries*
returning home, was Shipwrack'd upon the Coast, *Charles*
the Bald's
Daugh-
ter of
France.
Who re-
turning to
her Fa-
ther, is
taken and
marry'd
by Bald-
win, of
Flanders,

Ethelwolf at his return found the *Danes* had made
great wast in his absence; but summoning his Cou-
nge and his Forces, he prevailed so against them,
to oblige them to return to *Denmark*. But the King
ot long out lived these victories, for wearied with
ontinual toil, to which he had not been brought up,
e sickned and dyed; leaving behind him four Sons,
no reigned successively after him. viz. *Ethelbald*,
Ethelbright, *Ethelred* and *Alfred*.

But before I proceed, one memorable passage
oliges me to look back on *Rome*, where I find Pope
to the 4th dying; the Cardinals proceeding to
eir ordinary Election, after a solemn Mass of the
oly-Ghost, found themselves so little the better
r any inspiration, that mis-taking even the Sex
ey elected a Woman Pope instead of a Man, whose
ame was *Joan*. Being elected, she took upon her
e name of *John* the eighth: She was indeed of a
asculine spirit, going in man's apparel from her
outh, as disdaining to be accounted among the
ble Sex: She acquired such Learning as to at-
in the Bishoprick of *Rheims*; and by the prevail-
g assistance of Gold, together with her great parts,
ocured the Popedom; where she sat two Years
d six Months; administred the Sacraments, said
Mass, gave orders to Deacons, Priests, and Bishops;
promote Prelates, and make Abbots; to conse-

Ethel-
wolf
dies.

Joan, a
Woman,
elected
Pope.

Who falls
in Labour
as a so-
lem Pro-
cession.

crate Churches and Altars; to Reign and Rule over Kings and Emperors; and to do and undo as they pleased. Some Authors say, she was a Dutch Woman of *Mayence*, who made her escape out of the *Abbey of Fulda*, in Man's Apparel with an English Monk, and travelled to *Athens*, and that her true Name was *Gilberta*. But so unluckily it happened that advanced thus to be supreme Head of the Church, she, in the face of a general Procession, fell in Labour of Child birth, and so Dyed. Some add, that seeing she was thus discovered, she stabbed her self with a Dagger, concealed for that purpose, if she happened to fall into publique Disgrace: And tho' the Papists deny this very stily, alledging it is a Scandal thrown upon their Church; yet some of their own Authors have not been altogether silent in it, rather labouring to evade it than absolutely deny it. This is certain, the Cardinals to this day avoid going in Procession in the Street where the Accident befel *St. Peter's* Female Successor: And some affirm (but how true I averr not) that ever since, the *Pope* is to stand the search, before he is admitted to the *Pontificate*.

Benedict
III. Succeeds
her.
After
whom
Nicholas I.

This she *Pope* was succeeded by *Benedict* the thirtieth, who appointed dirges to be sung for the Death of *Nicholas* the First, coming to the Chair after him, enlarged the *Pope's* Decrees with many Constitutions, equalling the Authority of them with the Writings of the Apostles; and ordained, that no secular Prince, no not the Emperor himself, should be present at their Councils, unless it were concerning Articles of Faith; to the end, that such they judged Hereticks, these by their secular power should cause to be Executed. Also, that no Lay-man should sit in Judgment upon a Clergymen, or Reason about the *Pope's* Power; and that no Christian Magistrate should have any power over a Prelate; alledging to *Salve* this, that a Prelate is called by God, and consequently above all

isdiction of all temporal Magistrates.

It was further here ordained, that all Church
service should be in Latin: notwithstanding they dis-
sented with the *Polanders* and *Sclavonians*, allowing
them to celebrate it in their vulgar Tongue. Se-
quences in the Mass were first allowed by this *Pope*:
nor did he thus early forbear to forbid and restrain
Priests from Marriage; upon which, *Hulderike*
Bishop of *Ausburg*, a Learned and Holy Man, writ
a long Epistle to him, gravely and learnedly refus-
ing his indiscreet proceedings, touching this
unchristian matter; proving by substantial Pro-
positions, that Priests ought not to be restrained from
a holy and chaste Contract as Marriage: but it
availed not, for some of the succeeding Popes, ra-
ther allowed them Fornication, or Adultery as
lawful, than that they should in any thing vary
from their Decrees. And indeed, if some Authors
(and even those among their own Writers) have
not been mistaken, the Monasteries and Frieries
grew in time to epitomize *Sodom* and *Gomorrab*,
habitations of Abomination, and Cages of unclean
birds; which caused no doubt, the Judgments of
God to fall upon them, especially in *England*; where
the Danish Cruelty was most severe against them.
Of whose degenerate state one thus Writes.

In the Primitive Church (saith he) of the English
Nation, Religion did most clearly shine: Inasmuch;
that the Kings, Queens, Princes and Dukes, Consuls,
Barons and Rulers of the Churches, inflam'd with a
desire of the Kingdom of Heaven, laboured and strove
among themselves to enter into a Monastick and
solitary Life, and into voluntary Exile, forsaking
all to follow the Lord; where, in process of time, all
Virtue so much decay'd amongst them, that in Frauds
and Treacheries, none exceeded them; neither to them
any thing odious; but Piety and Justice, neither
any thing in Honour or Esteem, but Civil-War and
shedding Innocent Blood. Wherefore Almighty God sent

upon them, Pagans and cruel Nations, who spared neither Men, Women nor Children; the Vandals, Goths, Norwegians, Danes, Suevians, and Frisians, who from the beginning of the Reign of K. Ethelwold till the coming of the Normans, harassed and laid waste the sinful Land; Invading England often times on every side, and tho' they were worsted, they still returned with greater power, and were ready, on a sudden and unawares to approach upon them, &c. Ex Historia Cariana, &c.

Now, tho' this was probably the Main Cause which brought so many Calamities upon this Nation; yet, that a Cause more evident may not be omitted in this work, take it then briefly thus, as it relates to the first Invasion of the Danes and Norwegians.

Of-
bright's
Lust the
occasion
of an In-
vasion.

The first then, as I take it, was occasioned by one *Ostbright*, Vice-roy to a King of the West Saxons, who in the absence of *Bruer* an Earl, coming to his House, and being kindly entertained by his beautiful Lady, violently forced her to his Lust; after which, the grievous Complaints of this injured Woman, being desirous of Revenge, would never let her Husband rest, till he went over to *Denmark* and invited the *Danes* to invade the Country; who charmed with his relation of its fertility, delayed not to take this Invitation as a pretence to invade it.

As also
the death
of *Lothbroke*.

The second was, that one *Lothbroke*, of the stock of the *Danish* Kings, entering into a Boat to save a Hawk that flew into the Sea, a sudden gust of Wind arising, drove him upon the Coast of *Northfolk*, where King *Edmund* entertained him courteously: but his Faulconer envying that favour, because he out-did him in the Management of Hawks, privately slew him, and hid him in a Bush. When the Murder being discovered, and the Murderer detected, he was doomed to be put to Sea in the same Boat, without Oars or Sail; being so left to the

mercy of the Waves and Winds, was driven upon
 the Coast of *Denmark*; where the Boat being known,
 he about to suffer Death, falsely accused King
Edmond of the Murther; which so exasperated
Northbroke's two Sons, *Inguar* and *Hubba*, that by the
 assistance of the King of *Denmark*, they raised a
 great Army, and Landed in *Northumberland*, com-
 mitting innumerable out-rages. Thence they sailed
 again, and landed in *Northfolk*; leaving every where,
 as they passed, the Marks of Cruelty behind them;
 and at length they defeated the King's Army, and
 took him Prisoner, binding him to a Tree, and
 shooting him to death with Arrows, at or near a
 place in that County, now called *St. Edmunds-
 bury*; shedding his Innocent Blood for a Crime he
 was not guilty of; being in all things so mild and
 merciful a Prince, that for his Vertues, he was af-
 terward Canoniz'd for a Saint; and as Popish
 stories tell us, wrought many wonderful Miracles
 after his Death.

K. Ed-
 mund
 slain by
 the
 Danes.

But to return; *Ethelwolf* dying, *Ethelbald* his
 eldest Son succeeded him; who fought valiant-
 ly against the *Danes*, Encountering them in *Nine*
 pitched Battles in one Year; sometimes wining, and
 at other times losing the Field: His whole Reign
 being, as it were, a continual War with them. Nor
 did *Ethelred* his Brother, who after succeeded, find
 much time to breath, he being continually pestered
 with swarms of Enemies, who like *Hydras* Heads,
 when one Army was destroyed, another still sprung
 up to supply its place. Yet at last, *Inguar* and
Hubba were slain at a place called *Englefield*, after
 they had taken and plundred *Reading*, in *Barkshire*.
 The *Northumbrians*, and others the King's Subjects,
 perceiving the *Danes* grow strong, to gain favour,
 joined with them, which so perplexed *Ethelred*, that,
Malmsbury says, He wished rather to die, than to
 reign with so much trouble; and not long after he
 deceased, when he had Reigned, as *Fabian* says,

*Ethel-
 wolf*
dies, and
his Son
*Ethel-
 bald suc-
 ceeds*
him;

*Who dy-
 ing, is*
succeeded
by his
Brother
*Ethel-
 red.*

who is
also suc-
ceeded by
his Bro-
ther.
Alfred.

Eight Years; tho' *Malmsbury* makes mention
of Five Years (his Brother *Ethelbright* being before
dead, without doing any thing memorable) during
which time, notwithstanding his great vexation
and troubles in Marshal affairs, he Founded the
College of *Canons* at *Exeter*, and was Buried
in *Winburn*, or *Wobourn*; to whom, dying without
Issue, his Brother *Alured* or *Alfred* succeeded.

This King took possession of the Throne in a very
troublesome time, yet is said to exceed in con-
stancy of Mind, Valour and Vertue, all the *Saxon*
Kings that went before him: For he stood up for
his gasping Country, like another *Judas Maccabean*
with unwearied Endeavours to rescue it from the
persecuting Enemy; but finding himself unable to
withstand their united Forces, his People flying away
from him, some into Woods, and some beyond the
Seas, he betook him to a small Island, called *Ethe-*
ling, standing in a Morass, where a poor Swineherd
entertain'd him in his Cottage, being all the House
that where on the Island; for which kindness, it is
said, he afterward gave him Learning, and made
him Bishop of *Winchester*. In this place hearing by
some Spies, that the *Danes*, supposing they had
gotten an absolute Victory, were negligent in keep-
ing their Watches, he disguised himself in the Habit
of a Harper, and so went into their Camp; where
perceiving what was told him to be true, and mark-
ing the order of their Camp, he secretly assembled
an Army, and fell upon them in such fury, that with
his small power, taking them at a disadvantage, he
made an incredible slaughter, filling their Trenches
with the blood of the slain; and soon after he drove
them out of most of their strong holds they had
taken, especially in the Southern and Western parts
of the Kingdom, compelling them to sue for Peace,
which he concluded on certain Articles, or Cove-
nants, the chief whereof was, that *Gutrūm* the *Dan-*
ish King should be Baptized, and such as re-
fused

Alfred
retrieves
his
Country
and
forces the
Danes to
sue for
Peace.

sed, should immediately depart the Kingdom.

Upon this Agreement the *Danish* King came to *Winchester*, and was there Christened, with 20 of his Dukes, and others of his Nobility. King *Alfred*, who was his God-father, naming him *Athelstan*, and assigned him *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, and part of *Cambridge-shire* (formerly the *East-Angle* Kingdom) for his Lot, and as *Polychronicon* tells us, he allotted *Northumberland* to such others of the *Danes* as consented to be Baptized. Thus a seeming Peace was concluded, which lasted not long; for the *Danes*, on the arrival of fresh Forces, fell again to open hostilities; making such slaughter, that the dead bodies lying unburied in the Fields, caused a Pestilence amongst Men, and the Putrefaction tainting the Earth, produc'd a grievous Murrain upon the Cattle: but these lasted not long.

Alfred assigns Norfolk, &c. to the Danes.

This King translated many pious Books out of Latin into English; built several Religious Houses, and sending for learned Men, Erected Schools at *Oxford* for the study of Arts; Franchising them with large Liberties and Privileges. Thus when he had govern'd the Land 29 Years, he Dyed; leaving it in a far better condition than he found it; and was Buried at *Winchester*, *Anno* 901. leaving behind him (and that not untruly) the Character of a good Prince to all posterity.

Alfred Dyes.

To this good King succeeded *Edward* his Son, surnamed the *Elder*, who having extraordinary Education, was very knowing in policies of State, tho' far short of his Father; yet for a Martial Spirit, and Strength of Body, few Kings exceeded him; and this the *Danes* experimented, whom he worsted in several pitch Fields; tho, *Clito* (*Ethelwold* his Brothers Son) joyned them, and drew a great party in *Northumberland* and other places to side with him: For this young Man having stolen a beautiful Nun out of a Nunnery, and fearing his Uncles Displeasure, chose rather to fall into Re-

Alfred succeeded by his Son Edward.

Edward
obtains
great
Victories
over the
Danes.

bellion than endeavour a Reconciliation : soon after the two Armies meeting, between two Ditches of *St. Edmund's Land*, after a cruel Fight, *Clito* with many of the *Danes* were slain, and the rest forced to sue again for Peace ; which under a Tribute, and certain Conditions, was granted them. But about the Twelfth Year of this King's Reign, they repenting, drew out their Forces, and fought another great battle, at a place called *Totten-hall* in *Staffordshire* ; and soon after, another at *Wodensfield* ; in both which *Edward* was victorious, slaying two Kings of the *Danes*, and two Earls, with many Thousands of lesser note.

These overthrows giving the Land some rest, the King re-built and fortified divers places that had been ruined in those tedious Wars. As first *Chester* which he much enlarged. Then he built a Castle in *Hereford*, on the edge of *Wales*, to curb the *Welsh-men*, who during these Transactions, made many Inroads, plundering and ravageing the bordering Counties : And indeed, perceiving the oversight of former Kings, who for want of Garrisoned Towns and Castles, had left the Country open to Invasion, and the Insults of intestine Tumults, he expended much Treasure in building Forts, and Strong-holds in the most convenient places, to hinder the passage of the Enemy, which were of great advantage to him ; so that he had as it were, a bridle on those Subjects that were apt to Rebel, and safe Retreats for those Persecuted by the *Pagan Danes*.

This done, he preferred many worthy Men to Bishopricks, and other Ecclesiastical Promotions without any Licences from the Bishop of Rome, prescribing Laws, as well to the Church-men as to the Laity : And indeed, those matters meerly spiritual were then in the Hands of this King, and his Predecessors ; the Popes not daring to meddle in Provinces, where Kings were by all allowed

be God's Vicegerents. Sometime after, he, with assistance of *Pleimindus* Arch-bishop of Canterbury, and other Bishops, assembled a Synod; elected Seven Bishops, viz. *Fridiston*, *Adelstan*, *Westran*, *Lehelm*, *Edulphus*, *Dernegus*, and *Kenulph*; in which Election, the King's Authority alone was sufficient. As for his Children, having many, carefully educated them in Learning and Vertue, one of his Daughters became Nunns; as *Elfreda* and *Ethelhildia*; others were Married to great Princes and Nobles: thus having Reigned 24 Years, Dyed, and was Honourably Buried by his Son *Belstan*, or *Adelstan*, Anno 925. leaving his Kingdom tolerably well settled.

K. Edward dies.

During these Transactions in England, the Pope was in great Confusion, occasion'd through great Dissentions amongst her own Clergy; who grew very Proud and Arrogant, from the abundance of Wealth which flowed thither from other parts. Upon the Death of Pope *Stephen* the Fifth, one Faction contended so strenuously against another, plotting and displacing, that within the space of Nine years, there were in *St. Peters* Chair (as they call it) no less than Nine Bishops. *Formosus*, who succeeded the said *Stephen*, and who arriv'd to the Pontificate with much difficulty, because it was strenuously argu'd, that it could not be a due Election, since he had abjured religious Orders; yet nevertheless, his party answer'd, that Pope *Martin* had absolved him of that perjury. However, the cunning Bishop observing the adverse Faction gain upon him, privately sent for King *Arnulphus*, who with his Army took Rome, putting to death many of his own Enemies, and those of the Popes; for which kindness *Formosus* blessed him, and Crowned him Emperor. But *Sergius*, a proud insolent Deacon, Chaplain to *Formosus*, losing the Chair thro' his means, but gaining it after, in revenge of the Affront, caused him to be taken out of his Grave,

Great Dissentions at Rome,

which creates Bloodshed.

Sergius's revenge upon Formosus.

**Sergius's
Vices.**

**Ethel-
stan suc-
ceeds his
Father
Edward.**

**Earl
Elfrid
conspires
against
the King.**

Grave, and degrading the dead Body of Holy Orders, order'd the Head and 3 Fingers to be cut off. The Monkish Stories tell us, that at this Decollation, several Images that stood by, bowed in reverence to the dead Body; which was then cast into the River *Tiber*; but this we can't credit. This Pope *Sergius* was the first that made a Procession with Candles, on *Candlemas-day*, for the purifying the blessed Virgin. Stupidity! as if the Sacred Conception of the Son of God, were to be purified as a thing impure; and by so despicable a thing. It is also noted of him, that he was very familiar with *Marozia*, Daughter to *Theodora*, a famous Cartezan of *Rome*, by whom he had a Son, who was afterward Pope, by the Name of *John XI*. This Harlot and her Mother, had so great an Interest and Influence in Affairs both of Church and State, that they not only raised or destroyed particular Persons, but even Popes themselves (who were their Creatures, and resign'd Infallibility into their hands) were at their pleasure elected. During which Changes, such irregularities were committed, that Religion it self, had almost abandon'd the City of *Rome*. But to return, to *Edward the Elder*, King of *England*, succeeded *Ethelstan*, or *Adelstan* his Son, a very worthy Prince, who following his Father's steps, laboured to expel the invading *Danes*: and such Success attended him, that he not only effected that, but subdued the *Scots* also, and obliged the *Welsh* to do him Homage together with the *Cornish-Men*, who frequently rebelled as opportunity served: Particularly *Elfrid* an Earl, who being detected, fled to *Rome*, to purge himself, by swearing his Innocency, in *St. Peter's Church* before the Pope; which he had not sooner done, but he was seized with Madness, and in that condition sent to the English College, where he dyed 3 Days after. God's immediate Judgment reaching this wretch, who to smother his Treason

daringly perjur'd himself. Many Treasons being frequently detected against the King, they so far transported his jealousy; that, at the Instigation of his Cup-bearer, he caused his Brother *Edwin* (then very young) to be put into a Boat with his Servant, then setting it a drift, left them to the mercy of the sea; the danger of which, forc'd him to leap overboard, whereby he was drowned; but his Servant escaping, brought the body ashore, and buried it at *Sandwich*. This fact affected (when his Brother's Innocency appeared) *Ethelstan* so much, that causing him to be taken up, he buried the Body honourably. Soon after *Edwin's* Accuser, as he brought his line to the King, stumbled, but nimbly recovering himself, cry'd, Your Majesty may see how one brother can help another; which unhappy saying refresh'd the King's Memory, that he immediately gave order for his Execution. And further atone for this Innocent Blood, besides Seven years Mourning, he builded the two Monasteries of *Widdleton* and *Michlens*; and plentifully provided for all his other Brothers and Sisters, with much kindness and affection; giving one of his Sisters in Marriage to *Otho*, who was first Emperor of *Germany*, (The Empire at this time beginning first to be translated from *France*, where it had remained about one hundred years, unto *Germany*, where it hath ever since continued) and the rest he Married to Persons of great Honour. The *Danes* being again troublesom, the King gave them several overthrows. *Anlaf* their King, finding himself not able to effect any thing in the field, hath re-course to Treachery: and supposing the King's Death would much advantage him, he one night entered his Camp with Armed Men, intending to dispatch him in his Tent. It happen'd, that a Bishop, newly Arriv'd, had pitched his Tent at the place where the King's a little before stood; who wakened with the noise, so Manfully laid about him,

*Ethelstan
bro' ill
Advice,
destroys
his Brother
Edwin.*

*Death of
his Accu-
ser.*

*Ethelstan's
Sister
Married
to Otho
1st. Em-
peror of
Germany.
Danes
treache-
rously de-
sign to
Murder
Ethel-
stan.*

*But mis-
carry.*

him, that he slew five petty Kings, or Dukes of the *Danes*, with a great number of Soldiers; but not being timely rescu'd, was slain, falling dead on a heap of his Enemies.

Guy the
Noble
Earl of
War-
wick, in
this K's
time.

In this King's Reign it was (as stories tell) that near *Winchester*, Guy Earl of *Warwick*, in the disguise of a Pilgrim, unknown to any, was admitted the King's Champion against *Colbron*, a huge Danish Giant, whom he slew in single Combat, who like another *Goliath*, had defied the English Armies.

Tythes
first
granted
to the
Clergy.

This King was the first in *England*, that I read of who granted Tythes to the Clergy; commanding all his Officers and others, throughout the Realm to give as well Tyth of Cattle, as of Corn and Fruits of the Earth; and particularly Crown Revenues he order'd to be deliver'd yearly, at the Feast of St. *John Baptist*. And to strengthen his Kingdom, and gain Repute abroad, he Man'd out a mighty Navy; whereby vanquishing his Enemies he gain'd so great a Name among foreign Princes that *Hugh King of France*, sent him the Sword of *Constantine the Great*, said to have one of the Nails that fastned our Saviour to the Cross, in the Pummel of it; also the Spear wherewith he was pierced by *Longinus* a Roman Soldier. And *Oswald* who had Marry'd his Sister, sent him a Landskip richly set with precious Stones. From the King of *Norway*, he receiv'd a stately Ship, gilt and furnish'd with purple Sails. Amongst other the Laws and Ordinances King *Ethelstan* enacted (which were to the number of 25) he made a severe one to repress Thieves and Robbers; thereby ordaining, That none who stole above the value of Twelve Pence, being above the Age of Twelve years, should have Mercy; which clear'd the Land of those Caterpillars in a short space: Soon after, having well settled his affairs, he dyed, without Issue when he had Reigned about 16, or as some say, but

Ethel-
stan re-
ceives
great
Presents
from Fo-
reign
Princes.

His
Death.

15 years

years, *Anno Domini* 940; and was succeeded by
 mand his Brother.

Edmund entered upon the Crown in a manner
 ceably; but the *Danes* soon hearing of the
 ath of *Ethelstan*, who had been a great terror to
 m, and imagining to themselves better Suc-
 s, put to Sea; and Landing a great Army,
 ned the few scattered Remains that were reserv'd
 m the former slaughters, to fall by an other

*Edmund
 succeeds
 his Bro-
 ther.*

nd; for *Edmund* being a valiant Prince, he not
 ly beat the invading *Danes* out of the Kingdom,
 t also the *Scots* and *Normans*, and such others
 at made any attempts. Thus securing the King-

*Is victo-
 rious a-
 gainst the
 Danes.*

ms Peace a little, he proceeded to settle the Civil
 d Ecclesiastical Affairs; and with the help of
 wald, Bishop of *Worcester* and *Tork*, he promul-

*Enacts
 very good
 Laws.*

d such Laws and Institutions, as conduc'd greatly
 the Publick Tranquility. He also repaired the
 eligious Houses that had been demolished, and e-
 cted others; he was a great encourager of Learn-
 Men, and liberal to the Poor; and at the in-
 nce of *Dunstan* (feigning he heard Angels sing
 the Air, viz. *Now Peace cometh to the Church in
 e time of this Child, and of our Dunstan*; with
 any other Songs and Hymns) the King founded
 e Abby of *Glastenbury* (where, it is said, *Joseph*
Arimathea, Preaching in this Island a little after
 e Crucifixion of our Saviour, dyed, and was
 ried); of which Abby, he made *Dunstan* Abbot;
 f whom I shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

*Abby of
 Glasten-
 bury
 built by*

*Edmund.
 Joseph of
 Arima-
 thea sup-
 posed to
 be bury'd
 there.*

This King having taken *Cumberland* from *Dun-*
ail, and put out the Eyes of his two Sons; who
 ebelled against him, gave it to *Malcolm* King of
 cots; to engage him not only in a strict tye of
 friendship, but to serve him also when necessity
 fer'd. He then proceeded to Establish many
 holsom Laws, as well for the redress of Ecclesi-
 tical Matters, as Civil Government; enacting and
 etermining (without the advice of the Pope) cor-
 cernir

*Edmund
 takes
 Cumber-
 land,
 And gives
 it to*

*colm
 of*

*His good
Laws.*

cerning the purity of Life the Ecclesiasticks ought to lead, constituting Penalties to be inflicted on such as transgressed this, or the following Laws, viz.

Tythes to be pay'd by the Laity; also Church Dues and Alms, &c.

Against Deflowering Women, which we call *Nymphs*.

Every Bishop to repair his Cathedral-Church at his own proper cost; and to inform the King of the Due and fit Maintenance of the same. Flying into Churches for Sanctuary, and determining Cause Spousal or Matrimonial.

*Edmund,
his death.*

After these things, by an unlucky Accident, (some relate) the King was taken out of the World when he had Reigned 6 years and a half. The manner thus: being at *Pulchar's* Church at a Feast, two Men Dueling there, and he endeavouring to part them by thrusting between them, was slain: others tell us, that seeing an Out-law whom he had Banish'd, going to seize on him, he stabbed him with a Knife, and wounded many others. However it be, he dyed in the Year of our Lord 94⁶. and his Children, *Edwin* and *Edgar*, being under Age, *Edred* their Uncle was appointed Protector of the Realm and their Persons, till *Edmund* should be of years to Govern, during which, he managed the Affairs of the Realm with great Justice and Prudence, by which he obtain'd a general Applause. Under his Regency, *Dunstan* was made Bishop of *Worcester*, and afterwards of *London*.

*Edwin
succeeds
his Father
Edmund.*

Edwin, the Eldest Son of King *Edmund*, upon the Death of his Uncle *Edred*, took upon him the Government, sooner than was intended. He was so vicious a Prince (which shortned his Reign) that even upon the Day of his Coronation, he ravish'd a Lady, his near Kinswoman, Marry'd to a Noble Man; for which, he was much reprov'd by *Dunstan* and others: and *Odo*, the Arch-bishop suspended him from the Church; which so enrag'd him, that he Banish'd *Dunstan*, who went into

*His
Vices.*

and continu'd in the Monastery of St. *maudus*; but a little after, he was recall'd.

About this time, the order of *Benedictine*, or *Order of*
Black Monks first came into *England*; who grew *Benedi-*
 great in number and Authority, that, as in *times first*
 former times, Secular Priests or Canons, were placed *introduc-*
 Religious Houses, they were now expell'd, and *England.*
 these plac'd in their rooms. This occasion'd many
 ends; for being done by *Dunstan's* means, the
 ing, to vex him, turn'd them out of *Malmsbury*,
Wimborne, and other places, restoring the Secu-
 Priests: Tho' soon after, they got in again by
 the means of *Dunstan* their Patron; who wrought
 with the People, that had a mighty opinion *Edwin*
 his Sanctity, (he pretending to many Divine *describ'd*
 revelations) That he procured *Edwin* to be re-
 mov'd from the Throne, when he had Reigned a-
 bout 4 Years; and was succeeded by *Edgar* his
 younger Brother.

Edgar began his Reign at the Age of 16 Years, *Edgar*
anno 959. but was not Crowned till 14 Years *plac'd on*
 the Throne. His first business was to recall *Dunstan* from
 banishment, and *Odo* the Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*
 saying, he had the Government of that See, and
 was ordain'd Arch-bishop; which oblig'd him to
 go to *Rome*, to receive his Pall from Pope *John*
 the 13th. This put him up to that degree, that at his
 return to *England*, he grew very proud and inso-
 lent; and joining himself to the Monks against the
 Secular Priests, by his Encouragement, they swarm'd
 together from other Parts, like Locusts, to devour
 the good things of the Land; spreading into e-
 very quarter where most plenty was to be had;
 offering in their dissolute manner of Living as much *Clergy*
 from the Monks of the Primitive times, as an Angel *swarm*
 Darkness does from an Angel of Light. Their *very*
 chief design being to promote Superstition by feign'd *much.*
 Miracles, Dreams and pretended Visions; which
 and Fables, the Ignorant of those times,
 greedily

greedily swallowed as undoubted Truth. And whereas there were but two sorts Monks in the Primitive times (who lived very religiously and devoutly) divided into Hermits, or Anchorites, and Cenobites; now they seem'd to be without number occasion'd by their finding it a lazy way to live upon the sweat of other Mens Labours; whereas the Primitive Monks maintain'd themselves with the sweat of their Brows, as they of *Bangor* and other Monasteries in the *British* times did. But in return, *Edgar* (laying aside the Superstition he learned to by the Counsels of *Dunstan*, and *Ethelwald* Bishop of *Winchester*) is accounted a Just Prince Governing his Realm prudently; by wholesome Laws, punishing Offenders impartially, which threw Extortion, Bribery, and corrupt Officers, was not before so narrowly looked into and punished. He also subjected several Provinces that had not been under the Dominion of his Predecessors, and annexed them to the Crown; as he did all the small Islands and Borders about it, thereby rendering a compleat Monarchy, which gained him Reverence and Respect from his Subjects. In his time the Wolves devouring many Cattle and young Children, stragling in the Fields; to remedy it, he obliged every Man that held Land of the Crown, to bring in their Proportion of Wolves Heads Yearly. *Ludwallin* Prince of *Wales*, being allotted to bring Three Hundred, for Land on the Borders; which occasion'd such Hunting and narrow Search after these Ravenous Creatures, that in some few years there were none to be found in the Land; and, except tame ones brought over for curiosity, not any have been seen in it since.

3600
Ships of
War.

He was so formidable, that he kept on foot the greatest Fleet of any Prince before or since him; for he had 3600 Ships of War, which Scowred the Seas, and freed them of Rovers; so that the *Maritime* Trade began greatly to flourish.

very Winter Season he took a Progress to see and enquire, whether his Judges and other Officers had done Justice to his Subjects; and where he found they had not, or wronged any one, he severely punished them: He also made a Law to prevent Drunkenness, which then was creeping into this Kingdom, thro' the excess of the Nobles and Clergy; appointing Cups with certain Pins in them, and Forfeiture on any that drank beyond the Limit appointed at one draught.

About the 13th. Year of his Reign, being at *Edgar* *row'd in* *his Barge* *by 8 petty Kings.* *chester*, he had 8 petty Kings (that were under him, and did him homage) to Row him on the River *Dee*, to, and from the Church of *St. John*, to his palace; himself governing the Helm, with this saying, *That he exceeded all his Predecessors in Honour, having such Servants to attend him: who were* *Malcolme K. of Scots, Malcolme K. of Cumberland, Maccus, or Mascusinus K. of Monia, also of the* *Wales, and all the petty Kings or Princes of Wales,* *viz. Dunwald, Sifreth, Huwall, Jacob Vikel and* *cher.*

Yet for all this, he was not without his Vices; for, as is said, he took *Walschild*, a professed Nun, out of *Edgar's* *Vice:* *Andover Nunnery*, and got on her *Edith*, who after was Sainted, upon some pretended Miracle she wrought. Fame also whispering in his Ears the Beauty of Duke *Orgar*'s Daughter, he sent *Ethelwold*, Courtier to visit her, and bring word whether the Report was true concerning her; but this Earl, upon first sight, falling in love, put the King off with stories, and Marry'd her himself: For which breach of Trust (when he understood the truth from his own Eyes, inviting himself thither as a Guest to have prospect of the Lady, whose Beauty was admirable) he slew him, as he hunted with him in a Forest, and took her to Wife. To expiate this Murder, *Dunstan* enjoyn'd him this Penance, *viz.* not to wear his Crown in Seven Year, but during

that time, to place it on the high Altar. This, or such like Penances, as they term'd them, the superstition of those times, concluded a sufficient expiation (especially in those that had power, or could bribe well) for shedding innocent Blood, or any other heinous Crimes (if any be) of a deeper dye.

Dunstan, who was all his time a profest Enemy to the Marry'd Priests, resolv'd now (by a Trick) utterly to expell them all Offices and Dignities in the Church; and procuring the King to side with him, he called a Synod, in a place where a false Floor was made, his own Chair being seated on a Pillar or Post. After many Arguments, *pro & contra*, he starting up, prayed to God to decide this Controversy, by some signal token of his approving, or disapproving the Marriage of Priests: when giving a stamp, which was the signal to them beneath, they drew out the Pins that supported the Floor, and all but himself fell down with it; which being looked on by the Ignorant, as God's Answering his Prayers, it went against the Marry'd Priests, insomuch, that they who would not forsake their Wives and Children, were disenabled to bear any Office in the Church.

Stories
related
of Dun-
stan.

Of this *Dunstan* there are many fabulous Stories related: That when a Boy, he chased away the Devil, surrounded with a great company of Dogs. That an Angel open'd the Church Door for him to enter. That a Lute, without touch of Hands, at his command play'd, hanging upon the Wall, *Gaudet in Caelis Anima sanctorum*, &c. That a great Beam being loose, he set it to rights with only making the sign of the Cross upon it. But above all, being at his Forge making a Chalice, the Devil tempting him to denlement, in the shape of a beautiful Woman, with his red hot Tongues he caught him by the Nose, which caus'd him to roar so horribly, that all the Neighborhood were afrighted. Many other the like, but enough of these Monkish Stories.

As for King *Edgar*, when he had entered into *Wales*, and subdu'd the Rebelling *Welsh-men*, wasting the County of *Glamorgan*, and the Country of *Odo*, within ten days after he sickned; and dying, was *Edgar* buried at *Glastenbury*, when he had Reigned sixteen *dies* years; leaving his Son *Edward* to succeed him.

Edward, Sir-named the *Elder*, by some called the *Martyr*, coming to the Crown, found many troublesome difficulties to struggle with. For not being held the Legitimate Heir, some powerful Persons sided with his Brother *Ethelred*, Born in lawful Wedlock; the chief of which opponents was *Alferus* Duke of *Mercia*: Another Objection was likewise pleaded against him, because he favoured the Marry'd Priests; restoring them, and turning out the Monks, who were said to hold up all the Religion in the Land: upon which account an Army was rais'd to defend the Monasteries; especially such as were contain'd within the Province of East *Anglia*: but the matter ended rather in Arguments than Arms. For *Dunstan*, as has been said before, carried it for the Monks by the fall of the Floor, supposed to have been done by Miracle, at the Council of *Calne*.

His Son Edward succeeds him

This Danger was no sooner over, but he fell into a far worse; a secret Conspiracy being laid against him by his Step-mother, Queen *Alfrith*, Daughter to *Orgarus*, or *Ordgarus*, of whom I have spoken somewhat already; which was effected in this manner.

The King hunting for his Diversion, not far from the Castle where his Step-mother and her Son *Elred*, *Egelred*, or *Ethelred* resided, call'd to pay them a visit in the Stirrup, whilst his Company pursued the Chase. The malicious Queen perceiving he would not alight, feign'd her self over-joy'd to see him, and presented him with a Glass of Wine; which, whilst he was drinking, a suborned villain, upon her giving the sign, stabb'd him in the back

Edgar murder'd by his Step-Mother

with a Knife: *Edgar* finding himself thus treacherously wounded, set spurs to his Horse, but fainting thro' loss of Blood, fell, and was taken up by a Shepherd; yet dyed, without being capable of telling who had thus barbarously Murder'd him; so that he was Buried by the Country People at the Town of *Warham*, they not knowing him to be the King; there his Body continued 3 years, and then Duke *Alferus* caused it to be taken up, honourably Intering it in the *Minster* of *Shaftsbury*; where it is reported, so many Miracles happen'd, that he was Canoniz'd a Saint. and set down in the *Roman Kalendar* as a Martyr. He Reign'd about 4 years, and was thus barbarously Murder'd, *Anno* 979. to whom succeeded *Elred*, or *Egelred*; or as some call him, *Ethelred*.

*Elred
comes to
the
Crown.*

This Prince, Son to *Edgar* and *Alfrith*, came to the Crown when he was about 10 years old: and being informed of the manner of his Brother *Edward's* Death, being slain by his Mothers means; he not only detested the Crime, but wept abundantly; which so enrag'd the Queen, (as also his refusing to receive the Crown) that snatching a Wax-taper from the Altar, she beat him with it unmercifully; which caused in him such an Antipathy, that he never after could endure to have a Wax-Candle set before him. *Dunstan* also for a long time refus'd to Crown him; because, as he alledg'd, at his Baptizing he had besou'd the Font; which he further said, was an ill Omen, forerunning the Mischief he would do to the Church. However the Queens Commands, and some under-hand Gifts, brought him to a Compliance: after which, he had a long Reign viz. 38 years: but very troublesome and unfortunate to the Kingdom, as *Dunstan* is reported to have Prophesied in these Words:

*Dun-
stan's
Prophecy.*

That, for as much as he came to the Kingdom by the Death of his Brother, and thro' the Conspiracy of the wicked Conspirators, and other English-men, they

should not be without Blood-shedding and Sword, till there came a People of an unknown Tongue, that should bring them into Thralldom; neither should that Trespas be passed over without long vengeance.

Not long after the Coronation, a Cloud was seen throughout the Land; appearing, the one part like Blood, and the other like Fire: and in his third year the Danes return'd, Landing in divers parts of this Kingdom, destroying Southampton, and slaying the Inhabitants, or leading them away Captive: from whence they Marched to the Isle of Thanet, killing all in their way, especially the Clergy, whose Houses they level'd with the ground. Other Troops of them landed in Cornwall, Cheshire, Sussex; and, as *Fabian* says, consumed a great part of London with Fire; Blood now flowing again like Water, and nothing but pitious Crys and Lamentations to be heard. This Progress of the Danes was furthered, through an unhappy Difference between the King and Bishop of Rochester; which mightily retarded the raising of Forces so timely as they ought to have been, for the repressing the barbarous Enemies, that like a torrent over-run the Country, which oblig'd the K. to grant them large Sums of Money, to purchase Peace of a Faithless Enemy. For *Anlaf*, the Danish King, or chief Leader (tho' he promised in order to clear it, that he would become a Christian) having receiv'd much Money, with promise of more, nevertheless plunder'd as he went, and carrying the Booty to his Ships, left the Coast and sail'd to Denmark.

Danes
invade
England.

These Miseries were closely follow'd by a violent Sickness, of the Bloody-flux and burning Fevers, which carry'd off great numbers; also a Murrain fell amongst the Cattle: and Justice being, as it were, asleep during these Disorders, the Land was much pestered with Thieves and dissolute persons, who robbed and oppressed the People.

Death of
Dunstan.

About the Eleventh Year of this King's Reign, some say the Ninth, *Dunstan* Dyed. and was succeeded in the Archiepiscopal See of *Canterbury* by *Ethelgarus*, or (as *Jornalensis* writeth) *Stilgarus*. Not long after whose Death, the *Danes*, breaking the Peace they had sworn to, again entered the Land; and tho' great Sums were given them, they had no sooner spent it, but they fell to plundering the People; and finally besieged *London*; but were beaten off by the Valour of the Citizens: upon which they retir'd into *Essex*, *Sussex*, *Kent* and *Hampshire*; making such miserable spoil and slaughter in their way, that whole Villages and Towns were deserted; the People flying for the safety of their Lives to remoter parts, with their Cattle, and other Necessaries as they could conveniently carry with them for their support. Upon this to quiet the cruel Invaders, a Tribute was settled, and exacted with great Rigor from the Natives, (who before were but in a poor and miserable condition for the greater part) which from 10000 l. was brought in the process of five or six Years, to 40000 Pound *per Annum*; and this Money was called *Dane-gilt*; the *Danes* at the same time living on free-quarter in the Houses of the *English*, abusing their Wives and Daughters as often as they pleased, the Men not daring to contradict it at the peril of their Lives; nay further, were compelled, on all occasions, to show them high respect, and call them Lord *Danes* (since corruptly *Lurdane*, a by word for a Lazy fellow) for whilst the *Danes* lived an idle Life, the *English* were oblig'd to Till the Ground for them, and feed them with the Fruits of their Labour; yet all too little to please them; for many times to make themselves pastime, or rather to wast their number, they would cut their Throats as they were drinking; which at last became so common, they durst not drink in the company of a *Dane*, unless the Party who drank had a pledge, that is, another

Man

Man to watch and secure his Life, and then he did the like for him; and thus, some say, the manner of pledging one another descended to us; tho' now its used rather for the sake of Drunkenness and destroying, than securing Mens Lives.

The King thinking to remove this plague by strengthening himself with Alliances abroad, Married *Emma*, the Daughter of *Richard* Duke of *Normandy*; yet this not much availing, the *Normans* being at continual War with the *French*, and *Rollo* their first Duke being a *Dane*, they could not, or ear'd not to assist him with any Forces; whereupon he took another course; sending secret and strict Commissions to all the Governours of the Cities and Towns in *England*, that on *St. Brice's* Day, at the hour appointed, the *Danes* should be suddenly Massacred; which was accordingly perform'd: both Men and Women, whom they had grievously injured, falling upon them by surprise, repay'd them in their own Coin, by cutting their Throats, as they had served many Thousands of the *English*. This fatal News flying to *Denmark* by some that escaped, another Army in a little time, Landed under *Swane* their King; committing far greater Outrages and Murders, if possible, than the former; till 30000 Pound was given to buy a Peace: which though concluded, lasted not long ere they broke forth into the same violence again; and storming *Canterbury*, slew, as some Authors write, 9000 Monks, and other Religious Men in that City: and after forcing a great Summ of Money from *Alphegus* the Arch-bishop, they nevertheless Perfidiously stoned him to death at *Greenwich*.

The King perceiving his Country thus ruined, and not able to relieve it, took with him Queen *Emma* and his two Sons *Alfred* and *Edward*, and sailed to *Normandy*; where he was received by that Duke very courteously. At his departure though he left divers noble Hostages in the hands of the *Danes*,

Ethelred
Marries
Emma,
Daughter
to Ri-
chard D.
of Nor-
mandy.

Ethelred
with his
Family
retire to
Nor-
mandy.

as a pledge of Peace, yet *Swane* March'd to *St. Edmundsbury* in *Suffolk*; Ravageing the Country, and demanding Tribute for *St. Edmund's* Lands; which the People refused, alledging, they held not of the Crown of *England*, but were free from the King's Tributes; upon which he wasted the Country, maliciously defacing the Monument of King *Edmund* the Martyr, some time before shot to death by the *Danes*, as has been mention'd; but here the Judgment of God overtook him; for the People fearing his Tyranny, and falling to Fasting and Prayers to Almighty God, that he would deliver them from this Cruelty; *Swane* was in the midst of his Army wounded by an unknown hand, as some Authors say, with *St. Edmund's* Sword, and dyed howling and cursing; but it could not be discovered who had given him the mortal Wound. Upon this the *Danes* Crowned *Canute* his Son; who hearing King *Egelred* or *Ethelred* was returning, barbarously caused the Noses and Hands of the Hostages to be cut off.

Ethelred
through
Grief
dies.

The King Landing came to *London*, where, through Grief, he fell into a desperate Sickness; which ended his Life, after he had Reigned unprosperously 36 Years, and was Buried at *St. Paul's Church*, behind the Quire, with little Solemnity. This King made many good Laws, punishing corrupt Judges, using his utmost endeavours for the Welfare of his Subjects, and the Establishment of the Church.

Divisions
at Rome
through
the ill Li-
ving of
the
Popes.

It may be here asked, why the Bishops of *Rome*, seeing the Church of *England*, out of which they claimed a Stipend, thus miserably afflicted by *Papans*, did not endeavour to rescue it her self, or stir up such Princes in whose Hands the Power was to do it? To this I answer, Their Sins being very great, caused God to punish them with Divisions and Schisms among themselves; for Pope *John* the Thirteenth, of whom *Dunstan* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury* Receiv'd his Pall, Proved so infamously wicked,

at he committed Incest, Adultery, and all other
 ces, cruelly tormenting and persecuting his own
 cardinals; putting out the Eyes of some, cutting
 the Tongues of others, and dismembring not a
 w; some say he drank Healths to the Devil, fired
 houses, and made the *Lateran* a Stews; for which,
 and other Monstrous Wickednesses he was justly de-
 sed by the Emperor, with the consent of the Pre-
 es; and *Leo* placed in the Chair; but by the
 interest his Harlots made, he got in again and
 trust out *Leo*; tho' in the end being taken in Adul-
 ry, the Husband of the Woman gave him so many
 wounds that he dyed. After whom, *Benedict* the
Fifth receiv'd the Pope-dom; but the Emperor
 posed him, and set up *Leo* again, and compell'd
 em to Subscribe to his Election. To *Leo* suc-
 ceded *John* the *Fourteenth*, whom the Citizens,
 yning with *Petrus* the Emperor's Captain, im-
 prisoned for his Cruelty and Oppression; but the
 Emperor coming with an Army, and releasing him,
 cruelly reveng'd himself on his Enemies; put-
 ting many to Death by extraordinary Torments:
Petrus he caused first to be shaved, stript naked
 and hanged by the Hair a whole Day, then set
 upon an Ass and lead through the City, after
 scourged and Banished; and thus you see how the
 Holy Father followed the Injunction of the Gospel,
 which commands us *To love our Enemies*, Luke
 8, &c.

To *John* succeeded *Benedict* the *Fifth*; who for
 Tyranny was cast in prison, and there strangled,
 as some say, starv'd to death. Then Pope *Do-*
minus the *Second*; after whom succeeded *Boniface* the
Eighth; who for fear of the Citizens, fled with
 the Treasure of St. Peter to *Constantinople*: upon
 which they set up *John* the *Fifteenth*; but *Boniface*
 turning, by Bribes got again to be Pope; putting
 out the Eyes of *John*, and famishing him in Prison;
 himself suddenly dying soon after, his dead Carcass
 was

was ignominiously dragged through the Streets of Rome, the People every where exclaiming against him. Next Pope *Benedict the Seventh* was chosen by the consent of *Otho the Emperor*, and succeeded by *Gilbert* a Monk, who practising Necromancy as is said, thereby got into *St. Peter's Chair*. The Pope *John the 15th.* and Pope *John the 18th.* The latter, *Gregory the 5th.* thrust out, and placed himself in the See; but *Crescentius* and the Romans depos'd him, and restored *John* again to the Popedom. Then *Gregory* applying himself to the Emperor *Otho the Third*, by his help gain'd his point, took *John*, put out his Eyes, and cast him in Prison, where he dyed in great misery. Thus shamefully did the Church of Rome degenerate from that which we call'd Primitive; becoming as it were, Sink of all uncleanness. One thing more is to be noted, that during the *Danish* Persecution in *England*, the Monks that were here, many of them rather fled away, than as formerly covered their stay and encrease their number; which makes plainly appear, they rather followed their own Interests, than the Doctrine they Preach'd. But to return:

Edward
Surnam'd
Ironside
succeeds
his Father
Ethelred.

Edmund, Sir-named *Ironside*, for his Valour and Hardyness, succeeded his Father *Egelred* or *Ethelred* at what time the *Danes* under *Canute* were powerful in the Kingdom of *England*; many of the Nobles and Clergy also favour'd the said *Canute*, to put an end, as they said, to the War that had long wasted the Nation; especially *Ederick* Duke of *Merca* who from time to time betray'd all King *Edmund's* Councils to him. However he rais'd an Army, and many cruel Battles were fought, but Fortune carrying the Victory sometimes to one side, and sometimes to the other, a certain Knight, when the two Armies were ready to engage, getting upon a Hill the better to be heard, thus expressed himself:

Worthy Sirs, Daily we dye and none hath the end of Victory

ry; and when the Knights be dead on either part, the Dukes, compelled by necessity, will accord, or they must fight alone; and it seemeth this Kingdom sufficient for two which heretofore contain'd Princes; but if the Covetousness of Dominion in two be so great, that neither can be content to take and live peaceably by the other, nor the one submit under the other; then let them fight alone that be Lords alone; for if all Men fight at the last Men shall be slain, so that none will be left under Government, nor be able to defend the King that be against the Invasion of strange Nations.

Upon these words, it is said, that the two Kings agreed to decide the matter with their own Swords, Hide Mead, a kind of an Island made by the winding of the Severn; both Armies keeping distance as Spectators: but King Edmund being very strong of Body, and wonderful hardy, so valiantly behav'd himself, that Canute being by him dangerously wounded, and driven to the brink of the River, cry'd out in these words, viz.

Hold, noble Brother, why should we thus rashly danger our Lives, the Kingdom is large enough for us, if you therefore consent to divide it between us, we shall then be at peace, and live together as Brethren in Unity.

King Edmund upon this Overture paused some time, and considering, that though it had been agreed the Danes should depart the Land if their Champion was disabled, or himself were subdued, should quickly resign the Kingdom, yet their offering to break promise, giving him reason to conclude they would not stand to their Covenant, he at length consented, and they embraced each other to the sight of both Armies. Upon this Agreement the Danes had the Northern and Eastern parts of the Kingdom, and Edmund contented himself with the Western and Southern Provinces; both Princes ratifying this Agreement by their Oaths, at the high Altar.

Edmund
and Canute engaged singly.

Peace between Edmund and Canute.

Edmund
kill'd by
Edrick
Duke of
Mercia,

Altar. But unhappy *Edmund* surviv'd not long
ter this Peace, for treacherous *Edrick*, Duke
Mercia (some say one of his Sons) to curry favour
with the *Dane*, whom he found to be the stronger,
took an opportunity as *K. Edm.* was easing himself
to get under the Vault, and inhumanely run a Spear
up his Fundament, which ended his Life; then cut
ting off his Head, he fled with it to *Canute*,
delivering it to him besmeared with Blood, crying
Hail sole Monarch of England, for behold the Head
of thy Co-partner in the Kingdom. *Canute*, how
barous (in other matters) soever he was, inwardly
detesting this Treason, at that time smoothed his
angry Brow, telling the Traytor, that for his
service he would reward him by an Advancement
above all the Noble Men in *England*; nor in this
sense failed he in his promise; for by this means
tho' he gained an entire Sovereignty over the King-
dom, yet when he came to *London*, not thinking
to trust a Person that had been so treacherous to
Prince deserving well of him, since upon any
he might serve him after the same manner; upon
some slender pretence caveling with him; he caused
his Head to be stricken off, and placed on the
highest Pinacle of the Tower, according as
Treason had justly deserv'd.

Who is
beheaded
for the
same.

Canute
gets Ed-
mund's
Children
into his
hands.

Canute's next project was, to get into his hands
the two Sons of *Edmund*, viz. *Edmund* and *Edward*,
which he effected, by decoying them from their
Mother ere she knew of the Death of her Husband.
These Children he sent to *Swane* his Brother, then
Reigning in *Denmark*, requesting him to Murder
them privately, that it might not be known, to give
distast to the *English*, whom he had tolerably per-
suaded for the King's Death, by the Execution of
the Murderer. However *Swane* detesting so base
thing, sent them privily to *Salomon* King of *Hungary*,
who received them very obligingly; where *Ed-
mund* Married his Daughter; and *Edward* was Mar-
ried

to the Daughter of *Henry* the fourth Empe-
rour of *Germany*.

Canute thus settled in the Government, called an
Assembly of the Bishops, Barons and other dignified
Persons; wherein it was debated, whether by the
Treaty made between him and King *Edmund*, any
Legal remembrance was made for the Brethren or
Children of the said *Edmund*, by any partition or
Division of Land; whereunto the *English* Nobles re-
solved (though falsely) that there was none; affirm-
ing moreover with an Oath (for the King's plea-
sure) that they, to the utmost of their powers,
would renounce the Blood of K. *Edmund*, by acting a-
gainst them upon all occasions; by which Answer and
Denials, without doubt they design'd to have
secured themselves deeply into the King's favour;
but they were shamefully deceived; for the Ty-
rannical being naturally jealous of all the *English*, caused
the greater part of them whom he knew had been
Faithful to *Edmund* and his Royal Issue, to be either
Slaughtered, or sent into miserable Exile.

Being at this time advis'd of the Death of his Bro-
ther *Swane* in *Denmark*, he prepared a great Navy
and Sailed thither to take possession of that King-
dom; which done, he returned again to *England*; where
he was received in great Triumph, and Mar-
ried *Emma*, Widow to K. *Egfred*; by whom he
had a Son called *Hardiknute*, or *Hardikanute*.
After this he Assembled again the Nobles at *Oxford*;
where it was agreed, That the *English* and *Danes*
should hold the Laws made by K. *Edgar*, they be-
lieved to be the best and most reasonable among all
Laws then in being. Now most of the *Danes*
living among the *English*, submitted to be Baptiz'd,
and professed the Christian Faith: *Canute* him-
self having embraced it, went to *Rome*, where he
was Royally entertain'd; and returning again, Go-
vern'd in all 20 Years: when dying, he was buried
in the old Monastery at *Winchester*, leaving behind

Canute
takes
possession
of *Den-*
mark.

Death of
Canute.

him

him two Sons, *Harold* and *Hardiknut*.

He is said to be so great an Enemy to flattery, that being at *Southampton*, and an Ear-wig Cower, in hopes to ingratiate himself, telling him *That he was not only Lord of the Land but of the Sea, and that the Winds and Waves were subject to his command*; he, to upbraid him, caused a Chair to be placed on the Sand, and commanded the Sea that was flowing, not to touch his Royal Robes; but the Tyde regardless of this, a rowling Wave immediately dashed him up to the Thighs, whereupon he retreated, saying to the flatterer, *Now you plainly see that all the Might and Power of Kings is vanity, and that none is worthy to bear the Name of King, but he that hath all things subject to his Lord*. After which time, it is said, he would never suffer the Crown to come upon his Head, but commanded it to be placed upon the Crucified Head at *Windsor*.

Harold
succeeds
his Father
Canute.

Harold, Sur-named *Harefoot* for his Swiftnes, second Son to *Canute*, succeeded his Father in the Kingdom of *England*, though *Goodwin* Earl of *Kent*, who bore a mighty sway in those Days, was against it; yet the Lords on the North side of *Thames*, joyning with the *Londoners*, set the Crown upon his Head; which *Goodwin* perceiving, and designing in time to bring the Crown into his own Family, seemed very well pleased with *Harold* labouring with much Assiduity to ingratiate himself with the new King; to which end, he made it his endeavour to get *Alfred* and *Edward*, Sons of *Egbert*, into his hands, that he might present them as a Sacrifice of atonement. This in part he afterwards effected, though not in this Kings Reign, as formerly by mistake have recorded, but in his Brother *Hardiknut's*, as shall hereafter be related. Of this *Harold* I find nothing memorable, but the Banishment of *Emma*, his Step-mother; whom he deprived of her Treasure; upon which she retired into *Normandy*.

Thus when he had Reigned 4 Years, or there-
at, in much Luxury and Riot, he dyed, leaving
Hardikanute, before Reigning over Denmark, to suc-
ceed him in England.

His
Death.

Hardikanute, second Son to Canute, by Emma
Canute's Widow, whom he Married coming to the
Crown, as has been said, succeeded his Brother
Canute, and when Crowned, received Goodwin into
his Court, who had Married Canute's Sister, or as some
say, his Daughter. Goodwin's first business was, to
drive out Alfred and Edward out of Normandy, under
a smooth pretence, That he, with other Nobles,
were designed and were ready to Crown Alfred
King, and expel the Danes; who now were but
few in England, being mostly dead or gone into
Denmark. The Messenger that was sent, only found
Edward in Normandy, Edward being gone into Hun-
gary; to whom he deliver'd Goodwin's Letters;
which he joyfully read, and with several Norman
Gentlemen came to Southampton, where Goodwin
met him with a considerable train of Armed Men,
and convey'd him towards London. But being come
to Guild-down, he commanded his Men to fall upon
the Norman Gentlemen that accompany'd the
King, and put them all to the Sword; which
done, Alfred was convey'd to the Isle of Ely; where
being Imprisoned, his Eyes were put out, after
which a Stake being fastned in the Ground, his
Body was opened, and one end of his Guts taken
out and nailed to it, then he was pricked round
the Stake with sharp Swords, till his Bowels were
driven out: Thus dyed this Innocent Alfred, or
some name him Alured, being the right Heir to
the Crown.

Succeed-
ed by
Hardika-
nute his
Brother.

Misera-
ble Death
of Prince
Alfred
by the
wicked
contri-
vance of
Earl
Good-
win.

When the English Lords heard of this Cruelty,
committed on the Person of him who should have
been their King, they were excessively enrag'd;
and bound themselves in an Oath, that Goodwin
should die a severer Death than Edrick the Traytor
against

against his Lord King *Edmund* had done; this he had certainly effected, had he not fled into *Denmark* where he remained four years; however they perscrib'd him, and seiz'd upon all his Lands and other Effects.

It is related, that this King went to *Rome*, where he founded an Hospital for the English Pilgrims, giving many rich Gifts to the Pope, burthening the Land with a yearly Tribute called *Rome-scor*. He added many Ornaments to the Church of *Winchester*. Built *St. Benets* in *Norfolk*, before an Hermitage, also *St. Edmunds-bury*, that *K. Athelstan* had ordained for a College of Priests, he turned into an Abby of Monks, of *St. Benet's* order; but considering the shortness of his Reign, which exceeded not above two Years, these things may be questioned. He dyed at *Lambeth*, as some say, of excess. With him expired the Danish Monarchy in *England*, he leaving no Legitimate Children to succeed him: so that the *Saxon* Line re-entered in *England* called the Confessor. The *Danes* having thus harassed this Land above 250 Years, some say 251 from their first invading in the time of *King Brightricus*) gave over troubling it more Anno 1043. Whereupon

Edward
Confessor
made
King.

Edward, called the Confessor, the rightful Heir, descended of the *Saxon* Line; Second Son to *Egbert* or *Ethelred* being sent for by the Lords out of *Normandy*, took quiet possession of the Throne; tho' himself confessed, considering the usage his Brother met with, he doubted much the fickle Humour of the English; but having sufficient pledges of the Fidelity, those fears vanished, and he was Crowned at *Winchester*, Anno 1043. by *Edsin*, or *Edgar* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*; and not long after Married *Edithe*, Daughter to Earl *Goodwin*; tho' it is said, he never bedded, or carnally knew her all the time she continued his Wife; whether it was from Hate to her Kindred, or his Love to Chastity remains doubtful.

Marries
Earl
Goodwin's
Daughter
but refuses her
Bed.

No sooner had *Edward* taken upon him the Government of the Realm, but he managed affairs with great prudence and justice; being merciful and compassionate to all Men; discharging the heavy taxes, called *Danegilt*; subduing the *Scots* and *Welsh* that made Inroads on the Borders: and having no foreign Enemies to dispute with, he continued his Reign in peace and tranquility 27 Years, 6 Months, and 27 Days. He is accus'd by some for his Cruelty and hard Dealing with his Mother *Emma*, whose Marriage with *Canute* their Enemy, mightily enrag'd him: For, she being accus'd by some evil People, of Adultery, was doom'd to the tryal called *Ordealium*, to prove her Chastity; the manner of which was, that a certain number of red hot iron-shares were laid at a steps distance one from the other, over which the party accused was to pass with naked feet, blindfolded; and if the iron-shares did them no harm, they were acquitted. The Innocent Queen having passed them, and not knowing she had so done, said, *O Lord, when I come to the place of my Purgation*; when immediately her Eyes were uncovered, and seeing the danger over, she fell on her knees and gave God thanks, that he had been pleased thus to manifest her unspotted Innocency to the World; yet for all this, her hatred still continued: for stripping her of her jewels and costly Attire, he caused her to be strictly kept in the Abby of *Worrel*, or *Wormel*, and to undergo the Examination of the Clergy, notwithstanding the intercession the Nobles made on her behalf. He dealt he better by *Editha* his Queen, but kept her in Prison during the four years of her Father's punishment. About this time a terrible blazing comet appeared, like a bloody Sword; after which ensued a great Mortality of People and Cattel; and, by Lightning the Corn was wonderfully blasted and wasted, insomuch that a Famine ensued.

Queen
Emma
put to the
tryal of
Ordeal.

ed in Eng-
land.

William
Duke of
Nor-
mandy
visits R.
Edmund.

The King having settled his affairs, *William Duke of Normandy*, who after conquered *England*, came with a noble train to visit him, and was royally entertain'd; being dismissed after a little stay, with many rich Gifts, and as 'tis said, a secret promise from the King, that if he died without Issue, he should succeed him in the Kingdom: Upon which promise, he afterward laid great stress, as a pretension of right: nay farther, *Harold the Son of Goodwin*, diverting himself upon the Seas, a sudden Gust drove him on the Coast of *Normandy*; and being brought to the Duke, he compell'd him to swear that he would secure the Crown of *England* to his use, as far as in his power lay, if King *Edward* should die, and so was dismissed: But the Oath he afterward disclaimed, as extorted from him by Force.

Soon after this *Goodwin*, (who had raised many broils in the Kingdom by Sea, and levied War against the King) being at the Table with him at *Windsor*; one of the Earl's Sons, who was Cupbearer, stumbling as he brought in the Wine, and yet recovering; *Goodwin* cry'd, One Brother will help'd another; whereupon the King started up, in a rage, cry'd, And so might my Brother *Edward* have helped me had *Goodwin* been less cruel. Upon which, fearing the King's Anger, taking a piece of bread, he wished *It might choak him, if he were guilty of the Death of that Prince*: which answered his wish, though not his expectation, he was at that instant choaked, and dyed; and was carried to *Winchester* to be there buried: soon after the Sea breaking in, laid his Lands under water in *Kent*, which not being recovered to this day are called *Goodwin's Sands*; where many strange Vessels have suffered Shipwrack.

After the Death of his Father, *Harold* Ruled all with the King; and so won upon the favour of the Nobles and Common sort of People.

Earl
Good-
win's
Death.

that (King Edward dying at Westminster, when he Edward
had reigned 27 Years, 3 Months odd Days, and dies.
buried in the Abby, which he had greatly augmen-
ted and repaired) he procured himself to be Crown-
ed King; though he could pretend no other at most
than a Danish Title.

This Edward built St. Margaret's Church in West-
minster, removed the Bishop's See from Credington
to Exeter in Devonshire, appointing Leofrank the
first Bishop thereof; and was the first King that
cured the Struma, now called the Kings Evil; which
gift of healing remains to his Successors Kings of
England. He Likewise collected all the good Laws
of his Predecessors into one body, which many say,
is the Ground or Foundation of our Common Law:
As to Church matters, of moment little happen'd
in his time, either of Controversie or Persecution.

Harold, Son to Earl Goodwin, being the most
powerful Noble Man in the Kingdom, was Crown'd
by Aldred Arch-bishop of York; and the further to
ingratiate himself with the People, he took off the
remaining heavy Taxes, liberally bestowing the
Treasure of the late King on his Nobles, and such
others as he supposed would stand his trusty friends,
expecting a Storm from Normandy: for that Duke
had already sent Ambassadors, demanding him to
resign the Crown for his use, re minding him of
his Oath so to do; but to this he replied, *It was un-*
justly extorted from him, and whatever promise the
former King had made, being freely admitted by the
Estates of the Realm to take upon him the Crown, he
was resolved to keep and defend it with his Sword.

During these Debates, Tost Brother to Harold,
and Harold Harfager, landed with a great Army
of Danes and Norwegians at Richal upon Ouse, in
Yorkshire; committing many Outrages: against
whom he Marched with all his power, and gave them
a terrible overthrow, with the loss of almost all their
Army; the rest flying to their Ships, return'd to

Harold,
Crown'd
King.

Danes,
land a-
gain;

But are
totally de-
feated.

William
Duke of
Nor-
mandy
lands.

Fights
the Eng-
lish, and
gains an
entire
Victory.

Denmark with the heavy news of the loss of their King, and *Olave* his Son; also of *Tosto*, and *Paul* Earl of *Orkney*. A little before this fight began, a single *Dane*, on *Stamford-bridge*, stoped the whole *English Army*; till one getting under the Bridge in a Boat, run up a Spear and slew him. Now ere *Harold* could return, *William Duke of Normandy* had landed with a great force, at *Pevensey* in *Sussex* on the 8th. of *September*, Anno 1066. and fired his Fleet, thereby to take away all hopes from his Soldiers of returning, unless they became victorious and no sooner was the King arrived at *London*, but a Herauld was sent from the Duke to demand the Kingdom; who being overbold in his Expressions was dismissed with threats.

Soon after this, both Armies met in *Sussex*, on a spacious Plain, since called *Battle-field*; the Duke now sending a Monk to the King to demand the Kingdom, or otherways, for the avoiding bloodshed to decide the Controversie by single Combate but he was answered, *That a matter of this consequence should be try'd by more Swords than one*: upon which the word was given, and the Armies joyn'd in a mortal Battle, *Octo. 14.* in which, at first, the *English* had the advantage; but the King fighting like a Lion in the front of the Battle, was shot into the brain with an Arrow, and falling dead, with him fell the courage of his Army. There likewise were slain *Griffith*, and *Leofin* his Brother, most of the *English Nobility*, and as some Authors record it, 9797 ordinary Soldiers. This victory gave the *Normans* an entire possession of the Kingdom, of whose Affairs I shall speak more largely in the next Book only adding by the way, that this *Harold* was the Son of *Goodwin*, by his Wife *Sitha*, Sister to *Swane* the young King of *Denmark*; as for the time of his Reign, it continued but Nine Months and Nine Days.

Note, From the time of King *Egbert*, to *William* the Conqueror, were the following Arch-Bishops of *Canterbury*, viz.

Ethelred.
Pleimundus.
Athelmus.
Ulfelmus.
Odo.
Elfus, or
Elfinus.
Dunstan.
Ethelgarus.

Elfricus.
Siricius.
Livingus.
Eginoldus.
Edsius, or
Edsine.
Robertus
Stigandus, and
Lanfrancus.

As for *Stigand*, he was an *English* Man, who at the secret procurement of Duke *William* of *Nor-mandy*, was deposed by the Pope, and *Lanfrank* advanced as one more fit to serve his Interest.

ON

pe

W

T

Heir
fed t
tune
make
Sur n
sixth
Daug
Ene
Grel

BOOK IV.

OF THE

Three Centuries,

From *William the Conqueror,*

TO THE

Persecution of JOHN WICLIFF,

In the Reign of King Edward the Third.

WILLIAM the First of that Name,

King of *ENGLAND*.

THe *Norman* Duke, as has been said, prevailing at *Battle-field*, in which Fight the flower of the *English* Nation were slain; though *Edgar Atheling* was the true Heir to the Crown, and the *Londoners* had promised to stand by him, yet this blow of adverse Fortune sunk their courage so low, that they fear'd to make any further resistance; whereupon *William*, surnamed now the *Conqueror* (base Son to *Robert* the Sixth, Duke of *Normandy*, by *Arlete*, a Tanner's Daughter, as some *Historians* have it) finding no more Enemies to contend with, marched his Army leisurely through the Counties of *Sussex*, *Surry*, *Hamp-*

The Bi-
shops and
Nobles
repair to
the Con-
queror.

They pray
him to
take the
Govern-
ment up-
on him.

He is
Crown'd
King.

The K.
compells
the Eng-
lish to
give Ho-
stages.

shire, and *Bark-shire*, suffering his *Normans* to plun-
der, not only to enrich themselves, but more and
more to weaken the *English*, that so he might bring
them entirely under his subjection. At *Wallingford*,
passing the *Thames*, he ravaged in like manner
the Counties of *Oxford*, *Buckingham*, &c. making
a stop at *Burnhamstead*; to which place repaired
Aldred Arch-bishop of *York*, *Wolstan* Bishop of *Win-*
chester, *Walter* Bishop of *Hereford*; also the Earls
Edwin and *Morcar*, with *Edgar Atheling*, or *Ethe-*
ling, the true Heir, tendering their submission, and
paying him Homage and Allegiance, entreating him
That he would be pleased to take upon him the Admini-
stration of the Government, and be gracious in his Cle-
mency to the People of England; which he accepted
not as their bounty, but due to him in right of Con-
quest, and a pretended Title, by which he laid
claim to the Kingdom. After which he marched
his Army to *London*, and was, on *Christmas-day*
Anno 1066; or as some have it, *1067*. Crowned
King at *Westminster*, by *Aldred* Arch-bishop of *York*,
Stigand Arch-bishop of *Canterbury* being absent, o-
therwise durst or would not come into the presence of
the Conqueror.

William was no sooner settled in the Throne, but
knowing the submission of the *English* was more
through fear than respect, the better to secure the
Kingdom to himself and his posterity, he fortified
the Cinque Ports, seized on all the chief Offices of
Honour and Profit, and conferred them on his *Nor-*
mans and others, as a Recompence for their Aid in
this War. He also compelled the *English* to give
Hostages as a security of their fidelity; especially
such as were either Honourable or Potent. And to
lessen the Authority of the Clergy among the
People, (which in those days was very great) he
exempted them from all temporal Jurisdiction
causing the People in general to be disarmed, to
keep them under, and prevent any Insurrection.

Nay

Nay, he proceeded yet further, by enjoining *His rigorous be-*
 em, on great Penalties, not to meet in any num- *ginning*
 rs, especially in the Night; thereby to prevent *to settle*
 their conspiring against him for the recovery of the *his Af-*
 common Liberty: to which purpose, at Eight in *fairs.*
 the Evening, a Bell was rung in every City, Town
 and Village, at the sound of which they were com-
 manded to put out their Fire and Candle, and keep
 close in their Houses, which is yet called *Cover le*
up, or The raking up, and putting out of the Fire.
 And to lessen the strength of the Nobility, and such
 who were most forward and active, he sent them to
 Wars against the *French*, who then invaded
 Normandy, where (though they did many brave Ex-
 ploits, yet) they found but very slender Rewards;
 whilst his *Normans* here being made Lords and Go-
 vernours of all the chief places, grievously oppressed
 the People; who, instead of Redress from the
 King, upon complaining, were charged as Mutiniers,
 and Murmurers against his Government, and so
 were either fined, or underwent a Corporal punish-
 ment. Understanding likewise, that the Clergy in
 the Kingdom were very Rich, he stript them of
 their wealth under pretence, *That Thieves, Traytors and Re-*
bellious were lodg'd in Religious Houses; not only to de-
prive him of his Forfeitures, but to raise Rebellion
in time afforded them fit opportunity.

And that they might have less knowledge of the *The Laws*
 laws in being; those, together with such severe *turn'd*
 laws as he made, were translated into the *Norman* *into*
 language, upon which many ignorantly offending, *French;*
 were grievously punished. He further disannull'd all
 Patents and Grants of former Kings, making
 the *English* pay large Sums for their Renewal; and
 as could not renew, were deprived of all the
 benefit accruing thereby, their Lands being viewed,
 surveyed and taxed at an extravagant rate. He erect-
 ed many new Courts of Judicature further to op-
 press the People; he oblig'd them to follow him upon
 every

Churches
Monasteries and
Villages
destroyed
to make
a Forest.

God's
Judgement
follows.

He divides
Land to
his Favourites.

every removal of his Court ; so that being wearied and tyred out with excessive trouble and charges many were oblig'd to give over their Suits, and lay down with their Wrongs unredressed. And to make way for his *Normans* to land securely, if the *English* should rebell under these Oppressions, he laid waste, without regard, a great number of Towns, Villages, Churches and Religious Houses, in *Hampshire* on the Sea Coast, opposite to *Normandy*, of circumference 60 Miles, under pretence of making a Forest for his Recreation in Hunting; calling it *New Forest* : But God seemed to be displeased at this irreligious Devastation of so many Churches and Consecrated Places Dedicated to his Worship for not only the Son of *Robert* his Eldest Son, was slain there, but also *William*, Sur-named *Rufus*, his darling Son, who succeeded him in the Throne, was shot there with an Arrow by one *Tyrrel*, and dyed of that wound. He seized into his hands the Forests and Chases in *England*, publishing severe punishments against those that should presume to disturb or kill his Game; as the loss of Eyes, Limbs, &c. He divided the Land, in a manner amongst his Favourites; eight Hydes of Land, each containing 20 Acres, being then a Knights Fee. The Tenures of which he reserved for Knights in fee simple in *Capite*; and by this means he had the disposal of the Bodies of their Heirs in Marriage, retaining in his custody the wardship of their Inheritance, 'till they should accomplish 21 years, thereby during the Minority bringing the Profits of the Land into his own Coffers. And by his Example, many great ones did the like; which in some cases continued a bad Precedent to this day.

Thus have I set down the Model of a rigorous and sharp Government, under a conquering Prince, and dwelt the longer on it, to shew the danger we are in, if it should ever be our misfortune to fall into such another hand; to which low Ebb

ht to be our earnest wishes and prayers, this
ishing Kingdom may never sink again. But to
ceed:

This King allow'd the Bishops a separate Juris-
diction from that of the Laity; enjoyning all Pro-
ces and other matters relating to Ecclesiastical
Affairs, to proceed to Censure and Judgment in
their Courts; and for the punishment of Offenders,
as need required, they had liberty to take the aid
of the secular power. Long he had not been set-
tled, ere the *English* rebell'd in several parts of the
Kingdom; fortifying *Exeter*, which City he took,
putting to death a great many of the Inhabitants, and
others as he found in it. And about the third
Year of his Reign, *Harold* and *Canute*, Sons to
the King of *Denmark*, laying claim to *England*,
brought considerable Forces in the Northern parts,
ravaging the Country in a cruel manner, many of
the discontented *English* joining with them; so that
in this Contest, the City of *York* was burnt (the
greater part of it) to the Ground, with the stately
Minster of *St. Peters*; but after some hot Conflicts,
wherein many were slain, the *Danes* were routed,
and compelled to leave the Land: after which the
King, to be reveng'd on the *English* who had as-
sisted them, laid all the Country waste, from *York*
to *Durham*, and so it continued the space of Nine
Years, causing so great a Famine, that tho' no unclean
thing was left uneaten, yet many Thousands were
perished to death.

*A Rebel-
lion a-
gainst
him soon
quiesced.*

*The
Danes.
land and
are dri-
ven out
again.*

*A misera-
ble wast
in the
North.*

Soon after this, *Malcolm* King of *Scots* invaded
England, putting some Thousands to the Sword;
King *William* pursued them into *Scotland* with
a lamentable destruction, that *Malcolm*, to
secure a Peace, was constrain'd to submit, and
pay him Homage for that Kingdom.

*The Scots
invade
England
and are
routed.*

The Conqueror supposing himself now freed of
his Enemies, going with a small Train to view
the River, and other Sea Ports, was surpriz'd by the

*King
Kentish- William*

surprized
in Kent,
and com-
pelled to
confirm
their
Customs.

Kentish-men; who carrying boughs before them, that they could not be discerned from the Wood he fell into their Ambush, near the City of *Canterbury*, being headed by *Stigand* Arch-bishop of the See, and *Egelsine* Abbot of *St. Austins*; who throwing down their Boughs, and presenting their Weapons, the Arch-bishop stepping forward, in the name of the rest, addressed himself to the King in these or the like words.

Behold, most Noble King, the Commons of Kent assembled to demand a Confirmation of their ancient Rights, Laws and Liberties. The which, if it be your pleasure to grant them, they are willing to own you the King, and submit to your Government; but if you refuse their request, they are every one firmly resolved to venture their Lives in defence of them, and immediately to give you Battle.

This so startled the King, That pausing a while and perceiving the necessity of yielding to their demands, or that his Life and Fortune lay at stake (notwithstanding his haughty mind) he was constrained to grant their Requests; signing the Writing presented by them, and promising to confirm more amply: whereupon they threw down their Arms and shouted for joy. By this stratagem this County enjoys the Privileges they held in *Edward the Confessor's* Reign, in many things differing from those of other Counties. The obstinacy of the *English* at this time was such (in many parts of the Kingdom) to regain their Liberty, that finding all his severities could not curb and bridle them, and at the same time, fearing they would set up *Edgar Atheling*, the true Heir, which many earnestly endeavour'd to do, he found himself oblig'd to soften his Rigor in general, by swearing to maintain inviolably, *The Laws of Edward the Confessor* tho' soon after he infringed his Oath, by taking from the Abby of *St. Albans*, all the Land between *Barnet* and *London-Stone*.

The King
abates
his Rigor
to the
English.

And at an Assembly of the *English* Clergy at *Win-*
chester (whither also resorted two Cardinals, sent
 by Pope *Alexander* the Second) The King being
 present, divers Bishops, Abbots and Priors were
 deposed from their Ecclesiastical dignities, without
 any reasonable cause or crimes objected against
 them; the intent only being to advance Strangers,
 who he concluded would be more faithful to him;
 amongst others, *Stigand* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*
 was deprived of that Metropolitan See, The main
 thing objected against him being, That he had his
 See without Licence, or lawful Authority from
 the Court of Rome; and to him *Lanfrank* succeed-
 ed, and one *Thomas*, a Norman, Canon of *Bayonne*,
 was at the same time prefer'd to the Archiepisco-
 pal See of *York*.

Several
 Prelates
 deprived
 of their
 dignities.

At a Synod held in *London*, several Bishopricks
 were translated from one place to another; as *Sel-*
by to *Chichester*, *Credington* to *Exeter*, *Shirbourn*
Salisbury, *Dorchester* to *Lincoln*, &c. and there
 arising a contention between the two Arch-bishops
 about the Primacy; the King decided the Contro-
 versie, by appointing *Lanfrank* Arch-bishop of *Can-*
terbury, Primate of all *England*, and *Thomas* Arch-bp.
York, Primate of *England* only; so that he and
 his successors from this time, became sub-ordinate
 to the Archiepiscopal See of *Canterbury*. *St. Paul's*
 Church in *London* being at this time fired, as it was
 supposed, by Lightning, the greater part of it being
 burnt, a Contribution was exacted from the Clergy
 and Laity, with which Money it was Rebuilt
 more stately and magnificent than it ever had been;
 the Minster of *York*, destroyed in the War with
 the Danes, was Rebuilt at the charge of the two
 Arch-bishops.

A Synod
 held at
 London.

St. Pauls
 burnt and
 rebuilt.

And now most of the Sees being fill'd with Bishops
 who were strangers, the Bishop of *Rome*, (who to-
 gether with the King, upheld them in their digni-
 ties, relying on them as forwarders of his ambi-
 tious

*The Pope
incroaches
on the
Church.*

tious purposes, began more than ever to intrude and encroach upon the *English Church*; not only making the Bishops his Tributaries, but fleecing the inferiour Clergy also; sending his Legates to inspect Religious Houses, and where ever they found any considerable sums, by one means or other they made prey of it; alledging, for some colour or pretence, that they ought not to heap up Riches, but live strictly a poor Life, according to the intent of the first institution of their orders: to which end, at the Synod held in *London* it was decreed,

*A decree
against
covetousness
in Monks.*

That Monks should have nothing proper to themselves, and if any were found concealing Riches, and dyed confessed, they should not be admitted Burial in Consecrated Ground; and to hinder their Complaints, was further decreed, That none should be admitted to speak in the Council, except the Bishops and Abbots without leave first obtained of the Metropolitan.

Yet the Bishops in some measure opposed the Pope's proceedings, and crossed him in his purposes, by standing up for the Martyr'd Priests against the Monks, and excluding the Monks out of Church Benefices, into which they were crept by the favour of *Wilkinus* Bishop of *Winchester*; though some time afterward he joyned with the other Bishops in compelling them, and placed about 40 Canons for his own part, in the room of the Monks that were out. And thus it held during the Life of *Lanfrank*, an *Italian* Lumbard, who sat as Arch-Bishop 19 years, when falling into the Displeasure of *William*, Son named *Rufus*, who succeeded the Conqueror, he is held to dye of Grief for the Miscarriages that happened in the Church.

*Gregory
the 7th. a
wicked
Pope.*

During these Transactions in *England*; *Gregory* the 7th. whose Name before was *debrand*, enflam'd *Rome*, and hurled War and Confusion into the Empire; which got him the Name of *Helbrand*. Coming to the Papacy by an undue Election; contrary to the intent of the

eror, and the greater part of the Cardinals, having been said to poison several Popes to make way to the Pontificate; he no sooner entered upon, but he rent the Church with Schisms; as a bad omen of which, his Chair, a little before made of strong Timber, broke in pieces under him whilst he was contending with the Emperor Henry the IV. and Excommunicating him, and to whom he bore so inveterate a Malice, that he stirred several daring Ruffians to Murder him, and for no other reason, than a dislike of his wicked proceedings. Particularly as he went to St. Marys the *Aventin* Hill for his Devotion, a Villain was placed on a House-top, to rowl down a mighty stone, thereby to crush him in pieces; but God caused it to miss the Emperor, and the Party falling himself with it, had his brains dashed out: upon which this Pope, enquiring of the Host or sacrament, how he might be reveng'd on Henry; and making no reply, he impiously cast it into the fire, contrary to the perswasions of the Cardinals present, who would have resisted it; whereupon *John's* Bishop of *Portua* owned, *The Church of Rome in her chief-Bishop had committed so horrid a fault, that for it they were all worthy to burn a live man that adhered to him.*

He cast the Sacrament into the fire.

When this Pope had excommunicated the Emperor, and raised his Subjects in Rebellion, he crown'd *Rodolphus* Duke of *Suevia*, saying,

He raises Rebellion against the Emperor.

Petra dedit Petro, Petrus Diadema Rodolpho:

The Rock gave the Crown to Peter, Peter gives it to Rodolphus.

This oblig'd the Duke to engage in a War against the Emperor, to whom he had sworn Alliance; but his end was miserable: nor did the Pope's Blessing avail him in any thing; for after three

three Battles, in which *Rodolphus* was mostly wounded, encountering a fourth time, he was totally routed; when flying, very grievously wounded in his right wrist, to *Hyperbolicus*, and finding his Death near, caused the Bishops, and the chief of those that had been confederated with him, to come into his presence; when lifting up his wounded Arm, he said;

Rodolphus's speech to the Prelates.

*This is the hand with which I made my Oath upon the Sacrament to my Lord Henry the Emperor, which also through your Instigation hath so often fought against him in vain, and now on it the Punishment is justly fallen; therefore I command you go immediately and submit your selves to his Clemency, and faithfully perform your Oaths and Allegiance to him; soon after which he dyed: Yet the Pope took no warning by it, but continued his inveterate Hatred; raising up so many Enemies to Henry, as brought him in to such a streight, that he was constrain'd to submit himself; and came with his Empress and Son, a Youth, to the Pope's Castle at *Canusium* bare-footed, and waiting at the Gate three Days was at length admitted, and absolved by the Intercession of *Matilda*, the Pope's Concubine; a Woman who had left her Husband to live in Adultery with him, and was usually called *St. Peter's Daughter*.*

The Emperor, his Empress and Son waited three days at the Pope's Gate for admittance.

This Pope fainted *Liberius* the *Arian* Heretic caused three Men to be hanged without convicting them of any Crime, and tortur'd a Widows Son to death: but in the end, having fill'd Europe with War and Blood-shed, his own Intimates grew weary of him; whereupon, being sentenced at a Synod held at *Brixia*, he was deposed, and, as *Antonius* writes, being upon his Death-bed grievously tormented in Mind, he sent for one of his favourite Cardinals, and confessed a deep sense of sorrow for his mispent wicked Life, and particularly bewailed his mis-application of the spirit

The Pope deposed, dies penitent.

ual Ministry, in stirring up War and Dissention;
 entreating him to go, *And implore the Emperor,*
whom he had so mightily offended, to forgive him;
 and then died, in a kind of a distracted despair-
 ing condition. From this wretched Example, his
 successors took no warning, but rather for the
 most part traced his steps, still bringing innume-
 rable Mischiefs into the World, as hereafter will
 appear. But to return:

When *William* the first of that Name, King of
 England, was busie in settling his Affairs at home,
 Philip King of France, willing to recover Nor-
 mandy, once a Province of that Kingdom; the bet-
 ter to weaken it, ere he entered it with an Army,
 stirred up *Robert* the King's Eldest Son, to rebel a-
 gainst him; assisting him under-hand with Men and
 Money. Upon this, *William* roused like a Lyon
 from his Repose, passed the Seas, and a sharp Bat-
 tle was fought between them, wherein the King
 lost the Victory, being thrown from his Horse by
 his Son in the heat of the Fight; wherein many
 of the English Nobility were slain; when finding,
 through the great loss he had sustained, his Army
 much weakened, he was forc'd to re-pass the Seas,
 in order to recruit it. By this misfortune, the cre-
 dit he before had gained by his Valour, decreased
 the Esteem of the Londoners; upon which, to awe
 them, he built the Tower, drawing the Ditch a-
 round it to the largeness it now continues, it being
 before but an inconsiderable Fortrefs, viz. Anno
 1078. Soon after this a Peace was concluded; but
 the King of France some time after by his under-
 hand practices found means to break it, which ob-
 liged the King again to carry another Army into
 Normandy, where, in harassing the Country, and
 over-heating himself in the fatigues of the War,
 fell sick; which sickness held him so long, that
 King Philip scoffingly said, *The King of England*
lay a long time in Child-bed, to nourish his fat Belly;

Robert
the King's
Son re-
bels.

Tower of
London
built.

*The King
dies at
Caen in
Nor-
mandy.*

which words coming to his Ears, so intraged him, that he deeply swore, *At his Uprising, or Churching, he would light a thousand Candles in France, which, should be out of little comfort to those Frenchmen who should see them:* And indeed he perform'd it in one sence, by setting a great many Towns and Villages in a blaze, and miserably wasting the Country; enriching the Church of St. Stephen, of his own founding, with part of the Spoil, bequeathing his Crown and regal Ornaments to it when he should dye: which happen'd not long after. For going a gain to quiet new Troubles in Normandy, he sickned, and died at Caen leaving that Country as his ancient Dukedom, to Robert his Eldest Son, and England to William, Sirnamed Rufus; and so little was this great and restless Conqueror minded after Death, that his Sons left only a few Monks to shuffle up an obscure Funeral; for the Rim of his Belly breaking the stench was so great, that no others would endure it; nay his Burial in St. Stephen's Church was opposed by one *Ascalinus Fitz Arthur*, who alledg'd, *He had founded that Church on his right Inheritance, violently taken from him, and that the Body of no despoiler should be covered in his Earth:* yet for a sum of Money he suffered it. Thus ended the Life of *William the First*, when he had Reigned over England twenty Years, six Months, and twenty six Days; being accounted the 21 sole Monarch.

*A Fd.
time and
Pesti-
lence in
England.*

In this King's Reign a great Famine and Pestilence happen'd, with a Murrain, that generally destroy'd the Cattle in most parts: and much about that time a great part of the City of London; with the Cathedral of St. Paul was consum'd by Fire. *Osmund* also, the first Bishop of Salisbury, devised an Ordinary, called *According to the use of Sarum* which was afterward receiv'd in a manner throughout England, as also in Ireland and Wales.

William

William Sir-named Rufus, the second of that Name, King of England.

When William the 1st. died, Robert his Eldest Son was negotiating affairs in Germany; and by reason of his absence, and the favourance of Lanfrank and Wolstane, two learn'd Bishops, who had great influence over the Nobles and meaner sort of People; William, Sir-named Rufus, from the redness of his Face, was, after some debate held amongst the Nobles, Crown'd King at Westminster, by the said Lanfrank, then Archbishop of Canterbury, on Sunday the 26th. of September, Anno 1088.

William
Crown'd
King.

This Crowning of William, tho' it was so ordered by the last Will of his Father, greatly displeased Robert; insomuch that raising a gallant Army, he resolved to push hard for the Kingdom; and ended with little resistance, doing no manner of injury in his March: when Encamping some Miles from London, his Brother sent several of the Nobles to treat with him, about an accommodation of this weighty matter; who so well succeeded in their Negotiation, that when most People were going with expectation of the Miseries this War would bring upon the Land, an Agreement was made, That William should Reign over England during the term of his Life, and then Robert, or his heirs, have the quiet possession of the Kingdom: to which end, some Historians tells us, William engaged not to Marry; and certain it is he did not: though he had several Children, he left behind him no lawful Issue. By vertue of this Contract, he was moreover obliged To pay Annually 100 Marks. The Agreement thus sign'd, the two Brothers took a friendly leave of each other; yet William fearing some other difference might arise, presently took care to Fortifie and Garrison the

Robert
D. of
Normandy
Lands
with an
Army.

Robert
Duke of
Normandy,
returns
home.

Corrupt
States-
men pu-
nished.

Sea-port Towns, building Forts and Castles in the most advantageous Harbours, labouring very much to strengthen himself in the Love of his People; receiving the Nobles that were in disgrace to his favour; remitting to the Commons many grievous Taxes; restoring much that had been extorted, or rigorously taken from them: and the better to ingratiate himself with them, he punished some corrupt Ministers of State, who in his Father's Reign had been grievous Oppressors; he also received into favour *Odo* Bishop of *Bayonne*, his Uncle, whom his Father had Banish'd the Realm creating him Earl of *Kent*, and conferring on him many other Honours and Dignities; who growing insolent upon the King's favours, began very much to trouble the whole Kingdom, as a bad requital for his Advancement; which caused the Nobles to complain of him; and the King being made sensible of his Arrogancy, changed his Smiles into Frowns.

Odo Bp.
of *Bay-*
onne
conspires
against
the King.

This alteration of the Royal favour so perplexed *Odo*, that he meditated nothing but revenge and being powerful among the *Normans*, he made a party amongst them to side with Duke *Robert* earnestly desiring him, by Letters and secret Messengers, a second time to invade the Land; promising great assistance through his Interest, to depose his Brother. But his close practices being discovered, he with his Accomplices openly rebelled, declaring for the Duke of *Normandy*, and his right to the Kingdom of *England*: who had promised indeed to land an Army, but failed. Upon which they applied themselves to *Malcolm* King of *Scotland*, who by their Invitation entered the *English* Borders with a vast Army, miserably wasting the Country, killing such as fell into his hands. Whereupon King *William* to prevent farther mischief, first fought the Bishop's Army, routed it, and taking him prisoner, compell'd him to depose

The Scots
invade
Eng-
land.

the Land: after which he fell upon the *Scots*, as they were plundering and laying waste the Marches; cutting off the greater part of their Army, slaying in Battle twenty of their Nobles, and reduc'd their King to such a streight, that he was compell'd to acknowledge subjection, and pay homage to *William*; and as a farther confirmation of this, he deliver'd yearly into the King's Treasury twelve Marks, for so many Villages taken from him in his War. Then *William* Rebuilt and Garrison'd *Carlisle* to bridle the *Scots*; which had been demolished by the *Danes* about 200 Years before. From his time he grew more jealous of the *Normans*, and in a manner threw himself wholly on the *Eng-*

King of
Scots
Tributary
to King
William.

In the third Year of this King's Reign, dyed *Lan-*
frank, Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*; a Man very learned, yet withal very superstitious: falling a little before into the King's displeasure (as some authors tells us, because he oppos'd him in his invading the Rights of the Church, to fill his Co-forts with Treasure) and thereupon many gross In-jurians being put upon him, he died of grief, to be so ingratiously handled, where he had deserved better: but the King so little regarded this, That he sequestered the profits of the Arch-bishoprick, and kept it in his own hands four Years; 'till (as he said) He could find a fit Man to place in it; and at the end of that time, made *Anselm*, a *Norman* Abbot, Arch-bishop, which greatly disgusted the *English* Clergy.

And now as bringing Images into the Church thereby creating superstition in the minds of the people) must be displeasing to God, since he hath strictly commanded, that neither the similitude of himself, or any Creature, shall be made to Worship, or pay Divine Honour to it; so here, to convince the Ignorant, he signally manifested his displeasure; for a great Tempest arising, the Steeple

Images
destroy'd
by Light-
ning.

of *Winchcomb* Church was consumed with Lightning, and the Roof rent in pieces; the Head and right Leg of the Crucifix beaten off; and the Image of the *Virgin Mary* thrown to the ground and broken in pieces. The like happen'd in other Churches: the fire leaving behind it a stench that could not with any perfumes be removed in many days. But leaving our English affairs for a while, I come now to look abroad, and see how matters stand at *Rome*, and in some other parts.

Pope
Victor
poison'd
in the Sa-
crament.

I have already told you, that *Gregory* the 7th or *Hildebrand*, the wicked Bishop of *Rome*, died in great misery. To him succeeded Pope *Victor* obtaining that dignity by the assistance of *Matilda* Mistress to the foregoing Pope, and the confederacy he made to place him in *St. Peter's Chair*. He following the steps of his Predecessor, endeavour'd strenuously to oppose the Emperor in his Intention of favouring the Church: but ere he could bring his designs to bear, he was (as some of their own Historians write) poison'd in drinking the Sacramental Wine, when he had scarce sat a Year a Bishop. Now one might reasonably believe, had this been the real Blood of our Saviour (as the Romanists hold, when Consecrated, it is by an immediate Transubstantiation, or changing the Wine into it) it certainly could not have prov'd so fatal to *St. Peter's Successor*, or any other; because the Poison, as well as the Element of Wine, must in like manner, have been changed into that most pure and sacred Nourishment, for the refreshing both of the Body and Soul, the one in the natural and the other in the spiritual sense; or otherwise been totally purged out: But 'tis certainly as great a fallacy to conclude, it is the real Blood of Christ in the literal sense, as the Trick the Predecessor of this unfortunate Pope used, when (to deceive a Woman, that his Arguments could not induce her to believe it) he by slight of hand convey'd away the

Hoast, and presented the Finger of a Man, he had caused to be cut off for that purpose, affirming, That no more of our Saviour was now pleased to appear, but that that ought to be a sufficient ground to confirm her, his whole Body by the same Transubstantiation might have presented it self. After which, by the same sight, conveying that away, and producing the Wafer, she receiv'd it (as they tell us) without scruple, and with great satisfaction. This some of their own Writers have set down as a Miracle, to which many to this day, no doubt, give an unquestion'd credit. But to proceed :

To Victor succeeded Urban the second, who scrupled not to confirm all the Decrees and Acts of Gregory the 7th, and other new Decrees made in prejudice to the Emperor Henry the 4th. A little after this, 'tis observ'd there were two Popes, viz. Urban, and Clemens the third; so that St. Peter had two successors at once; the latter being set up by the Emperor in opposition to the former, whom he accounted unduly elected, because he was not consulted in the choice, which was a right other Emperors had claim'd without being scrupled. As for Urban, he held divers Councils; one at Rome, wherein he excommunicated all Princes that gave the Investiture of any Ecclesiastical Promotions, as likewise such of the Clergy as submitted to accept them at their hands. Another he held at Claremount in France; to which place many Princes, and a great number of Bishops resorted: to whom, in a long oration, he represented The Misery and grievous Afflictions of the Christians in Palestine, under the persecuting Turks and Saracens; which so effectually wrought, that a vast Army was raised, and conducted thither under the leading of many Brave and Noble Men, which routed several numerous Armies of the Infidels, took Antioch, Tripoli in Syria, and after a hard Siege, made themselves Masters of Jerusalem, with an incredible

Two
Popes at
once.

The holy
War.

slaughter of their Enemies. The Princes after this consulting, in order to elect a King, it was offered to *Robert Duke of Normandy*, who hearing of his Brother *William's* Death, refus'd it; and that Dignity fell upon *Godfrey of Bologne*, who was the first Christian King of *Jerusalem*. *Robert* returning, found his youngest Brother *Henry* had plac'd himself on the English Throne; who not only depriv'd him of his expected Kingdom, but in the end, of his Life also (as in its place I shall discourse more at large (which by some was looked on as a Judgment, for his so slightly refusing the Scepter of *Jerusalem*).

Decrees
of Pope
Urban.

Among other Decrees of this *Urban*, he decreed, no Bishop should be ordained but under the Name and Title of some certain place.

That Mattins and Hours of the Day should be said every day.

That on every Saturday, the Mass of the Virgin Mary should be said; to which service was appointed the Anthem, *Ora pro populo*, &c.

That such of the Clergy as were Married, should be degraded, and rendered incapable of their Ecclesiastical Function.

That it should be lawful for Subjects to break their Oath of Allegiance, made to such Princes as were excommunicated by the Pope.

That it should not be lawful for the Husband and Wife to Baptize one Child, both being present.

And more to the like inconsiderable purpose. *K. William* having notice, that *Urban* had prohibited Ecclesiasticks to accept any Church promotions from Princes; to be even with him, he forbid his Subjects, under great Penalties, to make any Journeys to *Rome*, or have any thing to do with the Pope in these or any other matters; Alledging,

That because they followed not the steps of *Peter the Apostle*, but greedily sought after gain to carry on their own evil purposes, They had not the Authority of him, whose holy ways they altogether declined to pursue, &c.
But to return:

Whilst

Whilst these things happen'd abroad, *Malcolm* restless King of *Scots* again invaded *England*; bringing all wast before him with a miserable slaughter of the People: but being fought with by the *English*, his Army was overthrown, and he with his Son *Edward* slain.

The K. of the Scots and his Son slain.

The Contest continuing hot between the two Popes, King *William* held for *Clemens* against *Urban*, whom he despised for his Pride, and the Iniquity he put upon Princes; but *Anselm* held for the latter; which so enrag'd the King, that *Anselm* was turn'd out of favour: upon which he appealed to the King to the Pope, in a long Harangue of hard Usage; and particularly, *That he was protested to make his appearance at Rome*: whereupon the King charged him as a Traytor to his Crown and dignity, in breaking his Trust, and the Fealty he had sworn to him, when he raised him from a beggarly Abbot, to be Metropolitan of all *England*; further saying, *That the Custom had been in England from the Father's time, that no Person should appeal to the Pope without the King's leave; and he that breaketh the same, violateth the Power, Honour and Authority of the Kingdom; and he that does so, is a Traytor and an Enemy to his King, &c.* After many threats and Arguments, *Anselm* finding the great part of the Bishops to side with the King against him, in a manner stole away; but being taken by the King's Servants, he was rifled of his treasure, and such Letters as he was about to carry to *Rome* taken from him: yet he got over Sea, and went to *Lyons* in *France*; where he remain'd some time, as appears by his Letters writ to the Pope, with grievous Complaints against the King, and the *English* Bishops that stood against him.

Anselm appeals to the Pope.

But after this *Anselm* taking courage, passed over the *Alps* into *Italy*, and went to *Rome*; where the Pope commanded him *To wait on his Person, and depart; but be present at the Council speedily to be held*.

He goes to Rome.

*His
words to
the Pope.*

held at Baion. The Arch-bishop perceiving the Popes threatning prevailed nothing with his King entreated to be dismissed, after a tedious attendance to no purpose; saying to him, *His Obedience neither durst nor would refuse, being ready in this Cause to suffer whatsoever should happen; nay even Death itself, which he concluded would be the consequence of it* but (continued he) *What is there to be done, when Justice not only is deny'd, but even where my Suffragans, that should assist me, either for favour or fear, refuse to do it; nay rather oppose my Undertakings in the righteous Cause?*

*The
Pope's
Answer.*

To this the Pope reply'd, *That for the present should not be disheartned, but keep up his spirits against all opposition, and at the Council he would take care, not only to have his Wrongs redressed, but manage matters to his contentment.*

When the Council was assembled at Baion, the Pope, to give the Arch-bishop hopes, with kind words call'd for him, as he sat in a remote place and caused him to sit at his right Foot: from whence time his Successors, Arch-bishops of Canterbury, the Decree of this Pope Urban, claim'd that privilege in every general Council; which is looked on as great honour to those that are so favoured. But the issue of this Council producing little more than reasoning against the Eastern Churches, as to the matter and order of proceeding of the Holy Ghost, (in which, and many other weighty points the Greek Churches differ from that of Rome) the *selm* could find but small redress; however, the Pope in a heat would presently have denounced Excommunication against the King; but it was stay'd by the more moderate and cautious of the Bishops; who mildly advis'd him, That as he had so lately done it to the Emperor, it would be a great piece of prudence to defer this, 'till he saw what the Issue of that sentence would produce.

Notwithstanding this, many Letters and verbal Messages were sent to the King, admonishing him not to meddle more with the investing of Bishops, by giving them the Cross, Ring, and pastoral Staff; nor prohibit the assembling of the Convocations or Synods, touching the affairs of the Church, nor the execution of any Canons, tho' they were by legal Authority confirm'd: To all which the King only Answer'd, *He would do as he pleas'd, and no Man should pluck so fair a Jewel from his Crown.* And in the absence of *Anselm*, to shew he was in earnest, he thrust out of favour *Ralph* Bishop of *Chichester*, for reproving him in these matters; suspending several Churches in that Diocess, causing the profit arising thereby to them, to be brought into his Treasury; which greatly perplex'd the Clergy, who finding no redress, were constrain'd to be silent 'till his humour was over; when of his own meer motion he receiv'd the Bishop into his grace and favour; granting many great Privileges to his See: but either he proving ingrateful, or the King's humour strangely changing, he was for all this soon after banished the Land.

The Pope writes to the King.

The King's Answer.

The Bp. of Chichester Banish'd.

As for *Anselm*, he perceiving the Council break up without any advantage on his behalf, returned to *Lyons*, where he continu'd in a mean estate till the death of *K. William*, and also of *Urban*; who was succeeded in the See of *Rome* by Pope *Paschal*; to whom the Arch-bishop greatly complained by his letters, but to as little purpose, during the Reign of his Sovereign; who had prohibited his return, for his obstinately departing the Realm without his Licence.

The *French* taking advantage of these differences, laid siege to *Constantia*, a City in *Normandy*, of which the King having notice, as he was hunting in *New Forest*; leaving his sport, he flew to the sea side without delay, and leaping on board a vessel, commanded the Mariners to set Sail, and land

A brave Resolution of the King.

land him on the opposite shoar, (at what time it blew near a full storm) which they scrupling to do he in a rage urged them to it; bidding them not fear the threatning of the Winds or Waves; For *when* (said he) *have you ever heard that a K. was drown'd by a storm.* Thus by his sudden landing when he was least expected, the *French* were so terrified, that they broke up the Siege, and retir'd in great confusion, supposing he had brought a considerable Army, when indeed he had scarce any followers to attend him; so that it may be said, only with the terror of his Name he overcame them.

*The Re-
belling
Welsh
quieted.*

In the Reign of this King, the *Welsh* frequently rebell'd; but being by the Valour of the *English* continually worsted, they were with considerable slaughter, reduc'd to their obedience. Of this King I find many things Recorded relating to his excessive Covetousness: yet one passage I find, that may in a great measure clear him of this Aspersi-
on, tho' I confess in some particulars it cannot
Take it thus:

*Two Co-
vetous
Monks
defeated.*

An Abbot being dead, two Monks of the same Convent had scraped together so much Money, that neither of them doubted bribing the King, to be made Abbot in the room of the Deceased. He patiently heard both their Stories, and seem'd inclinable to yield to the highest bidder; but whilst these were out-bidding each other, he espied a third Monk, whom he call'd to him, and demanded what he would give to be Abbot? Who simply Answer'd, *In good troth, Sir, not a Farthing if I had it, nor will I be Abbot by bribing to obtain the Dignity.* The King smiling at his plain Speech told him, *He should have it at his rate, since he was most worthy to govern so Religious a Charge, because he was not inclinable to Covetousness.*

And now Fate cut the Thread of his Life unexpectedly: for hunting in the New Forest, (where his Father had made such desolation of Churches

Reli

Religious Houses, Towns and Villages) as the Dogs were at Bay with a Stag, who had spoiled many of them; Sir *Walter Tyril*, one of the Squires of the King's Body, shot an Arrow at the Stag; which glancing on the side of an Oak, pierc'd the King, who was eagerly making in to the Quarrey, and gave him a mortal Wound on the Breast, of which he died ere he could be convey'd to *Winchester*. Not long before, *Richard*, Son to *Robert Duke of Normandy*, almost on the same spot, was kill'd by a violent fall from his Horse, being beating from him by a bough, as he was hunting: which accidents, in those days were looked on, As God's Judgments, for the sacrilegious wast made on so slender an occasion.

The King slain in New Forest.

This *William*, was second Son to the Conqueror, by *Maud*, or *Mauld*, Daughter to *Baldwin* the 5th Earl of *Flanders*. He Reign'd 12 Years, 10 Months, and 23 Days; and was buried, with little solemnity, in the Quire of *St. Swithins*, in the Cathedral Church at *Winchester*; leaving no Legitimate Issue to succeed him.

Henry, The first of that Name, King of ENGLAND, &c.

AT the Death of *William*, *Robert Duke of Normandy* (as I have said) was engag'd in the Holy Land; and though by right of Eldership, and collateral Contract, he was to have Inherited the Crown of *England*; yet *Henry*, his youngest Brother (to whom the Conqueror left no possession, only a considerable Treasure (so politickly dealt with the *English* and *Normans*, by Gifts, fair speeches, and promised promotions, That he procured himself to be Crown'd King at *Westminster*, by

Henry Crown'd Man-King.

Maurice Bishop of London, on Sunday the fifth of August, Anno 1100; Anselm Arch-bishop of Canterbury, as you have heard (whose Office 'twas to have perform'd this Ceremony) being in Banishment. But before his Coronation, the Nobles oblig'd Him to take an Oath, That He would ease the Land of the grievous taxes, with which at that time 'twas Burthened and Oppressed: Likewise, To redress all other Grievances: And particularly, To restore to the English their ancient privilege, of having Candle in their houses at what time they should please, without the Restraint under which they had been about 33 Years.

Upon these conditions *Henry* receiv'd his Crown; and expecting a Storm out of *Normandy* when his Brother return'd, the better to Ingratiate Himself with all sorts of People and Link their affections to Him: He caus'd several profitable Laws to pass the Great-Seal; subscribing them Himself, and commanding several Lords Spiritual and Temporal to do the like; ordering copies of them to be sent in the respective Counties, to be kept in their Courts the Heads of them containing as followeth:

Good
Laws of
King
Henry.

[1.] *That the Churches should be free from all Oppression, and have the Reservation of their possession upon any Vacancy that should happen.*

[2.] *That the Heirs of the Nobility should freely possess their Fathers Inheritance, without Redemption from the King; and that the Nobles should grant the like favour to their Tenants and Vassals.*

[3.] *That the Gentry might give in Marriage their Kinswomen and Daughters without any Leave from the King, provided 'twere not to his Enemies.*

[4.] *That a Widow should freely be allow'd her Jointure, and not without her Consent be compell'd to second Marriage.*

[5.] *That the Mother, or the next in Blood, should be Guardians of the possessions left their Children.*

[6.] *That all debts to the Crown before his coming to it should be remitted; and also all Murthers committ*

before the day of his Coronation freely pardoned.

[7.] That False Coiners and Counterfeiters of the errant Coin should be Capitally punished; and that a Measure the length of the King's Arm, should be a standard of Commerce as to long Measure.

At this time he likewise confirmed the Laws of Edward the Confessor; and farther to Ingratiate himself with such as were most in power, and ablest to Him service, He liberally distributed his Treasures amongst them; placing the more popular Nobles in the Chief Offices of State; and contented the Gentry with Titles of Honour, and places of a lower Station: Nay, that he might please people of all Degrees, He totally Abolished the Exaction of Tithes, which had been lessen'd in the two former Reigns: Further allowing the Nobility to improve their Parks for their Game. And as Traytors to the Virtue, State and Kingly Government, He Banned from His Court all Sycophants, Parasites, Flatterers; all Niceness in Behaviour, Sumptuousness in Apparel, Superfluity in Diet, and Lascivious Conversation: And with indefatigable industry corrected and reformed the Pride, Arrogancy, and Slothfulness, that had crept into religious Houses; also the Covetousness and secure Negligence of those that waited on the Altar: Tho' on t'other side (to please the Clergy) He recall'd Anselm from Banishment, authorizing him to Assemble Conventions and Synods, so often as he saw it convenient, for the well governing of the Church; and with Irregularities as were in it, he left wholly to be directed by the Pope: Resigning likewise to Him the power of Investing Bishops, by giving them the Ring, Cross and Pastoral-Staff; committing Reynold Bishop of Durham to the Tower, for the many disorders he had caused during the former Reign, whence he escaped into Normandy, and by moving Orations, earnestly solicited Duke Robert to return'd to invade England.

Edward the Confessor's Laws confirmed.

Flatterers banished the Court.

The

*The King
Marries.*

*D. Robert
lands an
Army.*

The King to strengthen himself yet more, contracted a strict alliance with the King of Scots by Marrying *Maud* his Sister; who was Daughter to *Malcolm*, by *Margaret*, Sister to *Edgar Atheling*, and Daughter to *Edward*, the Son of *Edmund Ironside*, King of the Saxons, before treated of. Scarce were these Nuptials over, ere Duke Robert landed a powerful Army at *Portsmouth*; but when all People were in a manner startled at the dismal apprehensions of the effusion of Blood, which might ensue as the effect of this War, by friendly Mediation a Reconcilement was made, much upon the same Articles as had been agreed on in the Reign of *William Rufus*. This so highly displeased the *Norman Nobles*, who expected to enrich themselves by the Spoils and great Places, (they had already imbibed in hope) that they returned (very much dissatisfied with the proceedings) into their Country; which after redounded greatly to the Duke's prejudice. For being soon after invaded at home by *K. Henry* they for the most part refused to assist him; that being worsted in several Battles, he lost the chief Cities of his Dukedom, viz. *Caen*, *Valognes*, *Roan*, &c. which *Henry* Garrisoning with *English* returned, and was by his Subjects received in Triumph.

*Duke Robert
would
submit,
but is re-
fused.*

*K. Henry
invades
Norman-
dy.*

Soon after this, *D. Robert* came over with a slender train of followers, and would have submitted himself to the King, in hopes to be restored his Country; but he desirous to annex that Dutch to his other Dominions, unkindly turned from him and refused his subinssion; which so much perplexed him, that in a rage he departed the Land rather resolving to die in the Field, than again guilty of such meanness. But being followed at heels by the King, who easily foresaw what he intended, and his People mostly refusing to assist him after so low and dishonourable a submission, he was in a mortal Battle, where he fought like an im-

ed Lyon, overpowered by the King's great number,
taken Prisoner and brought into *England*; where en-
deavouring to break Prison, the King inhumanely
caused his Eyes to be put out by burning Glasses:
and so, after a long languishing confinement, as
some write, he voluntarily starv'd himself to death:
Others, that he beat his brains out against the walls
of the Prison. But certain it is, he ended his days
in confinement; being a Prince in whom all heroick
virtues shined.

Duke Ro-
bert's
Imprison-
ment and
Death.

The King now growing more assured, began to
let the Nation see, that it was not so much love,
as fear that had constrained him to so many favou-
rable concessions. For he proceeded to lessen the
Authority of the Clergy, laid Taxes on them,
and recalled many of his Grants; reassuming the
power of investing Bishops: And *Anselm*, for op-
posing this, and refusing to Consecrate such Bishops
as the King nominated, was banished; whereupon
he retired to *Rome*, complaining of the injury done
him, to Pope *Paschal* the second; who interceeding
for him with the King, after a Years banishment
he had freedom allowed him to return: when by
the Pope's Authority, assembling a Synod of the
Clergy in *London*, it was decreed, That from that
time no temporal Person should give Investiture to
any Bishop. But *Anselm* dying about three Years
after, the King sequestred the Temporalities of the
archiepiscopal See into his hands; continuing it
vacant the space of five Years: all which time he
converted the profits to his own use. However,
the King to continue fair with the See of *Rome*,
writ two Letters to Pope *Paschal*; one desiring him
to keep up that Friendship with him, as had continued
between the former Popes and his Predecessors: withal
sending him the Money that was usually given by
way of acknowledgment, called *Peter-pence*: Desir-
ing that no Alterations or Innovations might be
made in the Churches of his Realm, contrary to the

K. Hen-
ry recalls
his
Grants.

Anselm
Banished.

Peter-
pence
given by
the King
to the
Popes.

establiſh'd Custom. For if any ſuch thing were attempted, himſelf and his Nobles would reſiſt it to the utmoſt of their power; and not only ſo, but rected and utterly depart from the Pope's obedience.

A contention between the Monks and Married Priests.

Unjuſt dealing with the Biſhop of Mentz juſtly puniſhed by God.

The ſecond Letter was, *To require the Pall for Gerard Arch-biſhop of York.* This latter more eſpecially was well taken at the Court of Rome, where Money ever ſway'd more than Arguments: notwithstanding this, there fell out much Contention in the Realm, between the Monks and Married Priests; inſomuch, that the Pope and many Prelates ſiding with the former, ſuch of the latter as reſuſed to forſake their Wives, were ſtrip'd of their Livings, and by that means ſuffered much.

About this time, *Henry Arch-biſhop of Mentz* being falſly accuſed to Pope *Paschal*, of irregularities he had not committed; ſent one *Arnold*, whom he had highly promoted, to excuſe him: Who inſtead of excuſing, vehemently accuſed him. Inſomuch that two Cardinals were deligated to examine the Biſhop; who bribed by *Arnold's* Gold diveſted him of his Arch-biſhoprick, placing *Arnold* in it. The good Biſhop perceiving himſelf wrong'd, without redreſs, appealed from their Sentence to Chriſt the Righteous Judge; Summoning them, at a prefixed time, to appear with him before the high Tribunal, to answer the Injury they had done him. At which they ſcoffingly ſaid, *Go thou before, and we will follow.* Soon after this the Biſhop died of Grief, whereupon one of theſe corrupt Cardinals ſaid, *Lo he is come, and we muſt follow after.* Which contrary to their expectation, in a little time happened: For one of them eaſing himſelf over a Vault, his Bowels fell out, and in much miſery ended his days. The other falling diſtracted gnawed his fingers and other parts of his fleſh and died raving mad. And *Arnold* likewise dying his body was expoſed many days in the Streets without burial.

About

About the Year 1101. the Bp. of *Fluence* boldly teaching and writing, that Antichrist was born; and glancing at the Pope to be him, *Paschal* call'd a council at *Trecas*, and condemned his Writings to be burned; condemning likewise all Married Priests for *Nicolaitans*; and such Lay-men as dispossessed of Ecclesiastical Dignities, he pronounced guilty of Simony: He renew'd the Excommunication of *Hildebrand*, and against *Henry* the fourth, Emperor of *Germany*, deposed him, and caused the Electoral Bishops to Crown his Son. Many cruel battles were fought on this occasion; but the Pope encouraged the rebellious Son, by supplying him with large sums of Money, that the Father in the end was left, in a manner, forsaken of all his friends; and desiring to live a private Life, and become a Prebend in the Cathedral of *Mentz*, the grateful Bishop, to whom he had granted so many favours, refused him so small a kindness; and being still persecuted by the Pope, he came to *Leodium*, where he died of grief, when he had held a troublesome Reign Fifty Years, the Pope's Malice still pursuing him in his Grave; for he caused his body to be taken up and carried to *Shires*, where it remained unburied five Years. The unnatural Son going after to *Rome*, to be confirmed in the Empire, the Pope refused it, till such time as he meant to resign all power in the Emperor, touching the election of any Pope, or promoting any other Bishops: and soon after upon some disgust, conspir'd to take him off; but he so manfully defended himself, that taking him prisoner, he carry'd him from *Rome*, and compell'd him to cancel the Obligations a little before had entered into. But the Pope stood to his Agreement no longer than 'till he was returned into *Germany*; for then he renounced all he had done, and excommunicated him: whereupon he returned again with an Army, and drove him out of *Rome*, setting up another Pope.

The Bishop of Fluence declares Antichrist to be born.

Pope Paschal deposes the Emperor and crowns his Son.

The Emperor dies of Grief.

The Pope taken prisoner.

Another Pope set

up by the Emperor. ring these troubles, the German Bishops had stirred up the Saxons to rebel against the Emperor; whereupon finding his Affairs not likely to end well unless he complied, he again submitted to the Pope giving up the power he had reassum'd to elect Pope &c. This Emperor Marry'd *Matilda*, or *Ma* Daughter to our King *Henry*, by whom he had an Issue.

Anno 1118. Pope *Paschal* dying, he was succeeded in that See by *Gealsius*; which being done without the Emperor's consent, in opposition to his will, he set up *Gregory* the 8th. whereupon *Gealsius* fled into France, and there died; and *Gregory* soon after was forc'd to leave Rome, and give place to *Calixtus*, or *Sixtus* the second. Upon which many Contentions arose: for this new Pope sent his Legate to excommunicate the Emperor; forcing him to submit, as Pope *Paschal* had done; and then getting Pope *Gregory* in his hands, he set him on a shagged Camel, with his face to the Rump, holding his Tail instead of a Bridle; and so making him ride in disgrace through the City of Rome, caused him to be shorn and thrust into a Monastery. After this, holding a general Council at Rheims he decreed, That Priests, Deacons and sub-Deacons should put away their Wives and Concubines, otherwise be deprived of their Benefices and all other Ecclesiastical Dignities. And thus much in his Reign may suffice for Roman Affairs. Now to return:

King *Henry* the second being now at leisure to consider of his Affairs, erected the Bishoprick of *Ely*; appointing the Diocese to extend through *Ely* and *Cambridge-shire*; largely endowing it with the Revenues of the Crown; which so pleased the Pope and Clergy of England, that they by many Encomiums highly applauded his Piety. Long had he not rested ere *Lewis le Gros*, King of France animated *Foulk* Earl of *Anjou*; and *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, to invade *Normandy*; which raising

Pope Paschal dies, and is succeeded by Gealsius.

Great troubles at Rome.

King Henry erects Bishoprick.

from his bed of ease, instill'd such Princely Resolutions in him, that passing the Seas with a great Army, he overcame them in two cruel Battles; the last of which continu'd so long and so furious, that the King confessed, *He fought not then for Victory, but for his Life.* The better to confirm his Victory, and settle his Affairs, he Marry'd William his Eldest Son to the Duke of Anjou's Daughter; but returning to England, all his Children were cast away thro' the carelesness of the Drunken Mariners; except Matilda, or Mand the Empress, who was not with them: This was a great Grief to the King and the whole English Nation. Long he had not to consider of this great Loss, ere the Welsh rebelled; upon a vain Prophecy, That *the time was come they should recover their Ancient Territories, and have a King of their own Nation reigning over the whole Island.* But being overthrown, such a Desolation was made in their Country, as made them sorrowfully repent their foolish forwardness.

*R. Henry
by Victory
rious in
France.*

*Most of
the King's
Children
drowned
by Ship-
wrack*

*A vain
Prophe-
cy.*

Soon after this, the Emperor Henry the Fifth dying, Matilda, or Mand, the Empress, returned to her Father; bringing with her the Imperial Crown, and as a rare Relique, the Hand of St. James (as some Monks who sold it at a dear rate made her believe) in honour to which the King built the Abby of Reading; and plac'd it there, where it remain'd a long time. This King was the first In-
stitutor of a high Court of Parliament; ordering it to consist of three Estates, of which he constituted himself the Head: so that the Laws being made by the consent of all, were highly pleasing to the People: The first of which sat at Salisbury, in April, 1114. Then he Married Adilicia, Daughter to Godfrey, first Duke of Lovain; and now Pope Alexander, or Sixtus, thinking to oblige the King not to meddle with Ecclesiastical Affairs, came a person as far as Normandy. But neither his

*The King
builds
the Abby
at Reading.
A Parliament
framed
of three
Estates.
The King
Marries
again.*

He has
an inter-
view
with the
Pope.

Threats or Intreaties could prevail for the accomplishing his ends. At this meeting, two Youths Sons to the Earl of *Mellent*, with Logical Syllogism disputing against two of the Pope's Cardinals, puzzled and non-plust them, that they were oblig'd to acknowledge their Ignorance.

A Cardi-
gal
preaching
up Cha-
stity, ta-
ken with
a Strum-
pet.

Pope *Honorius* the Second succeeding in the Papal See, sent Cardinal *Cremensis* to *England*, to lay open the evil example of the Marry'd Priests; and to that end made a long oration in a great assembly of the Clergy, in praise of Chastity, and the dispraise of unlawful Lust. But that very Night, before that narrowly watched him, he was taken in bed with a common Harlot, and so was dismissed with shame and contempt.

Thurstan
Arch-
bishop of
York.

And now the Archiepiscopal See of *York* being vacant, the King prefer'd *Thurstan*, one of his Chancellors to it; which sudden Advancement puff'd him up with such Pride, that he refused to acknowledge obedience to the See of *Canterbury*, as his Predecessors had done; going to *Rome* to get the Pope's Dispensation, where contrary to his promise, receiving the Investiture of Arch-bishop, the King was so displeased, that he prohibited his return, but being menaced with the Pope's Excommunication, he found himself constrain'd, for the publick quiet, to permit his coming to his See, and enjoying the Dignity of Arch-bishop. It is remarkable about this time, That one *Arnold*, in a Divinity-Lecture at *Oxford*, inveying a gainst the Pride of the Prelates, together with the dissolute Lives of the Monks, was the next morning found dead, with about a hundred Wounds. So far exasperated them to Revenge, to be told of the wicked Practices they had not the conscience to reform or repent of.

Arnold,
a Divine
of Ox-
ford
Murde-
red.

The King to settle his Posterity in the Throne began to think of a second Match for *Matilda*, *Maud* his Daughter; as also to strengthen his A

ance, that he might the better oppose the designs of the French. He therefore Marry'd her to Geoffry Plantagenet, Son and Heir apparent to the Earl of Anjou; by whom she had Issue, Henry, after King of England; Geoffry and William. This fair Offspring was cause of great joy to the King; for in that he foresaw a sure settlement of his Line to descend to Posterity. And the better to confirm this, because there might be some pretenders to the Crown after his Death; in the space of three Years he took three solemn Oaths of the Nobility and other chief Men of the Kingdom, That with their best Advice, and with the hazard of their Lives, Goods and Lands, they should support and maintain the Succession of his Daughter and her Heirs. After this, going over to settle his Affairs in Normandy, surfeiting on Lampreys, he died, when he had reigned 35 Years, 4 Months, and 1 Day.

This King, for his great Learning was surnamed Bean Clerk, or Fine Scholar. He was a generous Friend, but stubborn Enemy. He erected two Bishopricks, viz. Ely and Carlisle; and founded the Monasteries Cercester, Sherbourn, the Priory at Dunstable, and the Abby at Reading; where he was buried, and had a stately Monument erected to his Memory. In his Reign a great part of London, also the Cities of Worcester and Rochester, were consumed with Fire. And Historians make mention, that in the time of Pope Honorius, one Arnulphus, Bishop of Lugdunum, coming to Rome, and Preaching and Writing against the profligate Lives of the Clergy, the Nobles of Rome were highly pleased with him; but the Pope and his Cardinals, stirred up all the Clergy to persecute him for truths sake; when praying in a Desert near the City, it was revealed to him by an Angel, that they sought his Life, resolving to persecute him even to death; which so rejoyc'd him, That he was found worthy to suffer for the Name of Christ; that returning

K. Henry marries his Daughter to Geoffry Plantagenet.

The Nobility three times sworn to her.

K. Henry dies in Normandy.

His good deeds.

Great Fires in England. Arnulphus Bp. of Lugdunum Preaches at Rome. He is persecuted.

His courage and constancy in suffering Martyrdom.

boldly into the City, he by many learned Arguments defended the Doctrine he taught, proving it to be agreeable to the Doctrine of our Saviour and His Apostles; saying moreover, *That in defence of it he was not affraid to suffer Death; but God would requite his blood at their hands, and shewre vengeance on them for their grievous Sins.* Whereupon they laid violent hands on him, dragging him about the Streets, and at last hanged him. For which he is accounted as a Martyr, dying for the truth.

Stephen King of England.

Stephen of Blois crown'd King.

UPON the Death of *Henry the 1st.* *Stephen*, Son to the Earl of *Blois*, by his Wife *Adilicia* third Daughter to *William the Conqueror*, ingratiating himself with the English Nobility, contrary to his Oath given to the Empress, took upon him the Government; being Crown'd at *Westminster* the 26th of *December*, Anno 1135. and at *Oxford* he took an Oath to the Lords, not to seize into his hands any vacant Benefices; also to remit all the heavy Taxes, with many other matters advantageous to the publick. And because he feared the Empress would quickly land with an Army, he encouraged the Nobility to build Castles and Fortresses on their proper Lands, which had formerly been denied them. Indeed all his Reign, in a manner was a continu'd Series of Wars; especially from *David K. of Scots*, who had taken an Oath to the Empress. This King sent *Henry* his Eldest Son (who had done King *Stephen* homage a little before) with an Army into the Northern Borders where he committed inhumane Cruelties, neither sparing Man, Woman nor Child; ripping up pregnant Wives, and tossing their Children on Spears, murdering the Clergy where ever he found them.

The Scots invade England and are routed.

osing many of them to be cut in pieces on the high
stars; and, in brief, even out-did the *Danes* in
barbarity. Till *Thurstan*, Arch-bishop of *York*, and
others Nobles, with an Army, gave him a fearful
overthrow; not restraining the Sword from devour-
ing all the *Scots* that came in its way; which com-
pelled the *Scots* King to sue for peace, and give this
Henry as Hostage for his keeping it inviolable.

*A Peace
conclu-
ded.*

King *Stephen* being now more at leasure, marched
his Army to reduce several Castles and Fortresses in
the Southern parts that held for the Empress; and
with some little difficulty brought them under His
obedience: Yet had little time to settle his affairs,
before the *Welsh* broke into open hostility; and an Ar-
my being sent to quiet them, thro' the negligence
of the English Commanders 'twas surpriz'd and rou-
ted, a great number being slain, and divers (to their
disgrace) lead away prisoners by the *Welsh* Wo-
men that followed the Camp.

About the sixth year of this King's Reign, *Maud*
the Empress, having gotten a considerable Army in
France and *Normandy*, Landed in *England*; and with
her, *Robert* Earl of *Gloucester*, and *Ranulph* Earl of
Bedford. These fiercely engaged King *Stephen*, victo-
riously inclining some times to one side, then to the o-
ther: so that the King in a pitch'd Battle being
overpowered, his Men flying from him, maintained the
fight alone with his Battle-Ax against a whole Ar-
my of Enemies, 'till beaten down with weighty
stones thrown at him, he was taken Prisoner and
carry'd to *Bristol-Castle*; where he continu'd, 'till
the Earl of *Gloucester* being taken Prisoner in ano-
ther Battle, was exchanged for him. For during
his Imprisonment, his Queen headed his Forces,
and pushed on the War with much Courage and
bravery: It is recorded also, that at the beginning
of these Commotions, Omens of the King's Mis-
fortunes appeared. For when the Bishop of *Lin-*
coln said Mass before him, as he went to offer up

*The Em-
press
Maud
lands
with an
Army.*

*King
Stephen
valiant-
ly fight-
ing is
taken
Prisoner.
He is
exchan-
ged and
released.*

*Omens of
his bad
success.*

his

his Taper, it broke in sunder; and as he should have been blessed, the silken string broke, on which the Pix hung with the Consecrated Wafer in it.

The Empress leaves London for fear of a surprise. The Empress being now in *London* with part of her Army, the Citizens petition'd her, that in consideration of their standing on her part, they might freely enjoy their ancient Laws and Privileges; but she returning dilatory Answers, which looked like a Denial, so exasperated them, that they secretly conspired to seize her Person, and deliver her up as a Prisoner to King *Stephen*. Of which she having timely notice, secretly convey'd herself to *Oxford*; and there soon after, she was besieged by King *Stephen*; who pressed the City hard with his great Army, that despairing to hold it much longer, in the Night (the Snow lying thick on the Ground) she apparelling herself in white, escaped over the *Thames* to *Wallingford*, whereupon the Garrison surrendered.

The Empress besieged in Oxford, escapes to Wallingford. The King had no sooner taken possession of the City, but with great celerity he pursued the Empress so close, that her Forces being much wasted, she, with her few followers, were constrain'd to repass the Seas. In the eighth Year of his Reign this King held a Parliament at *London*; in which the Bishops pronounced a Curse against all those (the King not excepted) who should spoil or molest any Church, Chapel, or Religious House: which though it much perplexed the King, yet as his Affairs stood, he found himself oblig'd to take little notice of it, but rather labour to restrain those that presum'd to offend, in offering violence to the Clergy.

She is pursued and forced to leave the Land.

Whilst these things were doing in *England*, the Empress and her Husband *Geoffry Plantagenet*, invaded *Normandy*; which they had no sooner brought under their subjection, but *Geoffry* died, leaving his Eldest Son *Henry* to succeed him in the Dutchy. And now the Emperress party, under

The Empress subdues Normandy, and her Husband dies.

the Empress and her Husband *Geoffry Plantagenet*, invaded *Normandy*; which they had no sooner brought under their subjection, but *Geoffry* died, leaving his Eldest Son *Henry* to succeed him in the Dutchy. And now the Emperress party, under

the Earl of Gloucester, was again much encreased
 England; where divers Battles were fought;
 and at Wilton the King was overcome, and narrow-
 escaped being taken Prisoner; when finding his
 safe was become desperate, to strengthen himself
 by potent Alliances abroad, he marry'd his Son
 Eustace to the K. of France's Sister, who promised to
 aid him with Forces to expel Henry out of Norman-
 dy: yet did so little therein, that he growing pow-
 erful invaded England, and took many Castles and
 Fortresses; among others, the Tower of London.
 Many cruel Battles were by them fought with va-
 rious success; but in the interim Eustace, the Son
 of K. Stephen dying, (by the means of Theobald, Arch-
 bishop of Canterbury) a negotiation of Peace was set
 on foot, and had this Issue, viz. That Stephen du-
 ring the term of his Life should sit on the Throne without
 contestation; after which, Henry to succeed him in all
 his Dominions; in the interim, he to adopt his Son,
 and cause him to be proclaimed Heir apparent in all the
 Cities and principal Towns of England. This done,
 friendly leave was taken; Henry returning to his
 Government in Normandy.

Henry's
 Son
 invades
 England.

An agree-
 ment
 made.

During these hot Contests for the Crown, Theobald
 Arch-bishop of Canterbury, procuring himself to be
 made the Pope's Legate in England, held a Council
 at London, wherein it was first decreed, That Pre-
 lates and other Ecclesiastics might appeal from any
 Council to the Pope: And this was done at the mo-
 tion of Henry Bishop of Winchester, as I find it set
 down, viz.

A De-
 cree in
 the Coun-
 cil or Sy-
 nod held
 at Lon-
 don.

That Appellations to the Pope were not used in
 England, till Henry Bp. of Winchester by sinister
 means caused it to be decreed; which in the end
 proved prejudicial to himself and many others.

In another Council, held by the aforesaid Arch-
 Bishop's Authority, it was decreed, That Bishops
 should live more discreetly than they had done, teaching
 those under their charge the way to Salvation; and That

Other
 Decrees.

the

the Scriptures should be frequently Read and Expounded
That Priests should not intermeddle in secular Affairs
but labour to shew good Examples by living devoutly
Also, that they should learn the Latine, the Lord's
Prayer and Creed in the vulgar Tongue. And Mar-
tineus Paris tells us, that notwithstanding the struggling
of the Pope and Bishops to the contrary, King
Stephen did reserve to himself, the right of confer-
ring Ecclesiastical Benefices on whom he concluded
worthy of them, and invested Prelates in the Year
1133. at which time also, Lotharius the Emperour
began to do the like in Germany.

Cursing
by Bell
Book and
Candle.

In this King's Reign was introduced the manner
of Cursing with Bell, Book and Candle; devised by
the Bishop of Winchester, under Pope Celestine, who
succeeded Pope Innocent, Anno 1144.

The Pope
resolved
to murder
the Sena-
tors.
Is sound-
ly beaten.

And here, by the way, I find many Popes in a very
short time sitting in the Chair. As, Celestine the
Second, Lucius the Second, Eugenius the Third.
In the Papacy of Lucius, the Roman Senators be-
laboured to recover their ancient Privileges of cho-
sing the Consuls, but the Pope opposed it strenu-
ously; whereupon many hot Contests and Conflic-
ts arose, in which much blood was shed; and the Pope
being worsted sent for the Emperour, but he refused to
come, which so enraged him, that gathering Forces
privately, he resolved to murder all the Senators
they were assembled in the Senate House: but his in-
tentions being discovered, the People from all parts
of the City run to their Arms; so that a bloody
Fight was maintained in the Streets of Rome, where
the Pope was so pelted with stones, that soon after he
died. Yet Eugenius, who succeeded him, took up
this Quarrel; first excommunicating the Citizens
and perceiving that was little regarded by them,
he surpriz'd them with an Army, and compelled
them to crave peace at his Hands; taking away the
Dignity of Consuls, and allowing them no Senators
but such as himself should nominate.

To Pope *Eugenius* succeeded *Anastasius* the 4th. After him *Nicholas Breakſpear*, an *English* Man, was Pope, by the Name of *Adrian* the 4th. who renew'd the Contention with the Citizens of *Rome*, excommunicating and engaging in Wars with them; also ſending *Apulia* with Fire and Sword. He alſo greatly oppoſed *Frederick* the Emperor, who labour'd to ſettle the Affairs of his Empire in peace. But to return:

An Eng-
liſh-man
Pope.

King *Stephen* wearied out with the toil of War, and much perplex'd for the death of his Son, whom he entirely loved, fell into ſuch a Melancholy, as brought on him the *Iliack Paſſion*, whereof he died at the Monastery of Monks in *Dover*, when he had held a troubleſom Reign 18 Years, 10 Months, and 5 Days; or, as ſome ſay, 19 Years; and was buried near his Son, at *Feverſham* in *Kent*, in an Abbey of his own founding.

King
Stephen
dies at
Dover.

In this King's Reign, Anno 1144. the Jews Crucified a Child at *Norwich*, in deriſion of our Saviour; for which many of them were put to Death, and others grievouſly Scourged, as they well deſerved for ſo notorious a Fact. And *William*, ſometimes Arch-biſhop of *Tork*, was poiſoned by his own Chaplain in the Chalice. Alſo a plain Croſs appeared in the Moon. This *Stephen* was the firſt of our *English* Kings I read of, that entered the City of *Lincoln*. Others being deterred from ſo doing, by an old Propheſie running thus.

The Jews
crucify
a Child
at Nor-
wich.

*When a King enters within Lincoln's Walls,
His Reign proves ſtormy, and he Childleſs falls.*

Henry

Henry, the Second of that Name, King of ENGLAND.

Henry the Second (commonly call'd *Fitz Empress*, Eldest Son to *Jeoffry Plantagenet*, by *Maud* or *Maud*, his Wife, Daughter to *Henry* the first King of *England*) at the Death of King *Stephen* was in *Normandy*, besieging the *French* in a strong Castle they had a little before surprized: and when the News was brought him, and his Nobles advised him to leave the Siege and hast to *England*, the better to secure the Crown from being grasped, in his absence, by any pretender to it, he courageously replied, *That the Kingdom of England should henceforth be at his command, in spite of those that durst oppose him; and so should the intruding French-men ere he raised his Siege:* And accordingly it fell out for he soon won the Castle, and drove the *French* out of *Normandy*: when having settled his Affairs in that Dutchy, he came gallantly attended into *England*, and was three times Crown'd, by *Thomas* *Arch-bishop of Canterbury* at *Westminster*; after at *London*, and lastly at *Worcester*.

Henry
the second
three
times
crown'd.

Being settled in the Throne, he chose the Grave and most Learned Men of the Kingdom for his Councillors and Judges; dividing the Realm into six Circuits: and for the better administration of Justice to all degrees of People, he appointed Judges to visit them twice in a Year; from which going the Circuits, they were call'd Judges or Justices *Itinerant*. Then he constituted *Thomas Becket* a *Londoner*, whom he raised from a mean degree to be Lord Chancellour of *England*; who made him a very Ingrateful return of this and other Favours he heaped on him, as will hereafter appear.

Thomas
Becket
made
Chancellor.

Now, as King *Stephen* had reposed his great trust in the strong Castles he caused to be built

st parts of the Kingdom, this *Henry* looked on
 as a matter of such dangerous consequence, be-
 lie, as he suggested, it might minister matter of
 asion to the Nobles, upon every slight disgust, to
 el; that he caused the greater part of them to be
 molished, and banished such of the powerful Men
 t held with King *Stephen* to his prejudice. Then
 ng against the *Scots* with an Army, he drove them
 of those Northern parts of *England* they had
 iled as far as *New-Castle* on *Tine*; subduing *The K.*
 land from the *South Ocean* to the Isles of the *subdues*
 ades; compelling *William K. of Scots* to be- *Scotland.*
 ne Tributary to him. He likewise brought the
 obellious *Welsh* under his Subjection, burning and
 ting down the Woods they usually sheltered in,
 en they were at any time pursued; levelling the
 ys for the more commodious marching of his
 ny; which kept them in such awe, that for a
 g time they retained their Obedience.
 and now an Advantage happen'd, which open'd
 way to the *English* for the Conquest of *Ireland*.
 e Eastern part of that Kingdom, towards the Sea
 east, being in the possession of *Dormal-Mac-Ma-*
 , K. of *Lienster*; he, for his Cruelty, was ex-
 d by his Subjects, in conjunction with *Morrice*
 of *Meath*, and other *Irish* Princes: whereupon
 fled into *England*, and crav'd aid of *Henry* to re-
 re him, which (upon his taking an Oath of Fi-
 ity) was so far harkened to, that Pope *Adrian's*
 ence being obtain'd (upon promising him the
 ristian Religion should be establish'd in that King-
 m, with an Acknowledgment to the See of *Rome*)
 g *Henry* (tho' he was call'd into *Normandy* upon
 oubles arising there) nevertheless, granted his
 ters-Patents, to such as would voluntarily un-
 take the Enterprize of subduing *Ireland*; with
 at Encouragement for Settlements in Lands, if
 y prevailed. Upon which, *Richard* the King's
 , one *Fitz Stevens*, and many others, passed the
 Seas

The Eng-
lish in-
vade Ire-
land.

Ireland
submiteth
to King
Henry.

Two Suns
visible in
England.

Seas with an Army, seized the Town of *Wexford*, overthrew the *Irish* Army, took *Dublin*, restor'd *Dormal* to his Principality; and had at the time done greater things, but that the King returning from *Normandy*, countermanded the Army whereupon the Prince returned, and resign'd in his Father's hands the strong places he had taken.

Soon after this good beginning, the K. landed with a Royal Army, which so terrify'd the *Irish* Nation, That *Roderick*, the most Potent among them, and other Princes came to the K. at *Dublin* put themselves and their Territories under his Protection, intreating him To take upon him the Administration of the Government, as supream Lord of *Ireland*: Which he accepted, together with the Oaths and Fealty; feasting the Kings and Nobles in the City of *Dublin* at *Christmas*, with such Magnificence, as they never before had known. The settling the Civil and Ecclesiastical Affairs of the Country (as near as might be) agreeable to the Constitution of *England*, and placing strong Garrisons on the Sea Coast, he returned to *London*, and was received in Triumph. Thus was *Ireland* brought in subjection to the Crown of *England*, and has continu'd to this day. This Kingdom is in length 303. and in breadth 112. the whole Circumference near 948 Miles. About this time two Suns were visible in the Firmament at once, which in little time, joyning in one, shew'd (as it was then interpreted) the uniting of these Kingdoms; or rather, as some will have it, two Kings in *England* at once. For K. *Henry* so doated on *Henry* his Eldest Son, by *Margaret*, Daughter to the *French* King that he caused him twice to be Crown'd; Him the second time waiting at the Table: at which time the Bishop of *Winchester* whispered the young King in the Ear, saying, *Never any King of England had such a Sewer*: To which the young Man proud of his Advancement, said, *It was no dis*

his Father; for he was no more than the Son of an
 press, but as for himself, he was Royal Born on both
 sides; having a King to his Father, and a Queen to
 his Mother: Which words made the old King re-
 pent he had too soon advanced him; tho' he en-
 joyed not long this Honour, but soon after died in
 the flower of his Age.

Lewis, King of France, envying the Prosperity of the
 Henry, and fearing his growing greatness, stir- French
 red up not only several of the Nobility, as Robert K. rai-
 Earl of Leicester, Hugh Earl of Chester, &c. by bri- ses Trou-
 ging them with great Sums of Gold; but also his bles in
 French Sons unnaturally to rebell against him. Yet with England,
 wonderful Facility he overcame them; as also Wil- &c.
 liam K. of Scots, who sided with them. But leaving
 English Affairs a while, it will be convenient to
 say a little, what in the mean time was doing at
 home, &c.

I find then, that notwithstanding the Pope grew
 very formidable in Italy and else-where, there wan-
 dered not some that opposed him, in a manner, to
 his face, for Gerardus and Dulcinus Nauverensis,
 earnestly Writ and Preach'd against the Corrupti-
 ons crept into the Church of Rome; alledging and
 sending, that Prayers were not more holy in one
 place than in another; that the Pope was Antichrist,
 whose coming was so long since foretold; and his
 Cardinals, Bishops and other Clergy, those that
 upheld the Whore and the Beast mentioned in the
 Revelations. But for this Truth they were persecu-
 ted and slain, as were a great many of their Follow-
 ers: thus following the fate of the Waldenses, some
 of which coming into England, were by the procure-
 ment of the Clergy, branded in the Fore-head and
 banished; others wandered about and were famish'd
 to death, none daring to relieve 'em.

Frederick, Sir-named Barbarossa, succeeding Con-
 stantine in the Empire, passed into Italy, to settle
 Affairs

The Pope
 held to be
 Anti-
 christ and
 the
 Whore
 of Baby-
 lon.

Walden-
 ses per-
 secuted.

Affairs that began to be much out of order by the Pope's contrivance. *Adrian* hearing of his sudden coming, and not well knowing what his Intent might be, went to meet him at *Sutrium*, where the Emperor alighting, held his left Stirrup; at which the proud Prelate grew angry, because he had not held the right; whereupon the Emperor smilingly said, *He not being used to such an Office, might well be mistaken; and yet it ought to give no offence.* However the next day, to please him, he held the right Stirrup. After this they conferring together, the Pope plainly told him, *If he expected to receive the Crown at his hands, he must follow the steps of his Predecessor Carolus Magnus and others; who to deserve such favour, had done singular benefits to the Church.* And therefore required of him to put the Country of *Apulia* into his hands. Though this Demand was unreasonable, and the rather, because Duke *William* of *Sicily* was in possession of it, the Emperor however promised fair, and receiving the Crown of the Pope, returned to refresh his Army.

The Pope
and his
Cardi-
nals taken
prisoners.

Duke *William* having notice of all that had passed between the Emperor and Pope, altogether unwilling to part with so Rich a Country, sent to treat of an Accommodation; but the proud Prelate supposing he had him at an advantage, and could bring him to his own Terms, would comply with none of the Overtures he made. Now, tho' the *Roman Emperor* lay still, the Pope prepared to invade *Apulia*, which so enrag'd the Duke, that raising an Army of *Sicily*, he put *Emanuel* the *Greek Emperor* (whom the Pope had hired to invade *Apulia*) to flight, and took the Pope and his Cardinals prisoners in *Benventum*, compelling him to promise, he would not invade any of his Territories, forcing him moreover to Crown him King of both *Sicilys*; after which he suffered him to depart for *Rome*; where he found much trouble, because the Senators standing resolve

for the Choice of their Consuls, had drawn the people to their party; and his Excommunications nothing availing, he was forc'd to fly and shelter himself in *Ariminum*.

During these Contests, *Frederick* the Emperor required Homage, and an Oath of all the German Bishops to oppose the *Pope's* evil Practices; commanding, that no Legate should be received without his permission, nor that any Appeal should be made to *Rome*, putting his Name in all Letters, and Ecclesiastical Decrees before the Bishop of *Rome's*; upon which the *Pope* writ a menacing Letter, and the Emperor Answering in resolute Terms, the *Pope* proceeded to excommunicate him; writing to the Bishops not to obey him, stirring up both them and the Duke of *Apulia* in all they could to molest him, by raising troubles in the Empire; sending his Legates, tho' prohibited, to enter *Germany*: who used such irreverent Language, that the Princes of *Germany*, offended at their Presumption, had offered them violence, had not the Emperor prevented it; and strictly commanded the Legates forthwith to depart out of the Empire, not staying to speak with any one by the way: Then publish'd his Manifesto to all Princes, shewing the justness of his Cause, and the unjust Ground on which the *Pope* went about to augment troubles in the Empire; in which among other Expressions to the purpose, he has these:

The Emperor opposes the Pope's proceedings.

The Pope excommunicates Him.

Seeing our Reign dependeth upon the Election of the Princes of the Empire, and Principally from God alone; and furthermore seeing *St. Peter* himself has taught, that all Men ought to fear God and honour the King; then that we ought to enjoy the Benefit of Reigning over our Subjects from the *Pope*, is (in his opinion) contrary to the Ordinance of God and the Doctrine of *St. Peter*; and also he is manifestly proved a Liar that maintaineth to the contrary, &c.

This Manifesto highly displeased the *Pope*, Who

Pope Adrian
choaked
with a fly.

writ again to the Bishops of *Germany*, in what they could to disquiet the Emperor; yet in somewhat an humbler stile than before, rather perswading than commanding. But Death prevented his Intentions, for drinking a Glasse of Wine, he was choaked with so inconsiderable an insect as a Fly which stuck in his Throat.

This Pope towards the end of his Papacy, was wont to say, *That in the whole World there was not more miserable kind of Life than to be a Pope, and to come to the Pontificate by Blood; which is not to succeed St. Peter in Rome, but rather Romulus its first Founder; Who ambitious to Reign alone, slew his Brother Rhemus.*

Pope Alexander Excommunicates the Emperor.

To this Pope succeeded *Alexander the 3d*, Who proved an Instrument of all manner of Wickedness: he Excommunicated *Frederick* the Emperor, who for that Reason expell'd Him from Rome, and set up *Victor* Pope. But He got in again, and was a second time expelled; when flying to the *Venetians*, They espoused His Quarrel; and *Otho*, the Emperor's Son, unadvisedly fighting their Army (where his Father arriv'd) was taken prisoner: when to redeem Him the Emperor found himself constrain'd to submit to Pope *Alexander's* pleasure, who caused Him to lie prostrate with his face to the ground, and setting his foot on his Neck, said, *Thou shalt tread upon the Adder and the Basilisk, and shalt tread down the Lyon and the Dragon*: To which the Emperor reply'd not to thee, but to *Peter* was this power given: whereto the Pope angrily Retorted, *Yea both to Me and to Peter.* After this the Emperor fought against

The Emperor submits, and the Pope treads on his neck.

The Pope Poyson'd.

the *Turks*, the Pope in the Interim was poyson'd by his Bastard-Son in the mistake of a flask of Wine with which he intended to poyson a Rich Cardinal thro' the Oversight of the servant, who however hit well tho' not the Mark he aim'd at: and this wicked Son (of a wicked Father) having committed many

The Pope In his Proud State



by Murders, was at last slain by the Friends of those
 he had acted his Cruelty on. But to return:

The Emperor was not alone in these Troubles, for
 Henry King of *England* came in for his share, chiefly

R. Hen-
 ry vexed
 by Tho.
 Becket.

by the means of *Thomas Becket*, who by this time

He had promoted to the Archiepiscopal See of *Can-*

terbury. This high Advancement encreasing His

pride, He at first refus'd to take an Oath for the ob-

serving of such Articles as the rest of the Bishops had

done; alledging in excuse, that they were derogato-

ry to the *Pope's* authority; and finding the King

displeas'd at his Obstinacy, He privately went to

Rome, greatly complaining of His Injuries to the

Pope, thereby to stir Him up against the King: And

upon His return resigned the Great Seal, without a-

ny reason why He did so. Upon these Contests the

Inferior Clergy growing insolent committed many

irregularities, and their punishment for the greatest

Crimes were but small, because they were Judged by

their Ordinaries, Who allotted them only slender

penance for Murders, Thefts, Rapes, &c.

To Redress which Grievances, the King call-

ed a Parliament, Who Repeal'd King *Stephen's*

Laws, which exempted the Authority of Temporal

Judges, from meddling with Ecclesiastical Matters;

Re-establishing those Laws of former Kings call'd

Avia Leges. Now again the Articles were tender'd

to *Becket*, Who stoutly oppos'd them, drawing some

other Bishops to side with Him; but They (upon

sober Conferences held, wherein the Matter was

nicely debated) left Him again to stand alone: then

He offer'd to swear, if He might enter this Clause

(*Salvo ordine suo*) which as it were annihilating the

Life and Substance of the Matter propos'd, would

not be admitted; yet with great difficulty (fearing

the storm of the King's anger would fall heavy upon

them) the other Bishops prevailed with him to swear

to, and subscribe the Articles; but soon after re-

R. Ste-
 phen's
 Laws re-
 peal'd.

ting he had done it, he made his publick recantation and procured the *Pope* to dispence with his Oath whereupon the King sequestred into his hands all his Temporalties, and demanded 30000 Marks he had imbezled of the Crown-Treasury, during his Chancellor-Ship; which in a great Heat transported Him again to *Rome*, without the King's Leave. Who perceiving his aim was to incense *Pope Alexander* against Him, sent Ambassadors to the *Pope* desiring he might be divested of his Arch-Bishoprick and he would take care an other way Honourably to provide for him; but his int'rest was great in the Court of *Rome*, so that nothing of this kind would be heark'ned to; but on the contrary two Legats were sent to curse the King and his Realm, unless *Becket* were immediately restor'd to his See of *Canterbury*, and to all that had been taken from him but they were prohibited to enter *England*, and all *Becket's* Relations were Banished, so that for a while He remain'd obscurely in *France*, till the King's Threats remov'd him from the Abby of *Pontinack* yet underhand he was supported by *Lewis* King of *France*.

Two Legats are sent to curse the King and Realm.

Becket's Relations Banished.

The King confers with *Becket* in *France* but to no purpose.

The King perceiving thro' the obstinacy of this ingrateful Prelate many troubles likely to arise, and more threatnings; supposing to end the difference if he might confer with him, Sailed to *France*; and a Conference was held, in presence of *Lewis* King of *France*: but it came to nothing; for now he started another Exception, viz. he would Swear, but with this Clause 'entered (*Salvo honore Dei*) which being looked on as worse than the former, because hereby he intimated, *The Laws were made to God's dishonour, and so utterly void in themselves*; the King would by no means allow it: whereupon *Becket* boldly said That he feared none but God; and seeing what the King imposed on him, was derogatory to the Custom and Privileges of the Church, he would not be guilty of

obbing God of His Honour in swearing to it. And if
 the King sought to Establish those Laws, it should not be
 in his power to do it whilst he lived. And so not a-
 agreeing, they parted. The King after this conti-
 nuing to settle Affairs in *Normandy*, and hearing the
 Pope intended to interdict the Kingdom, 'till *Becket*
 should be restor'd; to prevent this Inconveniency, ad-
 mitted him again to his Arch-bishoprick; where still
 continuing to disturb the Kingdom, the K. in his
 Anger letting fall some words, some of his Atten-
 dants, without his Knowledge, went privately into
England, and finding *Becket* in the Cathedral at *Can-*
terbury, Assassinated him at the high Altar, toge-
 ther with three or four Monks that endeavour'd to
 defend his Life, and then made their Escape un-
 known. But the Pope no sooner had notice that his
 Minion was remov'd to another World, but he thun-
 dered out his Anathema's or Curses, upon which the
 King found he was constrain'd to purge himself on
 Oath, before the two Legates, sent to that end, that
 he was innocent of the Death of *Becket*. Yet they al-
 lotted him a severe Penance; which was to go
 from *London* to *Canterbury* bare-footed, and there
 to suffer himself to receive a certain number of
 stripes from every Monk of the Order, on his bare
 back; which was perform'd. And having offered
 at *Becket's* Tomb, he was absolved: And these trou-
 les that had lasted many Years, blew over.
 After this *Becket* (whose Father was a Citizen of
London, and his Mother one *Rose* a *Saracen*) was
 ainted, and many Pilgrimages in those Ignorant
 days made to his Shrine. Some write, To the
 King's Penance was added, that he should make
 War 3 Years in the Holy Land; but this was re-
 deemed by his erecting 3 Religious Houses.
 In this King's Reign, the *French* us'd their utmost
 endeavours to get *Normandy* into their possession;
 but were as often defeated, tho' they stirred up his

Becket
 for fear
 of the
 Pope's
 Curse
 restored.
Becket
 slain at
 the high
 Altar in
 Canter-
 bury-
 Church.

The K.
 goes bare
 foot to
 Becket's
 Tomb,
 and is
 scourged
 by the
 Monks.

*The K.
dies in
Nor-
mandy.*

Son *Richard* and others to side with them. Now in the Thirty fifth Year of his Reign, being in the Castle of *Chiven*, in *Normandy*, after a short sickness, he died; and those about him greedy of Prey, stript him, and left his body naked, 'till a Page came in by chance, and cover'd it with his Cloak. Some time after he was buried at *Fontevraud* in that Dutchy, with little Solemnity; having Reign'd 34 Years, 8 Months, and 11 Days leaving in Coin and Plate 900000 Pound; a far greater Sum than any King of *England* before him could boast of.

This King entirely delighted in a fair Concubine Nam'd *Rosamund*, whom Queen *Elenor*, in his absence, poisoned; for which he kept her under a hard Imprisonment to the day of his Death.

Dr. Foliot persecuted for blaming the evil Lives of the Clergy.

Also one *Dr. Gilbert Foliot*, of *Oxford*, perswaded the King to Reform the Abuses in the Church and Correct the dissolute Lives of the Clergy; which they fearing, complain'd of him to the *Pope*; who caused the King to put him out of his Protection, and a pestilent Heretick. After which the Clergy persecuted him, 'till they constrain'd him to leave the Land: So dangerous was it in those early days to advise to a good Life.

Richard the First of that Name, King ENGLAND.

Richard (Sur-nam'd *Cœur de Leon*, or *Lion Heart*, from his Strength and invincible Courage) Eldest Son living to *K. Henry the Second*, being in *Normandy* when his Father died, settling, well as he could, the disordered Affairs of that Dutchy, hasted to *England*: where the first thing

Note he did was, to Release the Queen, his Mother, from her long and strict Confinement, whom Henry, her Husband, could not be perswaded to forgive at his Death. The sense of her hard restraint, made her do many Charitable Acts, especially to Prisoners, releasing great Numbers, by paying their Debts, and so far wrought with the King, her Son, that he pardoned all Offences committed against the Crown, and what others he could, without doing Injustice to his Subjects. After which he was Crown'd by *Balwin* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*; wearing to keep several Articles exhibited to him by the Nobles and Clergy, tending to the Welfare of Church and State.

Richard
Crown'd
King.

The King, a little before his Coronation, put out Proclamation, That on that Day no *Jews* should resort to Court: yet foolishly, or obstinately, a great many of 'em did; to their general Misfortune; or being thrust out, and making some resistance, they were severely beaten, many wounded, and some slain. Which News flying into *London*; the meaner sort of People took up Arms, and fell upon all the *Jews* they could find, wounding, slaying, murthering, and burning their Houses: nor could those the King sent, restrain 'em for that day. They supposing (tho' wide of their Intent) that all the *Jews* should be Massacred by the King's Command. And this wrong Notion spread throughout all *England*; so that in all parts they suffer'd very much. At *York* about a Thousand of them fled into the Castle; but finding they were not able to maintain it, in a desperate despair, cutting the Throats of their Wives and Children, they threw 'em on the heads of the Besiegers, and after that each one slew himself. This madness of the People much troubled the King; who causing strict Inquiry to be made, who were the Promoters or Ring-leaders of these Tumults; three of them was found, and Executed

Many
Jews
hurt and
slain.

A desperate
Madness
of the
Jews at
York.

Some tumultuous
English
Executed.

cuted in *London*, and others in divers places
 King *Richard* being now at leisure to think on his
 Affairs, and calling to mind his Rebellion against his
 Father, and the Curse he had laid on him at his
 Death; hearing that *K. Philip* of *France*, and other
 Princes were preparing for the Expedition into the
 Holy Land, resolved to Accompany them. And ha-
 ving unadvisedly distributed among his Favourites
 the vast Treasure left by his Father, he, to enable
 himself for undergoing so tedious a Voyage, sold
 many Towns, Mannors and Lordships; as *Berwick*
 and *Roxborough-Castle* to the King of *Scots* for ten
 thousand Pounds; and the Lordship and Earldom
 of *Durham*, to *Hugh* Bishop of that See, for 16000
 Pounds, and many others; saying, for this cause
He was not unwilling to sell his City of London, if he
 could find any able to purchase it. Now having rais'd
 a great Sum of Money, he, to keep his Brother *John*
 (who was of a stirring spirit) quiet in his Absence
 created him Earl of *Lancaster*, and gave him in pos-
 session the Counties of *Devon*, *Cornwal* and *Notting-*
ham; Marrying him to the sole Heiress of the Earldom
 of *Gloucester*; by which he obtain'd the Lordship
 of that County. And then constituting *William Long-*
champ, Bp. of *Ely* Regent, and *Hugh*, Bishop of *Dur-*
ham, Assistant in his absence, he put to Sea with
 a gallant Fleet and Army, and prosperously Sail'd
 to the Isle of *Sicily*, the general place appointed to
 meet at, by all the Christian Princes engag'd in the
 War. Where it was unanimously agreed by them
 That such Wealth and Booty as God and good Fortune
 should allot 'em, was to be divided amongst them and
 their Armies.

The K.
 sets out
 to war in
 the Holy
 Land.

The Christian Fleet having continu'd a while in
 the Bay of *Messina*, weigh'd Anchor, and stood to
 Sea with a prosperous Gale; but a Storm soon a-
 rising, King *Richard's* Squadron was separated from
 the rest, on Board which were 30000 Soldiers, be-

fide

es many Nobles and Gentlemen of Note. When
 ling in with the Island of *Cyprus*, and being de-
 ed Landing to refresh his Army (they taking such *The K.*
 were sent on shore Prisoners) he forcibly Lan- *takes*
 d his Men, subdued the Island, and taking *Isaac* *Cyprus*
 e King of it Prisoner, Manacled him with Gold, *and that*
 d carry'd him to the Siege of *Achon*, having first *King*
 t a sufficient strength, to secure the Island to his *Prisoner.*
 ; and Marry'd *Bernegera*, Daughter to the King
Navarre, at *Lunzem*, a City in *Cyprus*; who had
 en presented to him by Queen *Elenor* his Mother.
 his thing greatly disgusted K. *Philip* of *France*, be-
 use for her his Sister was refus'd, which created
 ealousie between them.

King *Richard* leaving *Cyprus* in sure hands, sailed
Tyrus; where by the Malice of *Philip* King of
ance, he found such indifferent Treatment, that
 e next day he sailed again; and in his Voyage
 ok a great Bark, in which were 1500 *Saracens*.
 his Vessel carry'd *French* Colours, and was bound *The R.*
 r the Relief of *Achon*, or *Acon*, having on Board *takes a*
 eat store of Wildfire, and many Barrels of Ser- *great*
 nts, to scatter among the Christian Army; which *Ship of*
 ere, with many of the *Saracens*, thrown overboard. *the Sara-*
 en joyning the Christian Army before the Town, *cents.*
 Arrival so encourag'd them, that in a general *The Chri-*
 ult it was taken; *Saladine* Emperor of the *Turks* *istians*
 ing a Spectator, yet with his vast Army not daring *take the*
 relieve it, because several Armies of the *Turks* *City of*
 d *Saracens* had been before defeated by the valour *Acon.*
 the Christians. No sooner was the place entered,
 e *Leopold* Arch Duke of *Austria*, caused his Ban-
 to be fix'd on the Battlement, bearing his Arms,
 if by his valour it had been subdued; which rai-
 d in K. *Richard* such a haughty disdain, that get-
 g upon the Wall, he threw down the Standard
 d trampled it under his feet; this not only high-
 offended the Duke, but very much exasperated

Philip

*King
Richard's
Courage
in despising his
Enemies.*

Philip of France, adding to his former Discontent, so that envying the Glory of the *English* Nation, endeavour'd all he could to cross the Progress of Enterprize so well begun. But *K. Richard* so little appear'd to be concern'd at his Frowns, that he told him and the Duke to their faces, *If any one had mind to be displeas'd at his Actions, he should little regard it; and was ready with his Sword, to answer in the Field what ever should be objected against him.* And tho' for the most part they kept back, and at last altogether with-drew their Forces, he undauntedly gave *Saladine* Battle, and overthrew his great Army with incredible slaughter.

*He is
chosen
General
of the
Christian
Armies.*

After this Battle, *King Richard* being chosen General by the Knights Templars, with the consent of all the Christian Princes that remained in the Field, Marched the Army towards *Jerusalem*; which had been lost to the *Turks* a little before, and the Christians utterly driven out of it, but by the Stratagems of the King of *France* (who, contrary to his Oath given, and his Promise to the *Pope*, who to carry on this War had granted the Christian Princes a tenth of Ecclesiastical profits) after he had wintered his Camp in the Towns, *Saladine* had ruined his retreat, he found his Men so wasted, that he concluded himself not able to besiege that strong City so as to carry it, and Re-establish the Christian Kingdom: wherefore when a Knight ascending a Hill, called to him, saying, *From hence, Noble King, you may have prospect of the holy City Jerusalem*; he turned away his Eyes, and sighing, uttered these words, viz.

*K. Richard
deserted
by the
French,
not able
to win
Jerusalem.*

O Lord *Jesus Christ*, I beseech thee suffer not to see thy Holy City, since by the Malice of the Ingrateful Men, I am made unable to rescue it from the hands of the Enemies of thy Name. Yet after this, having performed many honourable Acts

Saladine still flying before him, not daring to engage him in the open Field, he returned to Achon; and though he met there some Adventurers out of Europe, yet finding Sickness had wasted his Army, and at the same time hearing the King of France, contrary to his promise, on his return, was invading Normandy, and had engag'd his Brother John against him in England, he concluded an honourable Peace for the Christians, Reserving Achon to them entire, and that they should have free Liberty to Exercise their Religion, and Trade into Ægypt and Syria. He exchanged the Island of Cyprus with Guy of Lusignan for his Title to Jerusalem (he being the last King of the Christians that possessed it, though now but only in Name, or Title, as being extirp'd by the Turks: from which Contract, many of our Kings were stiled Kings of Jerusalem) and so set Sail with his Queen, Nobles, and the remainder of his Army, for England. Being separated in a Storm from the rest of the Fleet, he was driven on the Coast of Histria, lying between Apulia and Venice, and saved his Life by swimming, his Ship splitting against the Rocks; attempting to go over-land in the Habit of a Knight Templar, he was taken prisoner by Duke Leopold, whose Country it was, and by him sold to the Emperor Frederick for 40000 Pounds, who paid his Ransom at 100000; Fourscore thousand Pounds of which was afterward raised in England, and the other twenty thousand, Leopold Arch-Duke of Austria was obliged to pay, thereby to engage the Pope to take off his Excommunication, laid on him, for presuming to make a Christian Prince a Prisoner, who had victoriously fought against the Infidels in the Holy Land. And indeed some Historians mention, that he became so terrible to the Turks and the Saracens, that they quieted their cry-

King
Richard
concludes
a Peace,
and
leaves the
Holy
Land.

The King
Ship
wreck'd,
and taken
Prisoner,

crying Children with only mentioning his Name to them; and if at any time their Horses or Mules stumbled, they presently cryed, *Hoist Jack what is King Richard before you?*

The King Ransom'd drives the French out of Normandy.

Heinrich rides France.

The Bishop of Ely troublesome to England.

When this King was enlarged from his Imprisonment, *Philip of France* Advertised *John the King's Brother in England*, that the Devil was got loose again, and therefore he must be more wary in the manangement of Affairs. King *Richard* thus released from his Imprisonment, hastened into *Normandy*; where the *French* contrary to the Oath of their King, had made inroad and possessed themselves of many Towns and Fortresses: but the terror of his Approach forced them to abandon most of them, the rest he reduced by main force. Then with a powerful Army entering *France*, he wasted all in his way with Fire and Sword, making so great desolation, that the whole Country trembled at his Name; and then return'd again to *Normandy* Laden with Spoil, accepting the Submission of those Peers that had sided with the *French*, and been in Rebellion against him, upon their Oath to be obedient for the future.

During the King's Absence from *England*, find all in confusion there; for the Bishop of *ly*, who was left Regent, being the Son of a Cow-herd, or as some say, a Swine-herd, of high promotion soon blotted his Original out of his Remembrance, and pufft him up with intolerable Pride and Insolency; so that he seldom rid abroad without a Guard of five hundred Halberdiers and Bill-men; keeping a sumptuous Table at the Expence of the King's Treasury; oppressing the Laity and Clergy very grievously; causing himself to be waited on at Table by the Sons of the Peers, and gave his Rustick Kinswomen in Marriage to them, though

th store of Money, extorted from Rich and
 or; so that between him and Earl John the
 King's Brother, were divers hot Contests; and
 any Complaints on both sides were sent to
 Richard, during his aboad in the Holy Land.
 at he affording little Redress, John combined
 with the Nobles to depose the Regent, who fear-
 ing to be imprisoned, secretly fled, disguised in
 a Woman's Apparel, carrying under his Arm a
 piece of Country Cloth; but being discovered
 at Dover, he was dragged on the Sand by the
 Women, and suffered the out-rage of all sorts of
 people, who mortally hated him: after which he
 was committed to the Tower, where he remain-
 ed till the Kings return, who released and re-
 stored him to his Bishoprick; but seeing him-
 self generally hated, he soon left it and travelled
 to Rome, where he died in much sorrow.
 Whilst King Richard was in Normandy, as I
 have said, Earl John (who had aspired to the
 Crown in his absence, and together with Geof-
 frey Arch-Bishop of York, had raised many trou-
 bles in the Realm, though the Queen Dowager
 opposed it all she could) hastened to him, tend-
 ering his humble submission, and delivering up
 Andover, with other places he had seized on;
 and laying all the blame on William Longchamp,
 Bishop of Ely, he was, with a sober Admoniti-
 on, received again into the King's Grace and
 favour. During this, great Contentions hap-
 pened between Baldwin Arch-Bishop of Canter-
 bury, and the Austin Monks; so that several
 complaints and Appeals on both sides were
 made to Rome: But Pope Urban taking
 part with the latter, commanded the Arch Bi-
 shop in his Letter, To restore and assail those
 monks he had deprived and Excommunicated, o-
 therwise threatening to appoint others to do it, and
 then

*He flies
 in Dis-
 guise, is
 taken and
 made
 Prisoner.*

*Earl
 John sub-
 mits him-
 self to the
 King, &
 is pard-
 ned.*

Pope Urban dies.

then they should refuse to render any Obedience or Reverence to him. But soon after *Urban* dying, and *Gregory* the Eighth succeeding him, who together with the King, favouring the Arch Bishop, the Monks found no redress, but were rather worse than before; the Arch Bishop recalling his Concessions; so that having a sharp Answer from the King, who told them, *He would not suffer the Liberties and Privileges of the Archiepiscopal See of Canterbury to be impaired or suffer Injury*, they were forced to return from *Normandy*, and be contented with their Cells. Pope *Gregory* dying, and *Clement* the third coming to the Papal See, he, as *Urban* had done sided with the Monks, and the Controversie was renewed: Whereupon the Arch Bishop removed from *Canterbury*, and Built his House at *Lambeth*, Anno 1191. Erecting a Church, and placing his Canons in it which caused another Disturbance in the time of *Hubert*, who succeeded *Baldwin*, and who is said to Die of Grief through the trouble and perplexity the Monks gave him.

The Arch Bishop builds his House at Lambeth

In this King's Reign also, happened a great Contest between *Geoffrey* Arch-bishop of *York* and his Dean, upon the latter preventing the form in singing Evening Song. Insomuch that the Church of *York* was suspended from Divine Service, and the Dean had been Sacrific'd to the Fury of the People, had not the Arch Bishop prevented it, so that for a private Quarrel, the People were debarred hearing the Word of God, or being instructed in any points of Religion. By which it appears, the Romish Clergy stand more upon punctilio's relating to their own Honour and Preference, than that they are careful for the Honour and Preference of God's Worship. But to return:

K. Richard, the better to confirm his Subjects to him, caused himself a second time to be crowned by Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, at Winchester, and created a new Broad Seal; by means of which, ^{A new Broad Seal.} all former Grants, and Patents becoming void, he reassumed into his hands whatever he had sold to enable him in his War against the Turks, &c. and such as had any Writings to pass this Seal, payed excessive Rates: so that he raised Mony to pay his Souldiers their Arrears, and defray other necessary Charges. News coming at this time that the French had besieged *Neuville* in *Normandy*, as he sat at dinner in his Palace at *Westminster*, he swore, *He would not turn his Back till he got thither with his Army:* When to save his Oath, a place was cut through the Wall to give him passage (which remained as a monument of his princely Courage and Resolution for many years after) and crossing the Seas, compelled them to raise the Siege, overthrowing their great Army with incredible Slaughter, at *Gyfors*, with a small force: Whereupon he thus expressed himself, *viz.* ^{The King will not turn his Back.} *Not We, but Dieu Et Mondroit, God and our Right, bath obtained this Victory;* From which time, the Kings and Queens of *England* have had this *Motto* placed under their coat of Arms. Nor gave he over this war, but pursued it with incredible success, till Pope Innocent the Third, pitying the effusion of so much Christian Blood, mediated a Peace between the two Kingdoms. ^{The Battel of Gyfors.} Soon after the Peace concluded, the Lord of *Monice* finding a great Treasure hid in the Earth, gave the King a part of it, as supream Lord of the Country, but he refusing it, and demanding the whole, the other denied to give it: Whereupon the King besieged his Castle of *Châlons*, in which Siege, ^{The King wounded at the Siege of Chalons.} he was taking a view, a Souldier shot him into the arm with an invenomed Arrow) after which he took the Castle; and the Souldier being asked of him, *How he durst shoot at the Person of a King,* P
stoutly

stoutly replied, *He had lost his Father and his Brethren in this War, and was glad he had so revenged their Blood.* Now when all concluded he would have been put to death with cruel Tortures, the King admiring his bold and resolute Answer, not only pardon'd him, and rewarded him with a hundred Shillings, for his daring Courage, but caused him to be safely conducted out of his Camp, least the Soldiers in revenge of the Fact he had done, should nevertheless have slain him; and in three days after the King died of his Wound received at this Siege viz. April the 6th, Anno 1199. when he had reigned 9 years and 9 months, and was buried at Fonteverard in Normandy; being laid at his Father's Feet, as himself commanded, to atone, as he supposed, for his rebelling against him, and the other troubles he had brought upon him in his life-time.

This King *Richard* was a Prince of great Valour, daring to attempt any honourable Enterprize, how difficult soever it was, where there was any possibility of atchieving it. Some indeed have noted him to be proud, covetous, and given to Luxury; from a Story that one *Foulk* charged him with, of having three wicked Daughters, which he entreated him to put away; to which the King replied, *That I will in bestowing them presently; therefore Pride I bestow on the Knights Templars, Avarice to the Cistercian Monks, and Luxury to the Prelates:* And now (said he) you according to your desire I have properly bestowed them in Marriage. This King left no lawful Issue, and therefore his Brother *John* ingratiating himself with the Nobles, took upon him the Crown, though *Arthur* Son to his elder Brother *Geoffry* was living as will appear in the next Reign.

*R. Richard
pardons his
Murderer.*

*King Ri-
chard dies.*

*The King's
3 Daugh-
ters proper-
ly bestowed*

JOHN, King of England, who began
his Reign, April 6. An. 1199.

JOHN, the youngest Son of Henry the Second K John.
(whom his Father usually called *John-Lack-*
and, because there was no Inheritance assigned
to him) after the death of *Richard* the First, making
himself Nobles, and some leading Commoners his
friends, with the Wealth he had got together in the
former Reign, setting aside *Arthur* his Nephew, Son
of *Geoffrey* his elder Brother, caused *Hubert* Arch- K John
bishop of *Canterbury* to place the Crown on his crowned,
head, at *Westminster*; taking an Oath to defend the and takes
Church, and maintain the Laws of the Realm, as an Oath.
they were then in force; and to remedy whatsoever
should be found prejudicial to the Welfare of the
Kingdom. Soon after his Coronation, having set-
tled Affairs here, he passed into *Normandy*, and
was received with much magnificence. Then a truce A Truce
was concluded between the Crowns of *England* and between
France; and the Estates of *Normandy* and other England
provinces swore fealty to him: But soon the King and
of *France* broke Truce, Knighting *Arthur*, King France,
of his Nephew, and caus'd him to do Homage Soon broke.
to him for *Normandy*, *Britany*, and other Territo-
ries subject to *England* in those parts; preparing an
army to assist *Arthur* for the recovery of them as
his rightful Inheritance. King *John* thinking timely
to break this Confederacy, by his Ambassador de-
manded a Conference with the King of *France*, which A Confe-
was granted, and they held about an hours debate rence with
concerning these matters, but the Demands on the the K. of
part of *France*'s were so unreasonable, that France.
the Interview broke off without any effect.

K. John.

*The Popes
Legate
comes into
England.*

*War with
France.*

*Prince Ar-
thur lost
his Life.*

*The French
take Nor-
mandy.*

No sooner was King *John* returned, but the Pope's Legate came into *England*, commanding him, under pain of Excommunication, to set the Archbishop at Liberty, whom he held a Prisoner for raising a Rebellion against him: but he stoutly refused it, saying, he took him in the Field fighting in Armour, not becoming his Function, and therefore he would confine him, till such time he should swear never to bear Arms again. This creating a misunderstanding between him and the Pope (as also an other contest he had with *Geoffry* Archbishop of *York*, for excommunicating the Sheriff of the County, because, at the King's Command, he had executed his Office in the Diocess of *York*, without the Archbishop's leave) so elated *Philip* of *France* that he peremptorily demanded of King *John* the delivery of all his Territories, beyond the Seas, to be consigned to *Arthur* his Nephew; and being refused, he declared War: so that many fierce Battles being fought, at length the French were defeated and *Arthur* taken Prisoner; who being brought to the presence of King *John*, and mildly admonished by him to give over his Pretensions, and live quietly in his favour; the young Prince boldly demanded, *Not only the Possession of all the Transmarine Territories, but also England, as due to him by right Birth and Inheritance.* This resolute Demand so displeased King *John*, that he sent him Prisoner to the Tower of *Roan*; where (as some write) attempting to escape over the Wall, he was drowned in the Ditch. Others are doubtful whether his drowning was not ordered by the King, to remove out of the World such a formidable Rival to his Crown. However it was, this is certain, the poor Prince lost his Life; which *Philip* of *France* so deeply resented that with a puissant Army he over-run all *Normandy*. Other troubles at the same time happening in *England*, commencing first at *Canterbury*, the usual source of the troubles of the Kings of *England*, viz.

In the year of our Lord 1205, died *Hubert Arch-* *K John.*
bishop of Canterbury, when immediately, without *The Monks*
making the King privy to it, the Monks assembled *of Canter-*
and elected *Reynold*, or *Reginald* their Prior to that *bury with-*
Dignity : Placing him in the Metropolitan Seat, and *out the*
singing *Te Deum* at Midnight, charging him on the *King's*
Oath he had taken to them, not to discover he was *Knowledge*
elected, till he should come to *Rome* to be con- *elect an*
firmed by the Pope ; yet he kept not his Promise, *Archbishop.*
so that the King soon got intelligence of all that had
passed : When the Monks fearing his Displeasure,
requested of him that they might Canonically elect
an Archbishop, since the other being elected clande-
stinely, and at Midnight, they would not abide by it.
This much pleased the King ; whereupon he licenced
them so to do, recommending to them *John Grey*
Bishop of *Norwich*, as a Man fitly qualified for so high *Another*
Dignity. And in this they freely complied with *Election.*
him, electing the Bishop he had recommended.
Whereupon the King immediately sent to *Rome* to
obtain the Pope's Consent, in order to confirm him
in the Archiepiscopal See : But the Suffragans of
Canterbury not being of this Council, were so offend-
ed, that they sent to the Pope, praying in humble
manner to stop both the Elections till they had right
known them. And from this Beginning sprung an Ocean
of Troubles to the King and Kingdom ; for the Pope
endeavouring by all means to cross this Election, set
on one *Stephen Langton*, a Creature of his own ; *The Pope*
which encouraging the Clergy to oppose their So- *recom-*
veraign, they became very unruly and disorderly *mends an-*
throughout the Kingdom. *other ABp.*
The King being sensible a Storm was gathering,
laboured to dissipate it, if possible, by sharp means ;
and therefore seized on the Lands and Goods of
such Clergymen as were forwardest to hinder his
purposes, and wilfully neglected their Duty ; be-
ginning in the Bishoprick of *Lincoln*, then in that
of *Ely*, and so proceeded to others ; to which end

R. John. he directed his Letters to admonish them before he executed his Intentions.

The Pope would impose an Archbishop on the Monks.

Whilst these things were doing ; though the Pope had approved of *Reynold*, yet the Monks refusing to receive him after many debates between them and the Suffragans of *Canterbury*, the Pope took pet, and disannulled both the Elections, imposing on them *Stephen Langton*, Cardinal of *St. Chrysogon* ; but they alledged, they durst not receive him, without the King's leave first obtained ; and moreover, that it was prejudicial to their ancient Liberties ; to which the Pope in a fury replied :

The Pope's Command to them.

It is Our Pleasure, and We Command You to know that We have full Power and Authority over the Church of Canterbury ; neither are we wont to wait for the Consent of Princes : therefore, it is Our Will, that under pain of the great Curse, You immediately elect him whom We have appointed, and no other.

The Monks elect as the Pope directed.

This Speech so terrified the silly Monks, that they immediately elected *Langton*, and fell to singing *Te Deum* ; only *Dr. Helias Brantfield* withdrew from among them, being the Person sent to *Rome* by the King, to solicit the confirming the Bishop of *Northwich*'s Election. This made the King very angry whereupon he sent his Letter throughout the Kingdom in the following Tenor.

The King's Letter on this occasion.

THE King to all Men, &c. Know ye, That *Simon Langton* came to our Palace at *Winchester*, and in the Presence of the Bishops besought Us That We would receive his Brother *Stephen Langton* as Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and when We spake him concerning the Reservation of our Dignity to Us he boldly declared he would condescend to no such matter, unless We wholly cast Our Selves upon Courtesy : Wherefore We command every of you, take notice of this as a Contempt done to Our Crown and Dignity, and not have regard to any relation

on but what Our Trusty Messenger Reginald, shall K. John.
further inform you, &c.

The Monks returning, and not daring at the Pope's Commandment but to oppose the King in favour of Langton, He, to remove such Thorns from his side, banished them to the number of three-score and four, immediately sending worthy Persons to the Pope with Letters to expostulate with him; First, That he had uncourteously set aside the Election of the Bishop of Norwich, and imposed on him by consecrating Langton Archbishop of Canterbury, a Man to him altogether unknown, and who had a long time liv'd in France conversant with his Enemies: Secondly, That it was derogatory to his Crown and Dignity, as well as to the antient Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, that a Stranger should be so admitted. Minding him moreover of the liberality of England to the See of Rome above other Nations, which such Practices would cause him to restrain, and also take care his Subjects should not be rambling to the Court of Rome to waste the Treasure of the Nation on any Appeals, or other matters, seeing He had in his own Realm Archbishops, Bishops, and other Learned Men sufficiently able to judge and determine any Causes, Things, or Controversies that might arise within his Kingdom, and consequently had no need to have them tried abroad.

The King banishes the Monks of Canterbury.

A Contest between the King and Pope.

This so thoroughly nettled Pope Innocent, that he immediately dispatched a proud Letter to the King, informing him, He had writ after a threatening and upbraiding manner, frowardly and spitefully, when his Duty required him to have born whatever he should have imposed on him, as of right bound so to do; derogating from his (the Pope's) Honour, as no Prince beside had presumed to do: twiting him with the Proverb of Solomon, viz. That the Net is cast in vain in the sight of any Bird, and pressing him to receive Langton, or he should

The Pope threatens the King.

K. John. should dearly repent it: But the King little regarding his proud Treatning, the Pope in a great Chafe sent a strict Command to *William* Bishop of *London*, *Eustace* Bishop of *Ely*, *Giles* Bishop of *Hereford*, and *William* Bishop of *Wencheſter*, that if the King refused to recall and receive lovingly the Prior of *Canterbury*, and his Monks, they should without delay interdict the whole Kingdom, which he refusing to do, unless the Archbishop might be preferred to some other Benefice, if the Pope requested it for him, they pronounced the Sentence, shutting up the Church Doors, and walling them without; so that as some write, for the space of six years there was neither Divine Service, Marriages, Christning, nor Funeral, but the People lived like Heathens, not distinguishing the Sabbath from other days, but working and sporting in all alike.

England
interdicted
by the Pope,
and no Di-
vine Ser-
vice for
six years.

The King
banishes
several
Bishops.

For this gross Indignity put upon himself and the Kingdom, these Bishops and many others of the Clergy that sided with them were banished, and their Effects seized into the King's Hands, prohibiting all his Subjects on strict Penalties from having any Inter-course with the Court of *Rome*; whereupon the Pope sent *Pandulph* and *Durant* his Legates to perswade him to be reconciled to *Langton*, and peaceably admit him to the Archbishoprick, and to recal the Monks and Clergy out of Banishment, &c. To this he consented all, but admitting *Langton*; professing, *If another was chosen, he would not oppose the Choice*: Upon which Refusal they pronounced the Pope's Curse against him, and all Persons of what Degree soever, that should do him any manner of Service, absolving his Subjects from their Allegiance, Duties, and Oaths; requiring, *All Christian Princes to make War against him, as the Grand Enemy of the Church of God*. But this doing no great matter, the Pope proceeded further to pronounce the Sentence of Deprivation against him, assigning over his Crown

The King
cursed
by the
Pope's Le-
gate, and
his Sub-
jects dis-
charged
from their
Allegiance.

own and Kingdom to Philip King of France, If ^{K. John.} secret violence, or open Hostility he could deprive ^{His King-} of his Life, or take from him the Kingdom of ^{dom given} England, and other his Dominions : And in this he ^{by the Pope} shewed him to be Antichrist, by setting him- ^{to K. Phi-} above all, using the name of Christ as a Colour ^{lip of} practise all Antichristian Wickedness and Abomi- ^{France.} nation; Pandulphus upon pronouncing this Sentence ^{The Le-} to the King, That Holy Church was never wont ^{gate's} to degrade Archbishops without reasonable Cause, but ^{Speech.} to correct Princes that were disobedient to her; and ^{unto you in verbo Dei}; That neither you nor any ^{you have shall after this day be crowned.} To ^{the King's} which the King replied, What shame can you do me ^{stout An-} than you have done; had I known but this be- ^{swer.} I should have kept you out of the Land, and ^{red a sawcy Priest from prating thus to a King,} I should have kept you out of the Land, and ^{is God's Anointed}; and so flung away in much ^{pleasure.}

A little after this a knavish Monk, to lessen the ^{g's Credit with the People,} was set to Prophe- ^{the King's Death}; saying, Christ had thrice ap- ^{ed to him in the shape of a Child,} peared to him in the shape of a Child, and told him the ^{should not over-live Ascension-day}; but prov- ^{notorious Liar,} ed him a notorious Liar, for he lived and reigned many ^{years after,} years after, taking an Oath of his People, To be ^{Liege Subjects to him,} Liege Subjects to him, in defiance to the Pope's ^{ininations.} And Alexander the second King of ^{being incited to practise against him,} being incited to practise against him, he ^{ed Scotland with an Army,} ed Scotland with an Army, constraining him ^{low submission to sue for Peace.} to low submission to sue for Peace.

Whilst these things were doing, Philip King of ^{ce had prepared huge Forces to invade and} France had prepared huge Forces to invade and ^{England,} England, as the Pope's Donative; but 300 ^{Ships laden with Stores and Provisions falling} Ships laden with Stores and Provisions falling ^{the hands of the English,} into the hands of the English, he found himself ^{ly disappointed}; yet King John perceiving the ^{would not give over persecuting him,} would not give over persecuting him, to make ^{weather without the advice of his Nobles,} weather without the advice of his Nobles, ^{sub-} sub-

K. John. submitted to his Legate, meanly on his Knees, *knowledging his Disobedence, and craving Pardon*
King John resigning at the same time his Crown and Kingdom
meanly sub- to be at the Pope's disposal: so that the Legate
mits to the taking the Crown, kept it four days, and then
Pope, and turn'd it to the use of him and his Heirs, Reserving
angers his nevertheless 1000 Marky early, as an Acknowledgement
Nobles. of England's Subjection to the See of Rome; thereupon he was absolved; but this mean spirit in their King contrary to his wonted Course stirred up such Indignation in his Nobles, that constantly adhered to him in all his Troubles turned to his great Prejudice; for they siding with

The Nobles
desert the
King, and
side with
the French

Lewis Son
to Philip
of France
Lands with
an Army.

The Pope
curses him
and his
Adherents.

Great Spoil
made by
the Rattle.

Philip of France, he sent Prince Lewis his Son invade England, whom the Pope on pain of Excommunication forbade to land, Considering the Kingdom under the Protection of the Holy See, and part of the King's Patrimony: But King Philip refused to hinder his Son, though he so commanded him to do so, ledging, That no Prince could give away his Kingdom to the See of Rome, or to any other, without the consent of his Nobles, Prelates, and People in General; therefore it ought not to be protected by the Pope, as being nothing to do in temporal Affairs. Whereupon Lewis landing, was joined by many of the Nobles and their Forces; but to avert this Storm, King John so dealt that the Pope sent Guallo his Legate, who pronounced the Curse against Philip and his Son, together with all the Nobles and others engaged in this War, which so startled the ignorant Souldiers, that they through fear left their Leaders in the Field, and for the most part returned home, and others who sought after Prey here, that many great Lords were under this Curse, supposed they did God service in falling upon and destroying their Estates: so that being reduced to Poverty and unable to resist, they found themselves constrained to submit to the King's Clemency who, upon their low Submission and Promise

the Obedience received them into favour, where *K. John.*
on Lewis left destitute of Aid, was compelled
 to after to depart the Land: And now having
 fly run over most of the material Transactions in
 Reign according to my former Method, I come
 look a little abroad.

First then, I find that the Pope having brought
 land to truckle to the See of *Rome*, supposed to
 ke it a President to other Princes, in order to the
 compassing of which he assembled a Council at *La-*
 an, where he caused the Assignment *K. John* had
 de of his Kingdom to the See of *Rome* to be pub-
 ed, magnifying his own Industry and Diligence
 bringing it to pass, and requiring in a manner
 like submission of *Otho* the Emperor, *Peter King*
Arragon, and *Raymond* Earl of *Tholouse*; and
 y disdainng such meanness of Spirit; for this and
 tended Hereiſy, they were excommunicated, and

Several
 Princes ex-
 communi-
 cated by
 the Pope.
 at no Person should presume to be crowned Emperor,
 be submitted to the Pope and received the Imperial
 edem at his hands, acknowledging submission to the

of *Rome*: But they despising his Threats, and
 uling any Acknowledgment or Subjection to the
 of *Rome*, the Pope conceiving much Wrath
 Indignation against them, so wrought by his
 ates, and the Influence he had over the Prelates

those Dominions, that he raised their Subjects in
 bellion against them, causing the shedding of
 ch innocent Blood. In the same Council Tran-
 stantiation and Auricular Confession were con-
 ed and established, decreeing it moreover Dam-

to any that should speak evil of the Pope. Great-
 Mischief this Pope had done, had not God re-
 ed him out of the world by sudden death in the
 ight of his Pride and Ambition, and so all his fur-
 Projects fell to the ground.

John being now at leisure, went over to *Ireland*,
 ed the rebelling Irish, and took the Homage
 and

The Pope
 causes their
 Subjects to
 rebel a-
 gainst
 them.

The Pope
 dies sud-
 denly.

K John.

K John

poisoned by
a Monk.

and Submission of 20 of their petty Kings; but on his return, travelling to settle the Affairs of the Kingdom, and dining at *Swinstead* Abbey near *Lecoln*, one *Simon* a Monk who had been absolved and taken the Sacrament for that villainous Purpose pretending to drink to the King in kindness, incited thereto as is supposed by his Superiours, poisoned both himself and the King in a Bowl of Wine, and thus the Monarch who had no rest in his lifetime found quiet in his Grave, when he had reigned 16 years, 6 Months, and thirteen days, and was buried at *Winchester*.

In this King's Reign, one *Gualter Maxes* Archdeacon of *Oxford* writ and preached against the Pride of the Court of *Rome*, for which he was grievously persecuted by the Clergy.

Also *London* Bridge was finished of Stone, as it now is in being. begun in the Reign of *Henry* the Second before built only of Timber, and the Citizens had first liberty to choose their Mayor.

HENRY the Third of that Name, King of England, who began his Reign, October 19. An. 1216.

K Hen. III.

KING *John* dying by Poison (as is mentioned but not till three days after he had taken though the Monk who had swallowed a larger Dose ended his wicked life immediately) gave advice to his young Son *Henry*, who was to succeed him the Throne to be more kind and loving to his Subjects than he had been, and labour by all fair ways to keep Peace and Unity in his Kingdom, musing and lamenting his own Errors and Failings, leaving behind him three other Sons, viz. *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal*, *William de Valence*, and *Guido* *Despens*.

three Daughters, *Isabel* married to *Frederick* K Hen. III.
 Second, Emperor of Germany, *Elenor* married to
William Earl Marshal, and another to the Earl of
Gloucester. Some Authors write he had a fifth Son
 who was a Bishop, yet leave it in a manner doubt-
 whether he was legitimate, or his Son by some
 concubine.

After this King's Death the Nobles debated whe-
 ther they should receive his Son *Henry* as their King,
 who exceeded not nine years of Age, because many
 of them had given their Oaths to Prince *Lewis* of
 France to secure the Kingdom to his behoof; but *Wil-*
liam Earl-Marshal, a Man of great Authority among
 them, in a grave Oration so well perswaded them,
 setting forth, *The Innocency of the young Prince*
Henry, *however his Father might have ill deserved*
them, and the danger of receiving a Stranger, which
led to the enslaving the Nation: That *Henry* was
 received as King, and the Earl of *Pembrook* appoint-
 ed his Guardian and Regent of the Kingdom during
 the King's Minority; and so on *Simon* and *Jude's*
 Anno 1216. he was Crowned at *Gloucester* by *Henry*
 the Pope's Legate, the Nobles so appointing, crowned
 the Pope hereby obliged, might be a fast Friend King.

England, and oppose the Intendments of the
French, for Prince *Lewis* was yet in the Land with
 weak Power; but the Pope's Legate upon the
King's siding with *Lewis*, interdicted *Wales*, and Wales in-
 denounced the Pope's Curse against such Nobles terdicted
 others, that adhered to him: Whereupon by the
 he recruited his Army, besieged *Dover-Ca-* Pope's Le-
stle fifteen days, but not being able to win it, he gate.
 retired aside and took the Castles of *Berkhamstead*
Hertford, and after some of his Forces joining
 with the Barons of his Faction, took *Lincoln*.

Whereupon King *Henry's* Army advanced, and a The French
 great Battle was fought, wherein most of the French in Eng-
 Nobles were slain, and Prince *Lewis* utterly over- land over-
 thrown, was forced to fly and shut the remainder of thrown by
 his K. Henry.

K. Hen. III. his Forces with himself into London, expecting from France; but the Lord Eustace, who was coming with 100 Ships was encountred by 18 English Ships appointed to guard the Cinque Ports, and himself with his whole Fleet taken. As for the Lord, his Head was immediately smote off, with many others, and the greater part of his Men put to the Sword; which News made known to Prince Lewis, he fearing (upon the offers the King had made the Londoners, To confirm under his great Seal all their Franchises, Liberties and Privileges, that they would deliver him up as they had been required, made suit to Guallo the Pope's Legate, and the Archbishop of Canterbury to mediate a reconciliation: so that after much debate about this matter it was agreed for his Charges, He should receive

The French shut up in London; Article, and have leave to depart the Land.

thousand pounds (some write fifteen thousand Marks) and thereupon immediately to depart the Realm, never more to return again, nor incite the Frenchmen so to do.

After this they met at Merton, and Lewis with those that had taken part with him were absolved by the Pope's Legate, so a friendly leave being taken, departed and sailed to France in the Ships provided to transport him and his Followers; yet the Pope's Legate cunningly for his own Gain leaving the Clergy out of the Absolution and Pardon that had assured Prince Lewis, upon Inquisition such as were found to have sided with him, were allotted either to go to Rome and purge themselves before the Pope, or to leave their Livings, or redeem them with great Sums; so that Hugo Bishop of Lincoln payed this Account 1000 Mark to the Pope, and 1000 to the Legate, to be restored to his Bishoprick, and thus means the crafty Legate transferred to Rome the greatest part of the Treasure of the Kingdom for in those days the Clergy were the chief money Men in England.

The Pope's Legate fleeces the English Clergy.

Some Historians (and particularly Florilegus) mention that this Expulsion of the French was followed

ed upon the discovery a dying Nobleman of ^{K Hen. III.} Nation made in Confession, viz. *That Lewis* by the aid of the Barons subdued the Kingdom, and utterly to banish them, and appoint Noblemen of own creating to manage all the Affairs of State, which led them to revolt from him, and submit themselves to Henry, whereby he became weakened and unable to attend.

About this time Pope Innocent the Third being ^{Pope Honorius} Honorius who succeeded him sent his Letter ^{writes to} K. Henry, earnestly exhorting him, *To the Love of Virtue, and live in the fear of God, but above all* ^{K. Henry.} *enjoined him to reverence the Church, which is the* *of Christ, and to Honour the Ministers that officiate in it; in whom (continued he) Christ himself is* *revered or despised.*

There goes a Story that when this Honorius was in very low Station, Innocent appointed him to Legate into Spain, but wanting money to per- his Journey, he sent his Servant to borrow it, meeting with many disappointments, at last grown melancholy an aged man came unto him, and told him, *His Master should not go Legate, therefore* *should not trouble himself about the Money, for the Pope* *should die, and he should succeed him; which the Fel-* *scrupling as a thing very unlikely, he told him it* *was sure as that day the Saracens had taken Jeru-* *salem, which should not be recover'd again till* *Apocry, and so vanished: But whether this be a* *likely Story, or true, I determine not; but cer-* *tainly it is, that he was Pope and came to the See* *unexpectedly.*

In the third year of the Reign of K. Henry, a ^{A Parlia-} ^{ment held} ^{at Lon-} ^{don.} Parliament was held at London, in which the King re- turned all former Grants made by his Prede- cessors relating to Franchises, and the Liberties and Privileges of the Subject, which so highly pleased Nobles and Prelates assembled, that they granted an Aid of two Shillings upon every ploughed Land

R. Hen. III. Land in *England*, and *Hugo d' Burg* his Chief favourite was made Chief Justice of the Realm, wth the better to please the common sort of Peo^{ple} whose livelihood mostly depended on trade, removed by Proclamation a multitude of Strangers out of the Kingdom, who had encroached on Natives, and much impoverished them, by unselling and living sparingly, whereby they were more capable to vend their Wares, and work at cheaper rates, taking the Castles and Fortresses soon after out of the hands of such Strangers who had held them during the Troubles, when as *Robert de Brent*, who held the Castle of *Bedford*, refusing to deliver it, he was expelled by main Force, and many of his adherents put to death as Rebels and Traitors against the King, but he in consideration of the many signal Services he had done the King's Father was pardoned, but deprived of all his Lands and Goods, and banished the Realm; and *Henry* better to confirm him in the Peoples Love called himself a second time to be crowned, Anno 1220.

Strangers
banished
the King-
dom.

K. Henry
a second
time
crowned.

And now Peace being restored, such a number of Monks, Friars, and other Religious, as they were called, swarmed in *England* (and like Locusts devoured all the pleasant things of the Land) that those who compute the least, allow them to be 100000 who lived idle, and fed on the Labours of others, by which the Pope not only here, but in other Countries where were the like swarms, maintained their Power over Princes; for these as his Armies were ever at his Command, though not by fighting yet by over-awing and perswading, they dealt with the People on their behalf to rebel at their pleasure, and persecuted such to the utmost of their power, who refused to be obedient to them, nor scrupled any decrees or ordinances of the Church of *Rome*; and with these sided mostly the Nobles and inferiour Clergy: so that when Pope Innocent sat at *Rome*, Anno 1212. divers Noblemen

the Country of *Alsatia* opposing these begging Friars and lazy Monks, and holding contrary to the Traditions of the Romish Church, *That every day was free for eating Flesh, so it was done temperately, and with giving thanks to God; also, That it was a wickedness to restrain Priests from marrying,* were so persecuted, that as *Hermanus Mutius* tells us, one hundred of them were in one day put to the fiery trial and received their Crowns of Martyrdom.

K. Hen. III.

Many persecuted for opposing the Monks and Friars, and in *Alsatia* 100 suffered Martyrdom.

King *Henry* now grown to riper years, and calling to mind the many Injuries the French had done his Father and himself, with the Supplies the Parliament had given him, he raised an Army, and put them under the leading of his Brother *Richard*, and many expert Commanders to recover his Transmarine Dominions, who warred so successfully that they soon recovered the Provinces of *Poitiers* and *Gascoign*, fortifying the strong places, and turning into *England* were joyfully received by the King and People, and soon after the King in person passed the Seas with a Royal Army, and subdued a great many Cities, Towns, Forts, and castles to his Obedience; which Courage and Bravery of the English so startled the King of *France*, that after long consulting, he found it necessary for the safety of his Kingdom, that a Peace should be concluded with the English, and to obtain it surrendered most of the Places and Countries he had taken from King *John* during his Troubles.

An Army sent into France who War successfully.

The King goes in Person. A Peace is concluded on advantageous Terms.

This Good beginning lasted not, for soon after the King's return, some unkind differences happened between him and his Barons, but as yet it broke not into open contention and a Civil War; for by banishing Strangers from his Court, of whose numbers daily thronging thither, the Nobles grievously complained, they seemed to lay aside their Animosity, and the Earl of *Chester* dying without Male Issue, only leaving four Daughters, the King annexed

K. Hen. III. nexed that Earldom to the Crown, giving the Ladies an Equivalent in Mannors, Parks, and other Tenures, when the more to strengthen his Alliance abroad, he married *Edward* his Son to *Eleanor* Sister of the King of *Spain*, settling on him the Province of *Guyan*, constituting him Lord of *Ireland*, and creating him Earl of *Chester* and Prince of *Wales*.

Edward the King's Son married, and created Prince of Wales, &c.

The King narrowly escaped being murder'd at Oxford.

After this the King being at *Oxford*, the Monks and others whom he had disgusted, hired (as is supposed) a desperate Villain to send him out of the World after his Father, for in the night time he crept in at the Window of his Chamber, but the King escaped by being later than usual abroad; however this fellow being taken there with Weapons about him, was tortured and put to a cruel death, by having his Flesh torn off with hot Pincers, yet such was his resolute Constancy, that no Torments could bring him to a Confession of those who had set him to attempt this wickedness.

Whilst these things passed in *England*, King *Philip* of *France* died, and Prince *Lewis* his Son succeeded in the Throne, and forgetting his former Promise, or not regarding it, invaded the King's Territories beyond the Seas; whereupon raising a very great Army he wasted it over, and warred so furiously on the French, that with much effusion of Blood he drove them out of many places in *Normandy*, and worsted them in several Battles; but their Power daily encreasing, he contented himself thus to have given a Cheque to the daring Insulters, and so settling Affairs in the best manner, returned again to *England*, in whose Absence a Marriage was concluded between *Alphonfus* the French King's Brother, and the Earl of *Tolouse's* Daughter, giving in Dower the Earldom of *Poitiers*, in right of which *Lewis* claimed Homage of the Earl of *Mar* for such Lands as he held in that Province; but he resolutely refused it: Upon which he invaded the Territories, *K. Henry* hereupon taking part with

him, and going with an Army to his assistance, a ^{K Hen. III.} cruel Battle was fought near *Bourdeaux*, in which ^{K. Henry} the English were oppressed by the great numbers of ^{is put to} the French, and compelled to leave the Field, King ^{the worst} Henry (who very much signalized his Courage and ^{in France.} Conduct in that Fight) very narrowly escaped either being slain or taken Prisoner; so that he returning to England the Earl of *March* found himself necessitated to accept of such conditions as the Victor imposed on him.

The King being returned, strengthened his Alliance by concluding a Peace with the King of Scots, ^{A Peace} but this stood him in little stead: for now the time ^{concluded} approached, that he was in a manner to be overwhelmed in Domestick Troubles, for a Parliament be- ^{with Scot-} land.

ing assembled at *Oxford*, called from the Distractions occasioned thereby in the Land, *Insanum Parliamen-* ^{The mad}

ment, ^{Parlia-} The mad Parliament, many Grievances were ^{ment at} presented before the King, as his bestowing Favours on ^{Oxford:} unworthy Persons, who wasted the Treasure, and

Violation of those Liberties and Privileges he

solemnly granted, ratified, and confirmed to

the People, and many other matters: and he not

contentedly redressing them to their Minds, they un-

derstood to do it themselves, establishing many things

inconvenient to the Publick, but on the contrary

highly derogatory to the King, very much intrench-

ing on his Prerogative, and in Conclusion appointed

twelve Noblemen, entituled *Les douze Piers*, or the

twelve Peers, empowering them to maintain and put

in execution the Laws, and such other things as might

conduce to the benefit of the People, and the well or-

dering and governing the Realm, of which the

Barons of *Gloucester* and *Leicester* were the leading

men; and for their proceeding in these weighty

affairs, a Patent was granted under the King's

Hand and Seal, and they sworn to execute the trust

reposed in them without favour to any, or suffering

the least wrong to be sustained by the meanest Subject.

*The King
against his
will signs
a Patent
against his
Preroga-
tive.*

K. Hen. III.

Corrupt
Officers
displaced
from about
the King's
Person, &c.

This the King consented to with great unwillingness, and so after some other matters had passed, an End was put to this Parliament, and the Peers began to put their Power in Execution with much diligence, displacing all corrupt Officers, and such others as they disliked about the King's Person, placing such as they concluded more fitting in their Stations, which put the King into a melancholy humour, when hoping for better usage he summoned another Parliament, which was so far from relieving him, though he had complained of his hard usage at the opening of it, that they confirmed all what had been done in the former Parliament, and put him under stricter Conditions, procuring the Archbishop of Canterbury, and nine other Bishops, to pronounce *a Curse against all Persons of what degree soever, That by Council, Direction, Arms, or otherwise should presume to withstand or hinder the execution of those Laws, or the Authority reposed in the twelve Peers.*

The King
sails to
France
and con-
fers with
K. Lewis.

The King now more perplexed than before, his Melancholy transported him to leave the Kingdom and sail into *France*, where he conferred with King *Lewis*, who friendly and Royally entertained him, telling him, though but flatteringly, he was much troubled in Conscience, that he detained from him his Dutchy of *Normandy*, and other Territories, and was willing to resign them; yet all that proved but a *French* trick in the Kings Distress, to wheedle him out of more, for he intending to conclude an inviolable Peace, that he might be the better able to deal with his turbulent Subjects at home, to procure it, surrendered to King *Lewis* his right of *Normandy*, *Anjou*, *Poitiers*, and *Mayn*; however some of the Councillors of *France*, who had a kindness for King *Henry*, seeing him so easy, perswaded *Lewis* in good nature to restore them again, since the Wars likely to break out in *England*, would not suffer the *English* to obstruct him from recovering the

them in a fair War at his pleasure, which would be *K Hen. III.*
 more Honourable, and redound effectually to his
 Glory among the Christian Princes, who would
 otherwise look upon this surrender as an unjust
 constraint, because King *Henry* was in his hands, and
 might do it out of fear, and this reason so far
 wrought, that they were at this time resurrendred to
 him and his Heirs, and so King *Henry* returned home, *The King*
 yet found himself in no better condition than before; *returns*
 for the twelve Peers obstinately persisted in manag *from*
 ing their charge, but thinking somewhat to overawe *France.*
 them, at great expence in the Court of *Rome*, he pro-
 cured the Popes Bulls to dispence with his Oath,
 and also to absolve him, and every one that had
 sworn to maintain those new Laws, but the Peers
 took little notice of it, proceeding in their former
 method, to place and displace Officers and Ministers
 of State; whereat the King much perplexed, caused
 the said Bulls to be Published in all the chief Towns, *The King*
 and Cities of *England* and *Wales*, commanding none *Publishes*
 should obey their Authority on Pain of Imprison- *the Popes*
 ment, taking an Oath of the Citizens of *London*, *Bulls*
 from twelve years old and upward, to bear him true *against the*
 Faith and Allegiance, and be Aiding to him and his *Barons.*
 Heirs, against all that should dare any way to op-
 pose him.

Upon this the Barons withdrew to the Marches of *A Civil*
Wales and raised an Army, so that many cruel Battles *War breaks*
 were fought between the King and them; the *out.*
Londoners, notwithstanding their Oath so lately made to
 the King, siding with the Barons whom they per-
 ceived mostly to be the stronger, despising and mak-
 ing light of the Kings Commands and Threats, Let-
 ters and Messages, &c. received them into the City
 with great Joy. And tho this difference was by
 both Parties, put to the Arbitrament of *Lewis* King
 of *France*, and he giving sentence favourable to
 King *Henry*, viz. *That all the said Ordinances and*
Laws should be Annihilated, and that from thenceforth,

K Hen. III. no Power or Authority should remain in the twelve Peers touching any matters contained therein; Yet this came to nothing, for the Barons looking on him to be partial on the Part of the King, refused to stand to his award, which so Encouraged the Rable of the City, that on the Ringing of the Bell at St. Paul's they Armed; And Marching to the Palace of Richard the Kings Brother, who the Princes of Germany had Elected King of the Romans, they utterly ruined it killing some of his Servants, and carrying away all his Plate and Rich Furniture, which caused him of friend, who had done the City many good Offices ever after to become a Mortal Enemy to the Citizens.

*An evil
Action of
the Lon-
doners.*

King Henry, seeing things at this pass, resolved to push home and try the fortune of another field Encouraged thereto by the success he had gained over Sir Peter Mountfort, and Simon, Son to the Earl of Leicester near Northampton, the latter of which with many others he had taken Prisoners; So that both Armies meeting near Lewis in Sussex, such an obstinate and cruel fight was maintained on either side, that the Son spared not the Father, nor the Father the Son, neither was there any regard of Kindred, or Relations had, but without remorse such a slaughter was made, that they waded And deep in blood; for fighting about fourteen hours twenty thousand Men were slain on both sides, and in this Battle, the King and his Brother Richard were taken Prisoners, with Divers Nobles and Knights of their Party, whereupon a Treaty Ensued.

*A cruel
Battle
fought, and
the King
taken Pri-
soner.*

*A Treaty
and Peace
concluded.*

In this Treaty it was agreed, That King Henry by New Articles, and a Renewal of his former Oath (dispensed withal by the Pope) should confirm the Authority of the twelve Peers, and all other Laws and Ordinances: (This caution provided) That two Lords Spiritual and two Temporal, should scrutinize the said Laws and Ordinances, and if upon strict Examination any thing appeared convenient to be Altered or Amended

they were Impowered to do it; and if they differed, or K. Hen. III.
 agreed not in their Opinions, the Duke of Britany, as
 Umpire should have full Power to decide the difference.

Hereupon King Henry, and his Brother Richard, The King
 giving their two Sons, as Hostages, were set at Liber- set at Li-
 ty, and a Parliament being called contrary to the berty.
 King's Expectation, confirming all the Oxford Laws
 and Ordinances, he found himself constrained to
 renew his Oath; whereupon Pardoning all such as
 had maintained them, the Hostages (who had conti-
 nued about nine Months in Dover Castle) were set at
 Liberty, and a Truce Ensued. But now it is time I
 look abroad a little, and see how, during these trou-
 bles in England, affairs went in other Parts.

The Pope finding many People had their Eyes so A Persecu-
 opened, as to see into the Errors and Corrupti- tion raised
 ons of the Church of Rome, and fearing a general by the
 falling away from her, set himself, and stirred up such Pope.
 Princes as were at his Devotion grievously to Perse-
 cute them; Especially those called *Albigenses*, who
 mostly resided in the Territories of *Tholouse*, under the
 protection of *Raymond*, Earl of that Country, who
 lived a quiet Peaceable Life, yet would not believe
 many things Practised in the Church of Rome, but
 counted them Erroneous, and not Consonant to the
 Word of God. These the Pope charged as People
 heretical, and caused the French King to besiege
 them in *Tholouse*, whither they had retired for
 safety; but such a Famine and Pestilence fell in the The Persi-
 French Camp, that after the loss of the greater Part cutors de-
 of the Army they were obliged to retire, losing stroyed by
 their General *Simon de Montfort*, to whom the Pope Pestilence
 had given all the Territories of the Earl of *Tholouse*: and Fa-
 or pressing eagerly to force the Gates of the City, mine.
 he had his Brains beat out by a stone thrown at him
 from the Battlements.

Notwithstanding this (which might seem the
 immediate hand of Heaven, upon the Enemies of
 Gods People) the Pope gave not over Persecuting,
 causing

K.Hen.III. causing them to be slain and put to sundry tortures where-ever they fell into his hands, depriving Earl *Raymond*, of his rightful Inheritance, tho he offered To give an Account of his Faith, and if any thing was held Erroneous and not Catholick within his Territories, it should be reformed or submitted to Church censure. And tho' the Clergy of France opposed the Pope in this his Illegal proceeding, it availed not, for he refused to have his pleasure disputed, were it right or wrong, and to Execute his wicked purposes, *Lewis King of France*, Marched an Army of 50000 Men into the Earls Province with the Popes Legat, who by the way Excommunicated the said Earl, and all that adhered to him, Interdicting the whole Country. The French likewise laid all in their way waste with Fire and Sword, till they came to *Avignon*, the chief City, which they straitly besieged; at which Siege Numbers of them dyed by Pestilence and Famine, 3000 were drowned by the breaking of a Bridge, and the Citizens in frequent sallies cut off many Thousands more, and at this Siege *Lewis King of France*, flying from the Pestilence in the Camp dyed in an Abby not far from the City, but the Popes Legat kept his Death secret, offering the Citizens Peace, If he and his Prelates might enter to examine them, touching the Articles of their faith, thereby he might certify his Lord the Pope, whether the bad reports he had heard of them were true or not. Upon which, taking an Oath of him not to Injure them, the Gates were opened, at which time the Soldiers laid in Ambush, rushed in and slew almost all the People in that Great City. The Legat Encouraging them not to spare Man, Woman, or Child; tho' little before, he had given his Oath for their safety, they laid it waste with all the Country about, cruelly Murthering the Inhabitants, of which when the wicked Pope was certified, he greatly joyced.

Lewis King of France, dyes at the Siege of Avignon.

The Popes Legat sworn. Avignon taken by surprize, and the People cruelly slain.

During

During this and other Persecutions, raised by the K. Hen. III.
 Means, a difference arose in England, be-
 tween the Earls of Gloucester and Leicester, which
 Henry secretly fomented, when causing Prince
 Edward his Son, to joyn with Gloucester and many
 other Nobles, Leicester in a bloody Battle was over-
 come, himself with Simon his Eldest Son, and Sir
 Hugh Spencer, with many others of Note, slain near
 Evesham in Worcestershire, and the Soldiers in des-
 patch cutting off the Head, Hands, Feet, and Privy
 members of the Earl, sent them into Divers shires,
 as Trophies of their Success and Victory. Leicester and Gloucester disagree. A Bloody Battel. Leicester slain.

The King no sooner heard of this, but he resolved
 to throw off his Yoke, and therefore whilst he had
 the Sword in his hand called a Parliament, who re-
 pealed the Laws and Ordinances that had held him
 in subjection, whereupon they were brought forth
 and Cancelled: And now the King calling to mind,
 what the Londoners had done against him in the time
 of his troubles, deeply swore, To lay the whole City
 in Ashes, but the Prince and others Interposed, yet
 would he not be pacified, till they caused an Instru-
 ment to be ratified with their common Seal, in
 which, They confessed their Rebellion, humbly craving
 pardon, and without restraint or exception, submitted
 their Lives, Lands, Goods, and the whole City to his
 mercy; Whereupon paying a fine of 10000 Mark,
 they were restored to their Liberties, Customs, and
 Privileges. The Oxford Laws repealed in Parliament. The Londoners humble themselves and are Pardoned.

The King yet fearing, that the Earl of Gloucester
 might raise new troubles, by reason of his Popularity,
 contriving to be rid of him at any cost, caused
 an Army to be raised in order to pass into the holy
 Land, of which he made him General, but he for
 private Reasons refusing that Honourable trust,
 Prince Edward took it upon him, whom Elenor his
 wife Accompanied in that tedious Voyage, and
 when he was wounded by a Saracen (who presented
 him a Letter) with an Impoisoned Knife, and his
 Physicians Prince Edward goes with an Army to War in the Holy Land.

R. Hen. III. Physicians despaired of cure, this Virtuous Lady the hazard of her own Life, daily sucked the Poiss out of the wound till it healed, and the Prince passing forward did many Noble Exploits, overthrowing the Infidels Armies, and in Conjunction with other Christian Princes took several strong holds, in his Absence, King Henry dyed at the Abby of Edmunds in Suffolk, November 16. Anno 1275. in the 57 Year of his Reign, and was Buryed at Westminster.

King Henry
dyes.

In this Kings Reign, Pope Gregory the Ninth had a desire to see *England*, and writ to him that he might have Letters of safe Conduct, but the King well weighing what mischiefs the Popes had done in *England*, at a distance, refused it, as not desirous to have any of them so near him.

EDWARD the First of that Name since the Conquest King of England, &c

R. Edw. I. WHEN King Henry the Third dyed, Edward his Eldest Son was absent at *Vasconia*, but in his behoof, the Crown was secured from any one might pretend to it, by the diligent care of Robert Kilwarby, Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, in Conjunction with other Bishops, and some of the Leading Nobles, who Proclaimed him King, and sent Messengers to entreat his speedy return, which he delayed not, and was joyfully received of his People, being Crowned together with his Virtuous Queen, by the before-mentioned Arch-Bishop, viz. Anno 1272. Immediately after which, he laid aside his Crown, protesting he would no more wear it, till he recovered all the Countries lost, during the foregoing Reigns, greatly bewailing the Death of

Edward
and his
Queen
Crowned.

father, to whom he had been exceeding dutiful all his life time, and when he had settled the Affairs of England, his first Enterprize was to reduce Wales to his obedience, when passing into that Mountainous Country with a Gallant Army, cutting down the Woods, and Leveling the rugged ways; he after Divers Conflicts, brought *Lewelin* the Prince thereof, and his Brother *David* into such streights, that they were Constrained to submit, at what time King *Edward's* Queen being great with Child, she was sent to *Wernarvan* to Lye-in, and being brought to bed of a Prince, who was Named *Edward*, he Created him Prince of *Wales*, admonishing the *Welch* to receive and honour him as a Native of their Country, whereupon *Lewelin* and his Brother falling again in Rebellion, they were vanquished by Sir *Roger Mortimer*, the Kings Lieutenant of the *Western* Marches, and being taken Prisoners, had their heads smitten off in the Field, which being sent to *London*, *Lewelin's* head was born through *Cheapside* to the Tower, with a Crown of Silver placed on it, which none sense fulfilled the Prophecy, that had chiefly excited him to this Rebellion, viz. That the time approached he should be Crowned in *London*, and so both their Heads were placed on the highest Pinacles of the Tower.

This weighty affair being settled, the King called Parliament, in which many wholesome Laws were enacted, and among these one Impow'ed, All Bakers, Baliffs, and all other Officers, to Punish Bakers Several not making Bread fixable, by setting them in the Pillory. Also Millers for defrauding People of their Corn. And in an other Parliament, Statute of Mortmain was Enacted, Restraining Lands, or Rents to Churches, or Religious Houses about the Kings leave first obtained; For indeed these Religious Lived Lazy, and sat upon the Idles of families, having by their Insinuating ways, gotten

Lewelin
Prince of
Wales,
and his
Brother
beheaded.

Several
good Laws
Enacted.

R. Edw. I. gotten into their hands a great part of the best Land in the Kingdom (and being exempted from Tax unless they voluntarily submitted to them or the Pope, for the furtherance of his designs so ordered the Crown was thereby much disabled, especially times of War, and it was made Death, *For any Diminish, or Counterfeit the Kings Coin.*

*The Jews
Banished.*

Soon after this it being found, that the Jews had a Correspondency with the *Turks* in the Holy Land to the great prejudice of the Christian Affairs, the *Eastern Parts*, they were Banished out of *England*, to the Number of 1590 Persons, all their effects being seized to the Kings use, by which means and the fining corrupt Judges and Officers of State he got into his Treasury no less than 236000 Marks. And now the King in honour to his Queen for saving his Life, *By sucking the Poison out of his wound in the Holy Land*; Set up Crosses in all the cross ways Quartering the Arms of *Spain*, her proper Colour with those of *England*.

*Dr. Scotus
Preaches
against
the Popes
proceeding,
and is
Persecuted.*

About this time *Dr. Scotus* Sirnamed *Subtilis* openly Preached against the Popes Arrogancy, *Laying Claim to St. Peter's Keys, and setting him above all other Bishops, also his abusing the Episcopal Authority, and that Transubstantiation was not only contrary to Scripture, but to sense and common Reason.* But the Pope setting the Clergy upon him, they Persecuted him into silence, and utterly ruined him. Notwithstanding some of the Nobility approved his Doctrine, laboured to shelter him from their fury.

Whilst these things happened in *England*, great troubles arose in *Scotland* upon the Death of *Alexander*, who Dyed by a fall from his Horse, he leaving no Issue, Male or Female, his three Sisters, the Eldest Married to *John Baliol*, Earl of *Loway*, the second to *Robert Bruce*, Lord of *Valley Andrew*, and the third to *John Hastings*, Lord of *Gavenny*, an *English* Peer) laid their several claims

the Crown of Scotland, and not agreeing after
 any Reasonings and Arguments, much War and
 bloodshed ensued : So that the Kingdom being mi-
 serably wasted, they at length agreed to put the De-
 cision of this weighty Controversy to King Edward,
 rendering their Titles with the Crown to him,
 an Instrument under their Hands and Seals, till
 he should determine the matter, and till which time
 he had full Power to Administer the Affairs of Scot-
 land, when consulting the Prelates and Lawyers of
 both Kingdoms, and hearing all the Allegations
 made by the several Parties, Claiming, he gave
 Judgment for John Baliol, who had Married the
 eldest Sister, and upon his doing him Homage,
 placed the Crown upon his Head, but Baliol soon
 after repenting this, and not only Renouncing his
 Homage, but Invading England ; King Edward en-
 tered Scotland, wasting it with Fire and Sword from
 the Coast to Sea ; taking Edenburg, Dunbar Castle, Ber-
 wick, and many other strong places, overthrowing
 an Army of 60000 Scots, slaying 25000 of them,
 which brought Baliol into such distress, that repen-
 ting his Rashness, he came to King Edward in
 burning Weeds, and humbly submitted himself
 to the Kingdom to his disposal, whereupon he was
 taken to the Tower of London, where he was main-
 tained Honourably at King Edward's Charge.
 The King of Scots being a Prisoner in England,
 the Earl Warren was appointed, King Edward's
 Lieutenant of Scotland, Hugh Cressing Lord Trea-
 surer, and William Barnsly Chief Justice, and many
 of the Scots Nobles, the better to secure them from
 disturbing the Peace of that Kingdom, were con-
 stituted within the Marches of England, then King Ed-
 ward Warred successfully on the French, taking many
 Cities in Guyan, Gascoigne, and other Transmarine
 Territories, which they before had possess them-
 selves of by Treachery and Surprize, and to furnish
 Wars (tho' the Pope made a great bluster, at
 the

K. Edw. I.

King Ed-
 ward gives
 his Judg-
 ment
 for John
 Baliol to
 be King of
 Scotland.

Baliol sent
 Prisoner to
 the Tower
 of Lon-
 don.

K. Edw. I. the procurement of the Clergy to hinder his proceedings) he demanded half the profits of the Ecclesiastical Revenues seizing into his hands, the superfluous Plate, Moneys, and Jewels of the Churches, Abbies, Monasteries, and other Religious Houses, promising to restore the value when his Treasury should be enabled to do it by other means; whereupon he underwent their secret curses (for speaking out, the boldest of them durst not) yet underhand he laboured to stir up his Subjects to Rebellion against him, but that failing they required in order to reimburse themselves, that the Statute against Monachism, might be Annulled, to which the King reluctantly Answered, *As of himself, he had not the Power to make Laws, so without the consent of his Parliament, he could not Annihilate any*; And then whether he constrained the Clergy, to bring into his Treasury all such Moneys as they had promised to remit to Rome, to be disposed of by the Pope, towards the Maintenance of the Wars in the Holy Land.

The Scots subdued by King Edward, and apply themselves to the Pope.

The King of France perceiving King Edward too hard for him, laboured to raise the Scots in Rebellion, to oblige him to withdraw his forces out of France, and in that particular effected his wish; however the Scots paid so dear for siding with the French, for being unable to make any long resistance, they secretly sent to Pope Boniface the Eighth, Entreated him to take the Kingdom of Scotland into his Protection as being a Part of St. Peter's Patrimony: Whereupon the Proud Prelate sent his Mandate to King Edward That he should hereafter forbear to disquiet or molest the Scots, for as much as they were a People exempt, and properly appertaining to the see of Rome, and that could not otherwise be, but that the City of Jerusalem must of necessity defend its own Citizens, and as Mecca maintain such as trust in the Lord, &c.

To this the King resolutely Answered with an *R. Edw. I.*
That he would to his utmost keep and defend
which was so evidently known to be his right
against the Pope and all others; But for all this the
gave not over, but insisted to have the surcease
in all Hostilities; yet after many debates and rea-
urged on both sides, the Pope finding the English
ability resolved to stand by their King, with their
es and Fortunes, and that his Paper fulminations
of little force, to carry any mischievous effects
ing with them. The greater part of the Clergy
this time siding with the King, he began to argue
re Calmly, Entreating him to give over his Wars
against the Scottish Nation, and Release all such, both
ritual and Temporal, Persons as he had made Pri-
ers on that occasion; also to recall such Deputies and
Ministers of State, as were placed by him in that
dom, alledging it to be a great scandal to the
istian Religion, and no less prejudicial to the Church
Rome, to proceed in this Enterprize; and therefore,
he would claim any right or Title to Scotland, he
ould do well to send his Proctor to make out such claim
he see Apostolick, there to have the definitive sen-
passed for or against him, as reason and right
ould sway in upright Judgment.
 When the King understood the Popes mind in
 Terms, he called a Parliament at Lincoln, by
 Advice of which, he directed his Answers to *The Kings*
 , affirming out of Ancient Records and History, *Answer.*
 from the first time the Britains settled in this
 , Scotland was ever held to be one with that part
 called England (And after citing many sub-
 ons made, and Homages paid by the Kings of
 land to the Crown of England, he concluded);
 in the Year of our Lord, 1230. Alexander King
 Scots, had Married Margaret, his Sister, at York,
 re he did Homage for Scotland to King Henry his
 her, and that Alexander, Son to the said Alexan-
 had done Homage to himself upon his Coronation
 at

K. Edw. I. at Westminster; and that these things being so known, he had no reason to submit to the Arbitrament of any Person living, when his right was so apparent to that Kingdom.

*The Peers
write to
the Pope.*

This Letter of the Kings was seconded by a very sharp one, from all the Temporal Nobility, subscribed by them, and their Seals affixed to it, Whereby they declared their unalterable determination to stand for their Sovereign, and justify him in all he had done in this Account, to the Honour of the English Nation in general, and in the particular securing his own right protesting to defend him with all their utmost Power and Strength against any opposers whatsoever, and bind him all that in them lay, from doing any thing which might be prejudicial to his Crown and Dignity, by relinquishing the least part of what was so well known to be his right, &c.

*Wallis
Executed
for Treason.*

The Pope finding no good to be done this way, laboured to incite Philip King of France, to War upon King Edward, but that Prince, who had much kindness for Boniface (tho' he promised him large Sums to further the Enterprize) at first put him off with delays, and in conclusion, Contracted a firm Amity with the King of England, restoring all the places as he held in Gascoigne. This Project failed, he stirred up one William Wallis, a Courageous young Gentleman, who drew the Scots into Rebellion; after doing many Gallant Exploits was routed, taken Prisoner and sent to London, where he was Executed as a Traytor.

*The Scots
over-
thrown,
Bruce flies
to Nor-
way.*

To quiet these stirs, the King called another Parliament at Westminster, whither Robert Bruce and other Nobles of Scotland came, and swore Allegiance to King Edward; but soon after breaking their Oath, and falling into Rebellion, the King made such a vastation in the Country, that the like desolation had never before happened. Whereupon Bruce, who pretended to the Crown, fled to Norway, and continued there during the Life of

ing, who brought with him into *England* the Mar. K. Edw. I.
e chair from *Scone*, wherein the *Scotish* Kings had
en Crowned, and placed it in *Westminster Abbey*,
ring on it a *Prophetick* distich, verified in King
ames the First of *England*, viz.

*Here e'er this stone is placed, the Scot shall find,
and there shall Reign, for there his Rule's assigned.*

Also many writings much prized by the *Scots*, and
ring settled the Kingdom in Peace, caused many
d Laws to be Enacted.

Pope Boniface all this while fretting at the Kings
olution and Success, resolved to cross him nearer
me; for he and the Church of *Canterbury*, having
sted and appointed *Robert Burnel*, Bishop of *Bark*,
that Archiepiscopal see, Boniface nulled that ele- The Pope
on, and Imposed on the suffragans *John Pecham*, a sets up an
earure of his own, for Arch-Bishop, sending his Arch-Bi-
ll to that purpose, stuffed with matter opposite to shop against
hiprature and Primitive Institution, viz. That no the Kings
mind.
urch, nor Ecclesiastical Person, should from that time
mit themselves to the King, or any Temporal Magi-
ates in obeying their Mandates, or disposing of any of
r Goods or other Effects, as Tribute or Subsidy, but
ld be entirely exempted from such subjection, to any
nce or his Interest, &c. Which Bull or decree ma-
estly opposed the Ordinance of God, and what
Peter has laid down for our Instruction.

Upon this the King called a Parliament, and there-
the Clergy refusing to contribute any supplies, al-
ging the Popes Bull in excuse, he put them out
the Protection of the Laws, suffering any to In-
re them without Redress, and because *Pecham*, the
pes new Elected Arch-Bishop, persisted in his ob-
tacy, he caused all his Effects to be Seized and
rolled in his Exchequer, and threatened the like
the rest of the Bishops, which made them com-
y, and so the Pope lost his expected Advantage;
Pecham submitting, was received into favour, and

K. Edw. I.

soon after this, *Boniface* quarrelling with *Philip* King of *France*, and endeavoured to raise his Subjects in Rebellion, Excommunicating and Cursing him to the fourth Generation. After a long contest between them, in which the Pope was proved a Heretic for denying the Resurrection and Immortality of the Soul, he was taken in *Avignon* by *Schrieve* King *Philip's* Captain of his Guards, and all his wealth, exceeding the Riches of all the Kings of *Europe*, which mostly became a prey to the Soldiers, and refusing to renounce the Popedom, was threatened with Death, crying piteously for mercy. But having been degraded and carryed through the City on a ragged Colt with his face to the tail, he was put into Prison and almost famished; yet in the end the Soldiers who had abundantly enriched themselves with the spoil, dispersing and leaving a slender Guard, the Inhabitants Rescued him, whom with a flood of tears he begged for bread (who a little before enjoyed such Plenty, and in turn had Lorded it over Kings and Princes) with which, and Wine they supplied him in abundance and had in Recompence his Blessing; but fearing worse mishap, he privately escaped out of the City and hasted to *Rome*, where soon after for shame and grief he dyed.

Pope Boniface dies at Rome.

As for this Pope, he succeeding, or rather Invading after the Death of *Celestine*, behaved himself so Imperiously, that he deposed many Princes, and Excommunicated Kings that refused to be confirmed by him, Banished many Cardinals, as Schismatics, to no other end properly than to fill his Coffers with their Treasure, and Acted so many wickednesses that the *Romans* kept a Festival on the Day of his Funeral.

A cruel Persecution by the Tartars and Scythians.

By reason of the Distractions, this and some former Popes raised in *Christendom*, they gave an opportunity to the Barbarous *Tartars* and *Scythians*, invade it with three huge Armies, one consisting

less than 500000 Men, who destroyed Henry K. Edw. I.
 Prince of Poland and Silesia, together with his
 whole Army, wasted those Countrys, Hungary and
 Hungary, with many others, slaying so many Peo-
 ple, that cutting off but an Ear from each, they fil-
 led nine large sacks with them, which they carryed
 home as a Trophy of their cruelty, and about a
 Million of Men, Women and Children into mis-
 erable captivity. But to return —

King Edward having now well settled his Affairs
 in England and Scotland, and being a Widower,
 married the King of France's Sister, so that a strict
 amity ensued, and the King restored entirely to
 the Londoners all their Liberties and Franchises, Re-
 leasing also John Baliol, sometimes King of Scotland Baliol re-
 leased
 of Prison, who going into Normandy, Lived up- and dyes
 Lands Assigned him, which from thence were in Nor-
 mandy.
 manded Baliol's Lands, and there ended his Days.

During these Transactions the King had notice,
 that many exactions and out-rages had been com-
 mitted by his Officers and Ministers of Justice, to
 the great oppression of his Subjects; whereupon he
 caused a strict enquiry to be made, which was called
 the *Assize of Bampton* upon which such a number of offen-
 ses were detected and fined, that this Amounting
 to a vast Summ, greatly replenished his Exhausted
 Treasury: And Prince Edward his Son, being now
 grown up, having a loose Companion Named *Peirce*
Gaveston, he drew him into many evil Practices, of
 which Dr. Langton, Bishop of Chester, complaining
 of destroying his Game in his Park; *Gaveston* was
 banished, and the Prince for a time Imprisoned to
 humble him, but was soon released. and upon the
 death of Edward Earl of Cornwall, Son to Richard
 King of the Romans, that Earldom was Invested in
 Prince Edward, which Title and that of Chester, have
 been Inseparable from the Princes of Wales.

K. Edw. I.

King Edward dies.

A Remark on this Kings Clemency.

The Kings great Prudence in detecting a Pretended Miracle.

Not long after stirrs arising again in Scotland, the King Marched thither with an Army, and soon quieted them, but upon his return dyed at *Burg-on-Sands*, Anno. 1307. When he had Reigned successfully 34 Years, 7 Months and 21 Days, in the 69 Year of his Age, and was Buryed at *Westminster* commanding by his last will, if the Scots still Rebelled His Son should carry his Bones with him through Scotland, till he had utterly subdued them; That *Gaveston* should never be recalled from Banishment, and that his heart should be carryed into the Holy Land and be Buryed, allotting 20000 Pound for the charge of the latter. Among other matters mentioned, I find two things Remarkable recorded of this Magnanimous King, viz. Once being a Hawking, and his Servant having offended him, he gave him some furious words whereupon the Gentleman replied, *It is well for me the River is between us. But that shall not save you* (Answered the King) and thereupon forced the Horse into the River at the Peril of his Life, and attained the further bank with his drawn Sword whereupon he that had offended bowed down his neck to receive the fatal stroke, which submission appeased the Kings fury, that he put up his Sword and freely forgive the offence. The second is, that Queen his Mother in her Elder years, having been taken her self to a devout Life in a Religious House an Impostor (set on by the Monks to have the King her Husbands Body removed) declared to her, That praying before his Tomb he had received his sight, being before blind, and that it had been revealed to him in Vision, that his body should be removed to such a Monastery, and there it would work greater Miracles. At this the Queen Listened with much attention, and was very desirous to have it done at what charge soever it came to, that she might procure him for working such Miracles to be Canonized a Saint; but King Edward being present, and knowing the fellow to be a dissembling Knave and his Fathers Enemy replied

replied, It should not be done, because he was sure he was a Lyar, and no such Miracle had been wrought ; (continued he) thou hast been such a Traytor and Villain to my Father, that were he now alive, he would rather cause both thy Eyes to be put out, than if thou wert really blind, he would by any means restore thee sight ; And so commanded him out of his presence, which frustrated the Monks of their Intention, to have gulled the Credulous Queen out of much Money, in order to Erect a stately Chapel to place the Body in.

R. Edw. I.

EDWARD the Second of that Name
since the Conquest King of England, &c.

EDWARD, Eldest Son to Edward the First, being with his Father at the time of his Death, the dying King, after he had caused the Nobles present to swear, that they would Crown his said Son, gave him this wholesom advice, viz. That he should be Courteous, gentle and upright in Judgment, fair of speech to all Men, constant in word and deed, familiar with the good, and merciful to the miserable. But he little regarded this, that he immediately broke his fathers absolute command in recalling Gaveston from Banishment, and Enriched him with the 20000 pounds, ordered to furnish those that carryed the heart of the Deceased King to be buried in the holy Land, tho' he knew his father had laid a severe curse on those that should dispose of it to any other use : So that altho' it was sent, it Arrived not there, for the Knights who had that charge Warring by the way under the Christian Princes against the Turks, were slain, and the precious casket or urn of Chrystal, in which the Kings heart was In-

R. Edw. II.

Good Advice, but not taken.

K Edw. II.

closed, taken by the Infidels, which this *Edward*, am now to treat of, little regarded when the New was brought him; but *Thomas* and *Edmund*, his younger Brothers greatly lamented the loss, and reproved him for his so much slighting the Memory of so good a father, whereupon he became an Enemy to the first of these Princes ever after.

This *Edward* left the Wars of *Scotland*, which his father charged him to pursue, and carry his bones with him till he had utterly subdued that rebellious Nation; yet altho' he came to *London* in the Year 1307, and entered upon his Government his Expectations were so far frustrated, that he was not Crowned till the year following, because *Robert Winchelsea*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who succeeded *Peckham* or *Peckham*, had been Banished by *Edward* the First for disturbing the Realm, and taking part with his Rebels, as that King set it forth in his complaint against him to Pope *Clement*; but the *Edward* the Second writ to the Pope for his Restoration, considering that by the Antient Custom of the Realm, the Coronation could not be performed by any other, yet he came not, whether through his own obstinacy, or the Popes command to the contrary remains doubtful, so that soon after, the King considering how troublesome the *Scots* were notwithstanding all the miseries they had suffered in the former Reign, and that the better to curb them an Alliance with *France* was necessary, he Married *Isabel*, Daughter to *Philip*, the fair King of *France* and was Crown'd with her at *Westminster*, by the Bishop of *Winchester*, to which Coronation, however the Nobles would not consent, till the King promised to put from him *Pierce*, or as some call him *Peter Gaveston*, who had drawn him into many Inconveniencies; yet he referred it to be done in the Parliament, that should speedily be called, but after his Coronation, he purposely delayed to assemble the Estates of the Kingdom, that he might still keep him

King Ed.
ward
Married
and
Crowned.

him near him, as a Person he entirely Loved and Doated on ; Insomuch that he was one time heard to say, *He wished, and it would be a great felicity to him, that he might share the Kingdom with him.* Nay this mean upstart, bore himself so highly on the Kings favour, that he despised those of the greatest Nobility, ruling as it were both Prince and Kingdom ; for he could ask no favour, but it was presently assigned him, how detrimental soever it was to the Crown or People ; whereupon at the Incitement of the Nobles, the Bishops were about to Excommunicate *Gaveston*, if he speedily departed not the Land : Insomuch that the King was constrained to write to the Pope on his behalf, to lay his commands on them not to do it, withal sending large presents, always the only moving Orators in the Court of *Rome*, and had obtained his request had he not given the vacancy, or at least the profits of the Arch-Bishoprick of *York*, to one of his favorite Chaplains, which the Pope so highly resented, it being done without his order, that by his Letter he peremptorily commanded him to recall his Grant, sending his Chaplain to *Rome*, there to Answer this contempt of the see Apostolick, to a Nephew of one of his Cardinals, on whom he had already conferred that dignity.

To this the King stoutly Answered, *That if such Citations and the Execution of them, should extend to The Kings Impeachment of his Kingly Office and Jurisdiction Answer to over the Realm of England, or to the Prejudice of his the Pope. lawful right, Crown and Dignity ; Especially in determining such matters, as so nearly concerned his Roy-estate, and the which ought to be decided within this Realm, tho' himself might give way to it, yet sure he was, his Nobles would not suffer him so meanly to descend, but with all their might oppose it, who upon their Allegiance, were obliged and sworn to Protect and Defend the Honour and Dignity of the Crown of*
R 4 England,

K. Edw. II. England, and not to suffer his right, or the Laws to be violated.

*The Popes
reply.*

To this the Pope retorted, *That the Kings of England had always been stubborn and disobedient to the Apostolick See, and that when his Nuncio's were sent in his fathers time to gather the first Fruits of the vacant Benefices, they were not only unkindly received, but hardly dealt withall, and dismissed without being suffered to Execute his commands.* Likewise he strictly charged him for the future not to Intermeddle with such Affairs, further requiring that *Peter Sabaudie* his Kinsman might now be Enstalled Bishop of Worcester, but if he refused it, the Election should be referred to the Prior and Convent of that place.

*The King
Answers.*

As to the first of these the King pleaded Ignorance, and to the last replied, *That for as much as the Election of Prelates to be Installed in the Cathedral Churches of his Kingdom, are not to be attempted without his Licence; Therefore he could not but greatly wonder any stranger should require it, who was altogether Ignorant of the constitution of the English Government.* Wherefore he entreated the Pope not to meddle in a matter, which would cause Novelties to be brought in, contrary to what his Ancestors were Accustomed to do; but this Answer little pleased the Pope, wherefore he labour'd soon after to vex him by stirring up the Scots, and others to be Thorns in his side.

*Gaveston
Banished.*

In the Fourth Year of the Kings Reign the Parliament Assembled, wherein among other things *Gaveston* was Banished into Ireland, which much grieved the King; yet to comfort him, he sent after him a Rich Equipage, great store of Plate, Money and Jewels, appointing him his Lieutenant of the Kingdom, so that he lived there more like a Prince than a Person in Banishment; and soon after he was recalled, and Married to the Duke of Gloucester's Sister, but behaving himself more Insolent than before, the Nobles again procured his Banishment.

into *Flanders*, which so exceedingly grieved *K. Edw. II.*
 King that he took no comfort in his Life whilst
 was absent; whereupon he sent for him to re-
 turn, but in the end being besieged in *Scarborough*
 Castle, he was taken by the Earl of *Warwick*, and
 with the consent of the Earls of *Lancaster* and *Here-*
ford, carried to *Warwick* Castle, and there behead- *Gaveston*
 ed, for which the King breathed out those revenge- *Beheaded.*
 threatnings, which he afterward cruelly Exe-
 cuted on a great Number of the Nobility, and to
 supply the place of this one favourite, he placed Sir
Robt Spencer, and *Hugh* his Son as near to his
 bed-side.

As for this *Gaveston*, he was a Gentlemans Son
 of *Gascoigny*, who in consideration of his Fathers
 military Services, had been taken into favour by *Ed-*
ward the First, and placed with this *Edward* in his
 younger years, so that being of a vicious temper,
 he greatly corrupted his manners, and led him into
 an imaginable Looseness and Debauchery, which by
 these means became Inherent to him: Nor did his
 favourites the *Spencers* prove any better, but
 were worse, to the Kings utter undoing, as in the
 sequel will appear.

Whilst things went thus in *England*, the Popes
 used much cruelty abroad; for upon a disgust, be-
 cause the order of the Knights, Templars, who had *Many*
 prospered successfully in the Holy Land, and in a *Knights,*
 particular measure, by their valour maintained it against *Templars,*
 Infidels, were not so obedient to him in all re- *suffer the*
 spects as he required, Pope *Clement* the Fifth pro- *flames.*
 posed the whole order to be deposed and persecuted
 in all Christian Countreys; Insomuch that in *Paris*,
 four of them, together with their great Master,
 were forced into the flames, and burnt alive by his
 commandment. Whereupon the King of *France*, con-
 sidering to make his Son King of *Jerusalem*, and con-
 sidering upon him the Lands of these Templars, the Pope
 declared his Intentions, transferring all those Lands,
 for

K Edw II. for a vast summ of Money, to the order of *Heralers*.

The wickedness of the Nuns discovered.

About this time, a fish Pond under the Wall of a Nunnery in *France*, being cleansed, a great many bodies of Infants, and bones were found in it, which had been Murthered by those lewd Votaries, which shews, that the Popes seeming holy Daughters, rather pretend to chastity than practise it, and that is a great wickedness to restrain the Law of nature which in Lawful Marriage had prevented these many thousand other unnatural Murthers. Several of these Nuns were upon this discovery Imprisoned at *Paris*, and 'tis thought there privately strange, least they should detect the wicked Practices of *Monks* and *Friars* that had to do with them, and consequently cast a blemish on those supposed brothers, if not on those of higher Ecclesiastical dignities, that by bribing the *Abbes* had free access to them.

This Covetous Pope to Enrich himself, gave a decree to pass in the Council of *Vienna*, that all Religious orders exempted, should be subject to common Laws as others were, but the *Cisterciens* redeemed their Privileges, and Exemption of them at a vast Summ. And the *Franciscans*, thinking to do the like, offered 40000 Florins, yet no sooner had the Pope fingered their Money, but he kept laughing at them and refusing to exempt them, saying moreover, he would by no means break the Rules *St. Francis* had Prescribed them, which was to remain under their vows of Poverty and Obedience, &c. Tho' this fetch may be supposed only to sift them, whether they had such another Summ.

The Pride of Pope Clement.

Sabellicus tells us, that Pope *Clement*, having communicated the *Venetians* for adding *Azad* to the State of *Ferrara*, and Proclaimed them common Enemies to *Christendom*, and giving up their Goods and Persons to be spoiled and out-raged, he then brought them to such distress, that they were forced

send *Dandulus*, one of their Nobles, to pacify *K. Edw. II.*
 whom he caused to be Chained to the frame
 his Table with a huge Iron Chain, and resting on
 ground with his hands and knees, to be fed like
 Dog on the bones and scraps that fell from it, by
 which means he pacified his fury and got his Coun-
 absolved, and for that humble submission was
 highly Honoured upon his return, and carryed in
 triumph through the City of *Venice*. In this Pope-
 a contention arising between *Clement* and *Hen-*
 the VIth. Emperor of *Germany*, the Emperor by *VIth. Em-*
 procurement as some conclude, was Poisoned in *peror of*
 the Sacrament: And about the Year 1311. By the *Germany,*
 order *Robert Winchelsea* left *Rome*, and return- *Poisoned in*
 into *England*, and his first Prank was to Excom- *the Sacra-*
 micate the Bishop of *Coventry*, who, he supposed *ment.*
 done him some ill Offices with the Kings Fa-

Not long after this, Pope *John* the XXII. Being
 sed in *St. Peters* Chair at *Rome*, and having spent
 of his Treasure in rising to this dignity, sent
 Legates or Receivers General into all Christian
 countreys, to rake together what Money they
 could, of which Number *Rigand* of *Asserio*, Canon
 of *Aurelia*, and his Companion came into *England*,
 under pretence at first to Compose the differences
 between the King and his Barons, also be-
 tween him and the *Scots*, but they soon shewed their
 and was for no other intent than to Collect *Pe-*
 Pence, exacting of the Clergy and Laity four
 Pence in every Mark, as well of Goods, Lands and
 other, as for ready Money, and having got consi-
 derably in *England*, they went to try the *Scots*, but
 they refused, and upon the Borders Robbed of all
 their Money, and over and above soundly beaten,
 which they returned to *London*, Excommuni-
 cating and cursing those Borderers who had so han-
 dled them; yet resolving not to return empty to
 their Master, if they might help it, they now de-
 manded

The Popes
Legats
Robbed and
soundly
beaten.

K. Edw. II. commanded Eight-pence in the Mark, which the C
 gy refused, also the King by his Letters to his
 shops commanding it not to be paid, sharply
 proving the Legats for going about to Innovate
 his Kingdoms, contrary to former Customs, and
 ferring the decision of it to a Parliament, they w
 forced to be packing with little store of Coin,
 ing settled for a shew a kind of a Peace which la
 not.

*A Prince
 Born.*

*A great
 overthrow
 given by
 the Scots.*

During these Passages, the Queen was bro
 to Bed of a Son at *Windsor*, who was Named
 ward, for which there was great Rejoycing;
 the Scots War soon put an end to it, for R
 Bruce, whom I mentioned in the foregoing Re
 returning into *Scotland*, was received by the No
 and a second time Crowned King; whereupon
 ing an advantage of the disorder of Affairs in
 land, he raised an Army, and terribly wasted all
 Northern Marches with Fire and Sword; w
 King *Edward* Encountering him at *Bannocks B*
 by the carelesness of his upstart commanders, and
 unwillingness of some Nobles to engage, in ha
 to the *Spencers*, who bore all the sway, the En
 received a fatal overthrow, in which fight were
 Gilbert d' Clare, Earl of *Gloucester*, and 24 other
 blemen, 60 Knights and Baronets, and 22000 o
 mon Soldiers, beside many of Note taken Prison
 whereupon the King, with the loss of all his
 gage, among which was a great Mass of Treas
 was forced to fly for his Life, and then the
 proceeded so lamentably to wast the Northern P
 that such a Famine ensued as the Living, were
 able to bury the Dead, and when any fresh P
 ner was put into Gaol, the others usually fell u
 him, tore him to pieces, and eat him in a man
 half alive, and the Scots in their return took
 wick, and many other strong places; and to thi
 mine succeeded a Plague that terribly raged thro
 out the Land. And now the King pitying the

daily Complaints of his oppressed subjects in the North, raised another Army and gave the Scots Battle with no better success than before, and so remained in much perplexity; whereupon the Nobles laying these Miscarriages to the ill management of Affairs by the *Spencers*, the Kings favourites, and stoutly vindicating them, so that they perceiving redress to be had but in Parliament, they humbly Petitioned the King to call one, which he did, and in it the *Spencers*, contrary to his mind, were banished, but the younger turned Pirate upon the narrow Seas, taking such Merchants Ships as fell in his way, and chiefly those appertaining to the *English*, which the King so little regarded, that he was angry at those who complain'd, and shortly after recalled and restored them to his favour more than ever.

K. Edw. II.

The *Spencers* banished.

The Nobles vexed at this, and finding no redress, took up Arms, and gave the King Battle at *Burrow*; but were overthrown after a cruel fight, in which, beside the great Number that were slain, the Earl of *Lancaster*, and 90 other Nobles and Men of great Account, were taken Prisoners and sent to *Rochester* Castle, where the Earl of *Lancaster* being brought out to Execution, no heads-man was to be found for the space of 7 hours, and then a vile scoundrel was fetched out of a Gaol to shed his Prince's Blood. With him five others were put to Death, at *York* the following day, the Lords *Clifford*, *Murphy* and *Derwel*, were hanged in Chains, and the Earl of *Hereford* lost his Head. In all, at several places about 20 Noble-men fell by the hands of the Executioner, and thus the King rejoiced, that he had revenged the Death of *Gaveston*, in which chief of those were concerned, Creating Sir *John Harkly*, by whose Conduct he obtained this victory, Earl of *Carlisle*, and demanded the sixth part of all the Temporalties in *England*, *Ireland* and *Wales*, as intending upon the flush of this success

The Earl of *Lancaster*, and other Nobles beheaded.

Edw. II. cess to make War on the *Scots*; and according soon after raising a great Army he entered *Scotland* where the *Scots* decoying him into the Barren and Mountainous Part of that Countrey, and keeping in the Woods and Fastnesses, his Army was so much wasted with Famine and Diseases, that without doing any thing memorable, he was forced to retreat in a kind of a flying manner, the *Scots* breaking off of their lurking places, and cutting off the greater part of the Rear of his Army, which ill Conduct being charged on the New Created Earl, notwithstanding his former services, he lost his Head.

The *Spencers*, supposing they had removed the Capital Enemies by the late Execution, took up with them more than ever; and because the Queen reproved them, they not only publicly affronted but Alienated the Kings Affections from her, and estranged him from her bed; which so much grieved her, that she retired into *France* with her young Son *Edward*, having first obtained leave of the King so to do; where her Father being Dead, she was kindly received by her Brother, who promised to right the Injuries done her, but upon great sums of Money being sent him by the *Spencers*, his mind changed, commanding her to return to her Husband, who had often sent to that purpose; and *King Edward* having notice she was making a confederacy with the *English* Nobles, fled into *France* again; him, he so dealt with the Pope, that he commanded the King her Brother under pain of the Apostolick Curse, to send her and the young Prince home so that they had been put into the hands of the Kings Ambassador to have been sent over, but upon timely notice they secretly withdrew into *Flanders*, and passing to the Court of *Hainault*, she strengthened her Interest, without the consent of the King or *English* Peers, Married the Prince her Son to *Philippa*, Daughter to that Earl, and gathering forces of *English* and *Aliens* Landed at *Orwell*

and was soon joyned by a great Number of ^{K Edw. II.}
 discontented Nobility and others, sending her ^{The Queen}
 to the *Londoners*, to assist her in restoring the ^{Lands}
 and Liberties of the Kingdom, and removing ^{with an}
 Councillors from about the King her Husband; ^{Army.}
 who presently assented to side with her, but being
 opposed by the Bishop of *Exeter*, whom the King ^{The Bishop}
 left Governour of the *Tower* and City, after ^{of Exeter,}
 the Contest, they in a tumultuous manner dragged ^{Beheaded}
 and two Gentlemen that attended on him, to ^{by the}
 the *Standard* and struck off their Heads. ^{Londo-}
 And now the King hearing that *Mortimer*, who ^{ners.}
 escaped out of the *Tower*, was with the Queen,
 the Head of the faction made against him, he
 offered 1000 Pound for any to bring him Dead or
 alive; but the Queen and Lords advancing with a
 great Army, the King, whose Power was now grown
 weak, found himself necessitated to retire before her,
 to fortify the City and Castle of *Bristol*; but the
 King was soon besieged and taken, yet the King
 one of the *Spencers*, escaped and got into a small
 Boat intending for *Ireland*, but being driven ^{The King}
 back by stress of weather, were seized and brought ^{taken Pri-}
 before the Queen, who being presented before the ^{soner.}
 the which yet held out, it surrendered, and the
 Lord *Arundel*, the Governour by the Queens com-
 mand lost his Head, and the King was sent Prisoner
 to *Kenelworth* Castle. As for the Elder *Spencer* taken ^{Lord}
 with him, he was presently quartered alive, and his ^{Spencer,}
 quarters set up in Divers Places, and the younger ^{Quartered}
Spencer soon after, being taken together with the ^{alive and}
 Lords, *Baldock* and *Read*, were carryed to *Here-* ^{his Son}
 and hanged on a Gallows 50 foot high. ^{Hanged.}
 After this a Parliament was called, in which King
 Edward was deposed, and his Crown transfered to
 his Son Prince *Edward*; the formal words of his ^{King Ed-}
 deposing, pronounced by Sir *William Trussel*, one of ^{ward de-}
 Judges of the Kingdom, runing in these words. ^{posed.}

K. Edw. II.

I William Trussel, in the Name of all the Men of the Land of England, and of all the Parliament Procurator, do renounce to thee Edward, the Homage that was sometimes made to thee, and from this time forward I defy thee, and deprive thee of all Royal Power and Authority, nor shall I ever be tendant to thee King after this time.

The King hearing this sentence of deprivation shed abundance of Tears, but they availed not, he underwent a strict confinement till he was barbarously Murthered, as will appear in the next Reign; he Reigning only 19 Years, 6 Months and 18 Days, tho' he lived some years longer.

In this Kings Reign one *John Poldras*, a Tanner Son of *Exeter*, gave out, that he was the Eldest Son of King *Edward* the First, and was changed in Cradle by his Nurse; for this *Edward* was the Son of a Carter, and hereupon raised great Commotions, a great Number of People taking up Arms to place him in the Throne, but being defeated he was taken Prisoner and Executed; no threats nor promises being sufficient to induce him to confess, was put him upon this Project, tho' he owned himself an Impostor.

EDWARD the Third of that Name since the Conquest King of England,

K. Ed. III.

I Have in the foregoing Reign told you the cause that obliged *Edward* the Third, to ascend the Throne whilst his Father was yet living, for *Edward* the Second being deposed (but how justly I determine not) it was necessary, in order to the settling of Affairs, that a King should be Established: Therefore this *Edward*, Son to *Edward* the Second,

Qu

Queen *Isabel* of France, was Crowned contrary to K. Ed. III.
 his mind, refusing the *Regalia*, or Ensigns of Roy-
 Majesty, till he was constrained by the threats or Prince
 arguments of the Queen and *Mortimer*, to com- Edward
 ply with their pleasures, nor would he upon any Crowned
 terms consent, till his father had made an entire King.
 resignation, being then Counsell'd so to do by
 some trusty friends, as the best expedient to pre-
 vent his father being Murthered by the contrivance
 of *Mortimer*, that did all with the Queen, whose
 oracle he was in directing the management and
 guidance of Affairs.

When *Edward* took upon him the Crown of Eng-
 land, he was not above 15 years of Age, being a
 Prince endowed with many singular Virtues, Tem-
 perate, Valiant, Politick in Counsel, Merciful and
 loving towards his Subjects. In the beginning of
 his Reign the *Scots*, who had been successful in some
 battles against his father, grew Insolent, not doub-
 ing but to gain greater advantages than they had
 done, by reason of his Minority, but were very
 much deceived in their Account; for *Robert Bruce*,
 King of *Scots*, sending a Letter of defiance to the
 King, Queen and Council, threatening to waste Eng-
 land with Fire and Sword, an Army Incontinently
 was rais'd of 50000 Men, who undauntedly enter-
 d *Scotland*, before whom the *Scottish* Army retired; The King
 whereupon they wasted the Countrey without op- Invades
 position, taking many Towns, Castles, and other Scotland.
 fortresses, after which the King perceiving his Sol-
 diers tired with following the Enemy, and not being
 able to urge them to a Battel, neither by wasting
 the Countrey, nor daring them to a pitched field,
 he concluded it the most convenient to Garrison
 places lying advantageous to *England*, and so return
 with the spoil he had got, which was very conside-
 rable; but whilst he was preparing to decamp, the
 Lord *William Douglas*, one of the *Scots* Generals,
 that his Countrey might have something to boast of, A daring
 S attempts.
 with

K. Ed. III.

brev.

brev.

with 200 Horse gave an Alarm to the Camp, and came so near, as to cut several of the Lines that supported the Kings Tent; then immediately fled; y^e in the pursuit some of them were slain, and fearing the King would turn head to engage them, the whole Army dislodged in much disorder, leaving their Cauldrons, Cattle, Salt, Provisions, and so a pair of shooes behind them, also five *English* Prisoners tyed to Trees and their Legs broken. Hereupon King *Edward* Marched to *Durham*, where Disbanded his Army.

Privileges
confirmed
to the City
of Lon-
don.


After this *Scotch* expedition the King came to *London*, and there confirmed to the Citizens the Liberties and Privileges, ordaining that the Mayor should be the supreme Judge in the City and Liberties, and that whatever Alderman had been Mayor should be in Commission for the Peace in his Ward, and soon after the Lady *Philippa*, Daughter to the Earl of *Hainault*, Contracted long before *Flanders* to the King, was sent over, and received according to her high Quality, so that the Marriage and the Queens Coronation, were Celebrated the Day of *St. Paul's* Conversion; and now a Parliament was called by the King at *Northampton* wherein by the influence of the Queen Mother *Mortimer*, a Peace was concluded with the *Scots* and all their Fealty and Homage to *England* released, and the Parchment called the *Ragman Roll* by which *Scotland* acknowledged fealty under Seals of the King and Nobles, together with the black Cross which King *Edward* the first brought from *Scone Abbey*, as an admirable rarity, were livered up; and tho' this was mightily opposed by the greater Part of the Nobility, yet to the Dishonour of the *English* Nation, *Mortimer* carried it with a high hand, and in vain it was strenuously opposed. And now *Mortimer*, being over familiar with the Queen, and Plotting to set the Crown on his own Head, and Marry her to cover her shame, wickedly concluded

concluded it necessary to further his purpose, that he deposed King should be taken out of the way, whereupon he gave private orders in Ambiguous words, to Sir John Matravers and Thomas Gourney, to remove him from Kenelworth to Berkly Castle, and there to murder him, which accordingly they performed in a most Cruel and Barbarous manner, first running a hollow horn up his Fundament, and through that a red hot Iron, so that in exquisite torture and pitious Cries and Groans he resigned his breath; but the Judgment of God fell on these wicked Men, for both of them dyed miserably in punishment.

The deposed King Barbarously murdered

Mortimer having thus far cleared the way towards his Ambitious designs, caused the King to call Parliament at Salisbury, where he was Created Earl of March, against the mind of the Nobility, and all things being carried by him with a high hand, Henry Earl of Lancaster, and some other of the Nobility refused to give their attendance, for which they were charged to have a design against the Kings Life. And the Earl of Kent, the Kings Uncle, who (with singular Prudence and Justice had administered the Affairs of the Realm) being accused to the King by Mortimer, that he intended to take away his life by Poison, such credit was given to this light suggestion, that the Innocent Earl was apprehended, and without being permitted to make his defence, sentenced and beheaded at Winchester, the great grief of all good Men. But now Mortimer's Punishment for these and other enormous crimes drew near, for it being Rumoured the Queen Mother was with Child by him, and that he lay with her every Night; The King, tho' young, taking a resolute Guard with him in the Night, surprized him in her Chamber, making himself unready to enter her bed; whereupon he was Arrested as a Traytor, and soon after being tryed for the Murder of the old King, and upon Divers other

The Kings Uncle Beheaded.

K Ed. III.

 Mortimer
 Executed
 as a Tray-
 sor.

A Prince
 born.

Articles, he was found guilty of high Treason, and being hanged and quartered, unpitied of the People, his head was placed by the *Spencers*; and because the Queens Infamy was so notorious, the King by the advice of his Nobles, confined her to a strict Imprisonment, and abridged much of her allowance; however, he usually went twice or thrice a year to pay her Visits, and thus she who had ruined her Husband in his Estate, and consented to his death, as most imagined, was overtaken by a just punishment for quarrelling with her Husband on light causes, which nevertheless produced such fatal consequences, she was far worse dealt with by her own Son; and found that neither her Tears nor Entreaties, were of force sufficient to relieve her from the burthen of miseries she endured for many years. About this time King *Edward* the Third Queen, was brought to bed of a Son at *Woodstock*, who was Named *Edward*, and afterwards proved one of the most Famous Warriors of those and the succeeding times.

The King growing up and taking the Government of Affairs wholly into his own hands, again Invaded *Scotland*, utterly subduing the best Part of that Kingdom, fortifying *Berwick*, and other strong places he had taken, and so returned in Triumph where he found Arrived at his Court the Earl of *Artois*, a French Noble-man, who fled out of France for saying, (upon the French Kings wrongfully sentencing his Earldom to *Maud* Countess of *Burgundy*) *By me he was made King, and by me he shall be disposed.* This Man earnestly solicited King *Edward* to Invade *France* as his right by Inheritance, promising to engage him many friends in that Kingdom to further his Conquering it, if it would not be surrendered by fair means; and his Title to that Crown was thus stated; *Isabel* the Kings Mother was Daughter to *Philip the Fair*, Son to *Philip the Hardy* and that *Philip the Hardy* had two Sons, viz. The

Kings *Edward*
 wards Title to the
 Crown of
 France.

Queen

Queens Father who was King, and *Charles de Valois*, ^{K Ed. III.} who succeeded him. *Philip the Fair* had three Sons, all dying without Issue Male, and one Daughter, viz. *Isabel*, King *Edward's* Mother, and that *Charles de Valois*, the second Son of *Philip the Hardy*, was Father to *Philip de Valois*, at this time Reigning in France, and that notwithstanding, the French had purposely made the *Salick Law* to bar the right of Women from the Crown of France, as to their governing that Kingdom; yet nevertheless, King *Edward* being a Male of the true Female Heir ought to take place against any pretended Law, they opposed to bar him of his right.

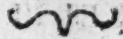
Upon these considerations the King had before refused in Person to pay homage, as he was required by *Philip the French King* to do for his Province of *Guienne*, tho' he after had sent it in Writing under the great Seal (for which he was blamed by his Nobles, who affirmed there was no Homage due, seeing the Crown of France, as descending by the Mothers side, was his proper right of Inheritance, Divers consults were entered upon, how to strengthen himself with such powerful Allies abroad, as might facilitate his obtaining that Kingdom, which he otherwise found would not, but with great difficulty come within a possibility of being in his Possession. Hereupon the King consulted the Earl of *Hainault*, his Father in Law, who encouraged him to Prosecute his design, and engaged most of the Princes of the lower Germany in his Interest; and the better to assure himself of the *Flemings*, and release to them a Bond of some Millions, due from them to the Crown of France, he assumed the Title of King of France, quartering the Arms of that Kingdom with those of England, and overthrew a mighty Army of French, set out to Intercept him in his Passage, being constituted (the better to enable him in carrying on this War) Vicegerent, or Lieutenant of the Empire, so that all things as it were, concurred to open him a way to

*He Assumes
the Title of
King of
France.*

K. Ed. III. Victory ; which he had been more assured of, had he stayed a little longer, for the *French* King had at the Instance of the Pope raised an Army of 60000 Men, in order to pass into the holy Land, which upon the News of these Preparations were with-held to defend their own Countrey, and many other Nations had done the like, all the Soldiers wearing Crosses of Divers Colours to distinguish them, having a promise from the Pope of assured success, and, *That such as dyed by the way, or in Battel, were immediately to go to Heaven and never once so much as touch as Purgatory* ; Nay, they had Power granted by his Bull to release others out of the pains of Purgatory, each of them two, or three Souls of their Deceased friends, or others as they thought fit, which was cunningly Insinuated to draw them on and encourage them to this War ; and the like Privileges were allowed to such as came to Pope Clement's Jubile at Rome ; a little before which, after much Persecution from three Popes, *Lewis* the Emperor of Germany had been Poisoned, who for his many constant sufferings to support the rights of the German Churches, Invaded by the Popes of Rome and thus untimely dying, some Account a Martyr. Nor did the succeeding Emperor fare better, for falling sick at *Frankford*, his Physicians Servant, hired by *Charles*, who was afterward Emperor, Administering Poison, in stead of Physick, he ended his days in great torment ; and this *Charles* coming to the Empire, to get his Son Established after him, gave the Electoral Princes Power to levy and retain the Taxes in their Provinces, which, to the much weakening the Emperors Revenues, they have held ever since, tho' many endeavours have been made use of to recover it from them, and again settle it on the Imperial Crown---But to return :

Lewis Em-
peror of
Germany,
Accounted
a Martyr.

The King having quieted again the *Scots*, by two terrible overthrows given them, sent his Letter directed to the Lords and Commons of *France*, writing



ing before to the Pope a Letter, in both which he
forth his right to the Crown of *France*, requiring
Homage and Obedience of the *French*, and Intrea-
ing the Pope not to Intermedle with his Affairs; or
he did, to further him all that in him lay, in gain-
ing the due possession of his rightful Inheritance,
and after his Sea Victory, in which near 30000
French were slain, and 200 Sail of their Ships taken,
he wrote to his Bishops in *England*, advertizing them
of it, and exhorting them to pray for his success in
his glorious undertaking, and being at *Gaunt*, his
Queen had a Son Named *John*, Surnamed of *Gaunt*,
created Earl of *Richmond* and Duke of *Lancaster*;
and after a Council held with the Princes of the
Lower Germany, he directed his Letter to *Philip* the
French King (as he was going to the Siege of *Tour-*
ney) wherein for the deciding this Controversy,
he challenged him to single combat, or to fight 100
French against 100 English, for the saving the Effu-
sion of much blood, but upon refusal of these to give him
battel within ten days with his whole power near
Tournay.

King Ed-
ward chal-
lenges the
French
King.

To this the *French* King Answered, That seeing he
had only written to *Philip de Valois*, and not to the
King of *France*, he was not bound to take notice of his
Letter, however since he understood he had entered his
Kingdom and done much damage to his People, he would
deavour to drive him out by force, who ought to pay
Homage as his Sovereign Lord; Over and above
complaining, that he had hindred him from passing
to the Holy Land, to the great hurt of the *Chri-*
stians, who were slain there in mighty Numbers by
the Infidels, &c.

The
French
Kings An-
swer.

King *Edward*, finding the *French* did not ap-
proach to give him Battel, Encamped before *Tour-*
ney; but by the Mediation of the Lady *Jane* of
Brabant, Mother to King *Edward's* Queen, and Si-
ster to the *French* King, a Truce was concluded;
whereupon King *Edward* returned to *London* and

Imprisoned

K. Ed. III. Imprisoned Divers of his great Officers, who had deceived him in the management of his Affairs abroad and at home, among whom the Bishop of *Chichester* had been confined, but that the King feared to displease Pope *Clement*, who had made a decree that no Bishop should be Imprisoned, by a King, or any secular Magistrate whatsoever, and in his next expedition, when the Armies were ready to engage the aforesaid Lady *Jane*, by her prevailing Mediation hindered it, and an other Truce was made; yet soon after the War came on in earnest, very bloody and terrible to the Kingdom of *France*, for the King having again defeated the Invading *Scots*, and driven them out of *England* with great slaughter, prepared a mighty Army, resolving to make War in earnest; but two Cardinals sent from the Pope so laboured that by their Mediating another Truce was agreed on; by which means they caused delays, till the *French* King should be better enabled to defend the Countreys he possessed, for the Popes usually were careful not to suffer any one Prince to grow too great, lest he should cast off the Yoke of subjection Imposed on him by the see of *Rome*; and *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, Emperor of *Germany*, was so tamper'd with by the Pope, that he writ Letters to King *Edward* whereby he revoked the Vice-gerentship, or Lieutenantcy of the Empire before granted to him, and sided with the *French* against the *English*; to which the King returned an Answer, sharply expostulating with him, touching his right to the Kingdom of *France*, and of the small regard he had of his revoking the Vice-gerency; and soon after Pope *Clement* the Sixth, to urge the King to break with him that he might have the better colour to trouble *England* in his absence, presumed to bestow on his Cardinals such vacancies in Ecclesiastical dignities as should happen in *England*, who sent their Procurators to receive the Profits; but the King with Princely courage commanded them to depart the

Corrupt
Officers
punished.

The Emperor
and
Pope side
with the
French
King.

Land

and on pain of being Imprisoned, and hereupon K. Ed. III.
 sent a Letter subscribed by himself and his No-
 les to the Pope, demanding, *That the English Church might be free and not encroached on by stran- The King and Nobles write to the Pope.*
 ers, nor hindered in her Devotion, by needless troubles
 and vexations from the see of Rome, for they would
 not endure any Innovation to be brought in contrary to
 the Ancient Privileges, that had been time out of mind
 enjoyed. Upon this the Pope grew angry, absolving
 Lewis of Bavaria, the Emperor, whom he had a
 while before deposed, that he might be the better at
 leisure to side with the French, which King Ed-
 ward so little regarded, that he solemnly declared,
 He was ready to fight them both, if they dared to op-
 pose him; and to procure the resort of valiant Men
 from other Countreys, set up a round Table in
 Windsor Castle, allowing a hundred Pound a week The Wind- for
 for their maintenance, so that a great many Gallant
 Men were entertained, who proved Valiant Com- Knights of the round Table.
 manders in the French Wars, and Philip of France
 in Emulation to him did the like at Paris; and to
 maintain his charge abroad and at home, the Cler-
 gy granted King Edward a tenth for three years;
 in requital whereof he allowed them the Privilege,
 that no Arch-Bishop or Bishop should be tryed for
 any cause before a secular Judge, if they claimed
 their Clergy — But to come nearer the purpose,
 King Edward being Landed with a powerful Army,
 drove John Son to Philip the French King, from the
 siege of the Castle of Aquilon in Gascoigny, took
 Harfleur, sacked Cherburg, Mount-borough, and the
 Castle Adjoyning, over-running all Normandy, taking
 the Great City of Caen, with many Nobles whom
 he made Prisoners, also Lovers, and then entered
 into the Province of Evreux, pitching his Tents
 within two Leagues of Paris; upon which City
 he brought such a terror that the French King left it,
 and retired a good distance with his Army, whom
 King Edward followed over the River Soam, defea-
 ting

K. Ed. III. ting 12000 *French* that guarded the *Foard*, and Marching near the Town of *Cressley*, his scouts informed him, the whole *French* Army was advancing in Battel array towards him, consisting of 15000 Horse and Foot; whereupon he divided his Army into three Battels, the first under Prince *Edward* his Eldest Son, assisted by Divers Nobles, the second under approved Commanders, and the third and main Battel of reserve he commanded in Person when having refreshed the whole Army with Provision, and prayed to Almighty God for success, the second day after, the *French* gave the on-set with 15000 *Genois*, bearing Cross-bows and shooting barbed Arrows, but they were soon disordered and overborn by the *English* Archers, and in their confused retreat disordered the *French* Horse, who in revenge slew and trod down the greater part of them, and then their main Battel charged on the Prince Men at Arms, and put them so hard to it, that Messengers were sent to the King to advance and succour him; but being informed that the Prince was yet alive, he said, *He would not advance, for either the Glory of that day should be his, or he should lose his Life.* This made the *English* fight so desperately, that with their small Number in a short time they slew more than 30000 of the *French*, and utterly defeated their whole Army, the King only sitting as a Spectator, and the next day overthrew almost as great an Army, that not knowing of the defeat were Marching to joyn the Camp, and these Battels were slain of the Enemy 11 Prince 80 Barons, and 12000 Knights, beside others Note, with Inconsiderable loss on the Kings Part.

Callis taken by the English.

The King having gained this signal Victory, and carried the slain of Note to *Montrevill*, where he caused them to be Honourably Buryed, Inriched also his Army with the spoil, Marched to *Callis* none daring to oppose him, and after Eleven

Mont

months Siege took that strong place, and Garrisoned K. Ed. III.
 with *English*. During this Siege, the better to favour
 the *French*, the *Scots* Invaded *England* under their
 King *David*, Son to *Robert Bruce*, who a lit-
 tle before had Married King *Edward's* Sister; but
 the Queen raising an Army of 12000 Men, gave
 them Battel, and utterly defeated them; and Da-
 vid their King was taken Prisoner by one *John Cope-*
land, and when the Queen commanded him to
 deliver into her possession the King of *Scots*, he re-
 fused it, saying, He was his proper Prisoner by right
 of War; upon which refusal she complaining to the
 Pope, he sent for *Copeland*, and required him to
 satisfy the Queen in her demand, bestowing on him
 for his Good service an Estate of 500 l. per Annum
 in *Lancashire*, and having constituted Sir *Andrew de*
Wrotham, a *Lombard*, Governour of *Calles*, the King
 returned to *London*, and was received in Triumph;
 and upon the *Flemings* refusing further to Aid him,
 he removed the Mart of the Woollen Manufacture
 from *Antwerp* to *Calles*, endowing that place with
 large Privileges and Immunities, which so encou-
 raged Artificers to settle there, that in a few years he
 thought himself happy, that could obtain the Kings
 licence to transport himself thither.
 After this, Prince *Edward*, the Kings Son, In-
 vaded *France*, and near *Poitiers*, gave Battel to
 King *John*, who succeeded his father *Philip*, over-
 throwing his Army 6 to 1 odds, and took him with
 his younger Son Prisoners, treating them so
 courteously, that the *French* King confessed, He ra-
 ther thought he was in his own Court than a Prisoner,
 having fallen into the hands of so generous an Ene-
 my. In this Battel beside the great Number slain,
 were taken 17 Earls, 51 Barons, and many Knights
 and Gentlemen of Account, Insomuch, that that
 English Soldier who had fewest, had no less than two
 prisoners, beside the Rich spoil of the Field divid-
 ed amongst them. Hereupon the *French* King, and
 Noble

The Scots
 Invade
 England.
 Their King
 taken Pri-
 soner.

The Battel
 of Poi-
 tiers. The
 French
 King and
 his Son
 Prisoners.

x. Ed. III. Noble Prisoners being conveyed into *England*, were mostly bestowed in the *Savoy*, and such places where they rather continued in Palaces than prisons, and a two years Truce Ensued.

A Peace concluded.

The *Scots* King after a ten years Imprisonment being Ransomed at 100000 *l.* to be payed in years, took an Oath to King *Edward* not to take Arms against *England*, nor be Aiding to any one in doing it, and so upon tendering his Homage for the tenure of *Scotland*, he was dismissed, and proposals for the *French* Kings Ransom being made, not agreed on, *Charles* his Eldest Son, who was constituted Regent of *France* in his absence, supposing by Hostility to compel King *Edward* on other terms to deliver him, Invaded his transmarine Territories, whereupon King *Edward*, with the Prince his Son, passed to *Calis* with an Army, and Marching from thence, so terribly wasted the *French* Provinces with Fire and Sword, taking in many strong places, Insomuch that the *French* Nation, despairing of success against so Victorious a Warriour, humbly sued for Peace; And it was soon after agreed 500000 Pounds should be payed for the *French* Kings Ransom, and that he should never Aid the *Scots* against *England*, nor take Part with the *Flemings* against King *Edward*; And that the Kings of *France* and *Scotland* should be for ever quit of their Homage for Territories holden in *France*, which things performed King *Edward* was obliged to quit for himself and his Successors, the Name and Title to the Kings of *France*, and so Hostages given, the *French* King after above four years Imprisonment, was set at liberty; but soon after coming into *England* with the King of *Cyprus*, as also did the King of *Scots*, visit King *Edward*, they being received with all imaginable Respect and Royally Entertained, the *French* King within a while falling sick at the *Sea* dyed, and his body was conveyed to *St. Denys* in *France*, where it was Interred with his Royal Ancestors.

Whilst the Martial Prowess of the *English* rendered them terrible to the Neighbouring Nations, the Pope was at a stand, whether it were best to deal smoothly, or proceed with his Accustomed stoutness and Arrogancy in the Affairs of the *English* Church; but soon he found the latter would not avail him, for the King opposed his Legates in their proceedings, and would not suffer them to dispose of Benefices, nor Transport the Money out of the Kingdom, writing to the Pope, *That in respect of the great charge his Wars had put him to, he had by the counsel and Advice of his Nobles, taken into his hands the Fruits and Profits of all the Benefices in England;* when one *Nicholas Heath*, the Popes Factor, cited Divers of the Bishops and other Clergy to him, the King caused the Ports to be stopped, Arresting all such as brought any Bulls, or Processes from the Pope, and not suffering any Person to go to Rome without especial Licence. He writ to the Pope not to give credit to *Heath*, whom he found to be a Mercenary, Scandalous and Profligate fellow. Moreover he appointed *John Stoke* and *John Norwiche*, two of his Clergy, to take into their hands all the Temporalties of the Deanaries, Prebends, Dignities, and Benefices vacant in *England*, and Convert the Profits to the use of his Exchequer: And in these early times, many seeing into the Errors of the Church of *Rome*, Learnedly argued against them; as *Marsilius Patavinus*, who in his writings proved all Bishops to be equal, and that the Pope had no Superiority over other Bishops; that not only Spiritual Persons, but Laymen also, ought to be admitted in general Councils; That the Pope and Clergy were subject to secular Magistrates; That the Church is the University of the Faithful, and that the Foundation and Head of the Church is Christ alone, who never appointed any Vicar or Pope over his Universal Church; That Bishops ought to be chosen by

K. Ed. III.

King Edward opposes the Popes proceedings and writes to him.

M. Patavinus writes against the Pope, &c.

R. Ed. III. by their own Church and Clergy, and not by
 Pope; That Marriage in Priests was Lawful, and
 warranted by the Word of God; That the Clergy
 and Consistory of the Pope is no other than a Den
 of Thieves; That the Doctrine of Rome is not to
 be followed, because it is pernicious and leadeth
 to destruction; and that the corrupt manners of
 Christians flow from that muddy source. But
 this he was condemned by the Pope, Anno 13
 Likewise one *Conrade Hagar*, taught for 20 years
 together; That the Mass was no manner of Sacrifice
 nor profitable to the Living or Dead, and that
 Money given was Robbery and Sacrilege in
 Priests, who Extorted it from the Ignorant, to
 Mass for the Souls of the Dead; for which, by
 Popes procurement he was cast into Prison, where
 is supposed by some Authors he was put to Death.
 Two *Franciscan Fryars* also were burnt at A
 nion, by the command of Pope Clement the V
 for publickly declaring, *That it had been revealed*
them, the Church of Rome was the Whore of Babylon
and the Pope with his Cardinals Anti-Christ. About
 this time, the Fryars generally Preached
 against the wickedness of the Court of Rome,
 which some were put to Death, others grievously
 scourged; many Languished and Dyed in Prison.
 The Pope stirring up the Prelates of Paris and other
 Cities to Persecute them, and 4 Arch-Bishops
 twenty other Bishops Assembling at Paris, in Ser
 mons and Orations it was declared, *There was no*
Virtue in a Fryars Life, because it was full of Hypocri
crisy, nor had they any Virtue of Doctrine, because they
were Malitious and Revengeful, having gall in their
Hearts, tho' they carried Honey on their Tongues,
was there any verity of Justice in them; because they
usurped other Mens Offices in Preaching, Confessing,
sometimes Administring the Sacraments! Yea, so
 were they over-born, that *Giles*, the chief of

C. Hagar
 Preaches
 and is Im-
 prisoned.

Two Fry-
 ars suffer
 Martyr-
 dom

The Pre-
 lates
 against
 the Fry-
 ars.

Simon Frjars, was through fear forced to allow the K. Ed. III.
 accusation of the Prelates Just.

During these Contests, a great commotion arose
 between the Students and Townsmen at *Oxford*, A fray at Oxford,
 which took its beginning from a Scholars breaking and that
 Hosts head with a quart pot, which fray con- City Inter-
 tinuing many days, Divers on both sides were slain, dicted.
 great Number wounded, and the Townsmen get-
 ting the upper-hand, by many flocking to them from
 adjacent Villages, burnt and destroyed most of their
 books, defacing and ruining many of the Halls and
 colleges, obliging all the Students to retire out of
 the City; so that except in *Merton College*, and
 a few others, all Exercise of Learning ceased for
 many years. For this out-rage of the Townsmen,
 the Bishop of *Lincoln* sent his Inhibition to all the
 Clergy in *Oxford*, enjoyning them not to Celebrate
 Mass, or any Divine Service in the presence of any
 Person of that City. Moreover he Interdicted
 so that they lived more than a year without the
 church doors being opened, or any Burials, Marri-
 ages, or Christning suffered; by which we may see
 that for a foolish quarrel, this Bishop (following the
 steps of his proud Master the Pope) had so little
 charity for Mens Souls, that he suffered them to
 live like Heathens, contrary to the expresse words of
 our Saviour who commands us, *To love our Enemies*
and do good for evil; and for this the King Imprisoned
 in the *Tower of London* 4 of the Principal
 Burgesss, amerced the City 200*l.* to be given the
 Scholars as a reparation of their damages sustained,
 a Proclamation every where to be made, that
 those who were scattered should return again to
 the University.
Simon Islip being Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, com-
 manded all Persons under pain of Excommunication
 to follow their Lawful Callings, as well on Saints
 days as others; for such a Number of these days
 were then observed, that they proved an Encou-
 ragement

R. Ed. III. ragement for Idleness: Insomuch that many times the ground lay untilled, and the Harvest was spoiled for want of getting in, in due season; and further ordained that Priests should receive no more for their Annual stipend, than 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* which caused Divers of them who had before lived industriously to fall into such penury, that they Robed and Pilfered in many places.

*The Popes
curse pronounced
against
the Living
and Dead.*

*Some of
the Popes
Agents
sentenced
to be
hanged.*

John Lysle Bishop of *Ely*, having a controversy with the Lady *Blanch*, Dutchesse of *Lancaster*, and not able to gain his ends in the Kings Courts of Judicature, grievously complained to the Pope of Injuries done him, who ordered the Bishop of *Exeter* and other Prelates, to Pronounce his curse against all that were the Bishop of *Ely's* Adversaries, whether Dead or Alive; and hereupon several dead bodies were taken up, some of them have been of the Kings Council, which so highly displeased him, that he Imprisoned some of the Prelates who had Pronounced the said curse to occasion Inhumanity. Whereupon Pope *Innocent*, sent several Persons from *Rome*, who meeting with the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, the Kings Treasurer Armed, persecuted upon him, contrary to his mind, Letters from the Pope, and so fled, but being pursued and taken by some of the Kings Servants, they were tried and some of them sentenced to be hanged for adhering to the Pope, and as his Instruments endeavouring to raise Sedition and Rebellion in the Kingdom. So little did this Prince fear the anger of the see of *Rome*.

And now, tho' not comprizing this whole Register observing order, I must conclude this fourth Book with a succession of the Arch-Bishops of *Canterbury* since the Conquest, &c.

A Table of the Arch Bishops of Canterbury.

Lanfrank.
Anselm.
Radulphus.
Gulielmus.
Courboil.
Theobald.
Tho. Becket.
Richard.
Baldwin.
Hubert.
Stephen Langton.

Richard Magnus.
Edmund of Abindon.
Robert Kilwarby.
John Peckham.
Robert Winchelsea.
Walter Reynold.
Simon Mepharn.
John Stratford.
John Offord.
Thomas Bradwardin.
Simon Islip.

This Simon Built Canterbury College in Oxford, and offered the Vestments in which, as it is fabled, Peter Celebrated Mass in the Church at Westminster, when he descended with a Numerous company of Angels to Consecrate Miletus, being then Bishop, who durst not venture to Consecrate it after

BOOK V.

Containing the last

Three Centuries,

FROM THE

Time of Satans being loosed to stir up
Persecution against the Church of
Christ.

K. Ed. III.

*Satan let
loose.*

SATAN according to the Prophecy of St. John
Apoc. 20, having been bound till near the
time, being appointed so to be a thousand
years, and again loosed, filled the wicked
the World with the Spirit of Persecution, raging
slaughter against the People of God, more terrible
than in the Heathen Persecutions, or all that had
gone before them from the beginning of the World
for he after 300 years, counting from the suffering
of our Saviour, began to be Chained up, at which
time the Persecutions of the Primitive Church in
manner ceased, and was to continue so restrained
the bottomless Pit for the space of one thousand
years; and now if we add to the 42 Months
years; mentioned in the Revelation, that is to say
years they make up 1294, and to these add 30 years
of the Age of Christ, and it amounteth to the

of our Lord 1224, which was the year of Satans ^{K Ed. III.} fooling according to the Prophecy of St. *John*; about which year *Boniface* the Eighth was Pope, who made the Sixth Book of Decretals, confirming the orders of *Fryars*, and granted them many lazy Privileges and Immunities.

And now for the Contents of what ensues, it ^{The Contents of what follows.} consists in two Parts; First of the raging of Satan loosed from his Chain, and of *Anti-Christ* against the Saints of God, fighting and labouring under Christs Banner with Spiritual Weapons in his Church Militant, for the Support and Maintenance of the sacred Truth and Reformation of the Church of God.

Secondly, Declaring the decay and ruin of *Anti-Christ*, through the prevailing Power of the Word of God, enlightening the eyes of the World to see how they have been deceived and drawn away, to follow blind guides and be led into Error, to the hazard of their Precious and Immortal Souls, and it now pleased Almighty God to raise up true Lights in his Church, to dispel the Clouds and Ignorance that had so long over-shadowed it, most of them Sealing their Testimonies to the truth with their Blood.

The first thing then that startled the Church of Rome, was a detection of her Errors, and an earnest Exhortation to the true Worship of God according to his revealed will, with the great mischiefs arising by begging *Fryars*, *Monks*, and other Pope-servants, who like swarms of Locusts over-spread the face of the Earth, and living in abominable Sins and Idleness, consumed by their Riot and Luxury, the good things of the Land, set forth in a long treatise, Intituled, *The Ploughmans Complaint*, plainly shewing the Religion held by the Church of Rome, to be opposite to that which Christ and his Disciples taught; with a Prayer to God in his Good time, by the power of his Holy Spirit to work a Reformation in

κ Ed. III. *Mens Hearts, That the Light of the Gospel might again shine forth in its purity; And of this some hold, that Rupeſciſſanus was the Author.*

*The Pri-
mate of
Ireland op-
poſes Per-
ſecution.*

And now the Arch-Biſhop of *Ardmagh* and Pri-
mate of *Ireland*, ſtood up like another *Judas Mac-
chabæus*, againſt the Perſecuting Roman *Antiochus*,
learnedly defending the truth, and with all his
might oppoſing his Pride and Tyranny, tho' he was
pursued and Perſecuted both by the Pope and the
King, and wait laid often to take his Life, yet
through the Protection of Providence he eſcaped
Innumerable Perils and Dangers, and the Student
of *Paris* drew up Articles againſt the Irregular Lives
of the *Fryars*, how they were become a ſcandal to
Religion, and hurtful to all Civil Government. Now
were the Students of *Oxford* ſilent therein, with
whom joyned the before-mentioned Arch-Biſhop of
Ardmagh, Learnedly diſputing againſt them, and
Preaching to the *Londoners* on the ſame ſubject, for
which he was cited to *Rome*, where before the Pope
he boldly maintained the truth of his Doctrine and
Assertions, and in many Learned Arguments and
Orations, confuted and confounded his Accuſers,
and tho' they vehemently Inveighed againſt him in
their writings, yet he continued Learnedly to con-
fute them to the laſt.

*The Pope
ſtirs up
diſſention
in Italy.*

Urban the Fifth, ſucceeding Pope *Innocent*, by
the Fathers ſide an *English-man*, ſtired up ſuch Wars
and Diſſention in *Italy*, that many Cities were com-
pelled to ſubmit to him to live at Peace; and ſo
greatly he oppreſſed *Barnabas* and *Galeaceus*, Prin-
ces of *Millain*, that he compelled them to hold the
Principality of the See of *Rome*, by which vile ſort of
proceeding it was, that the Popes came to poſſeſs
thoſe large Territories called *St. Peter's Patrimony*,
tho' at this day, they make the Ignorant believe
was the Gift of *Conſtantine the Great* to the Church
above a thouſand year before.

In the time of this Pope, one *Nicholas Orem*, a Learned Divine Preached at *Rome*, where in his Sermon he sharply Rebuked the Priests and Prelates of the Church, declaring their down-fall to be at hand, presaging it by their wicked and corrupt manner of Living; Comparing the Church of *Rome* to the Spiritual Harlot, mentioned in the 16th. Chapter of the Prophet *Ezekiel*, proving the Clergy of the Church to be then much worse than the Old Synagogue of the *Jews*, by how much, it is worse to sell Church Promotions and Sacraments, than to sell Doves and become Money Changers, &c.

K. Ed. III.
Dr. Orem
Preaches
against the
corrupt
Lives of
the Clergy.

In the Fifth year of this Pope *Urban*, began the order of the *Jesuits*, which have since, like so many fire-brands, Inflamed the World, and fired up Princes to War and Blood-shed in most Nations. But this Pope Dying, Pope *Gregory* the XIth. succeeded in the Papacy, removing his Court from *Avignon* in *France* (where it had been continued 70 years) to *Rome*, and sent his Bull to the Arch-Bishop of *Prague* in *Bohemia*, to Persecute *Militzius*, a Preacher there, because his Tenents in many things were contrary to those of the *Roman Church*, and Particularly for his saying, *Some Harlots whom he had brought over by his Godly Sermons, to leave their lewd and wicked Lives, and continue in Piety and Devotion, were more acceptable in the sight of God, than all the Cloistered Nuns*: Upon this he was Imprisoned, but I do not find what further cruelty was used towards him, tho' few that were Imprisoned for opposing the Popes Tenents escaped a violent Death.

The order
of the Je-
suits begun

Militzius
Persecuted.

This *Gregory*, when King *Edward* had assembled a Parliament, sent his Legate into *England*, requesting the King, that from this time he would abstain from the Reservation of Benefices, and that Spiritual Men promoted to Bishopricks might freely enjoy their Elections, and be confirmed by their *Metropolitans*; but the King would not consent to any other terms, than that the Pope should no more use

K. Ed. III. his Reservations of Benefices in *England*, and then he would desist from conferring Benefices upon the writ of *Quare impedit*, &c. But the Pope not liking this, and labouring to set the Clergy against the King, a Provision to prevent it was made in the 25th of his Reign, by a Statute of *Premunire* being Enacted, so that a restraint was clapt on the Popes Power in *England*, and many Learned Men in other Countreys writ and preached against his Encroachments and Usurpations, which occasion'd a grievous Persecution, for in the year 1390, there were burnt at *Bringa*, 36 Citizens of *Mentz*, for holding the Doctrine of the *Waldenses*, which maintain'd the Pope to be *Anti-Christ*, who should fill the World with Innumerable mischiefs: And *Maffeus* tells us, that 140 Persons in the Province of *Narbone* were burned, because they refused to own the Popes Decretals, as Authentick as the Scripture: And not long before 24 suffered in *Paris*; and 400 more by fire, beside 80 Beheaded, Prince *Americus* hanged, and his Lady stoned to Death, for Imputed Heresie; and the *Albigenses* were put to death in great Numbers; also one *Eckhardus*, or as some have it *Bergbardus*, a *Dominican Fryar*, was Condemned and suffered as a Heretick at *Heidelberg*, and *Ranulph* disputing in *St. Paul's Church*, and affirming, That the Sacraments used in the Church of Rome, were altogether different from those Christ Instituted, was cast in Prison where he Languished and Dyed.

John
Wickliffe
opposes the
Pope's pro-
ceedings.

Notwithstanding these Persecutions, God still continued to raise up faithful Men to give Testimony to the Truth, among whom was *John Wickliffe*, our Learned Countrey-man, who was Reader of the Divinity Lecture in *Oxford*, whose first publick undertaking in weighty Affairs, was to go into *Italy* with certain Lords, sent as Ambassadors to treat with the Popes Legat on Affairs, touching Ecclesiastical matters in *England*, where he behaved himself with such prudent Conduct, that he gained not only a place in the Kings esteem, but the favour of many

many others ; and upon his return openly Writ^{K. Ed. III.} and Preached against the Errors and Corruption of the Church of *Rome*, using such convincing Arguments, that *Walden* his most Implacable Enemy, writing to Pope *Martin* the Fifth, in his Epistle declares he was wonderfully Astonished at his Cogent Arguments, with the places of Authority he Quoted, and with the cogency and strength of his Reasons, nor was it long e'er he had several disputes with the Adversaries of Truth, who thought to silence him through fear of the Power they held, but in vain, for being Encouraged by the Duke of *Lancaster* the Kings Son, and the Lord *Piercy*, he disputed about the undue Administration of the Sacrament, Protesting, *His Aim was only to reform, or call back the Church to her Primitive purity, especially in this Particular.* Whereupon the Prelates first set the Monks and begging Fryars to bait him, and then the Priests ; but these nothing availing, *Simon Sudbury* the Arch-Bishop, deprived him of his Benefice in *Oxford* ; yet he was plentifully provided for by the Duke. However, the Bishops not ceasing to Persecute him, cited him before them in *St. Paul's*, where a Contest arising between the Duke of *Lancaster*, who Accompanied him, and the Bishop of *London*, which came to hot words, and had like to have proved worse through the rage, and fury of the Multitude who flocked thither, had not the Assembly broke up without doing any thing ; yea, the Lord *Piercy's* House in *London*, soon after was plundered by the Rabble, who had undoubtedly slain him, had they found him there in the heat of their fury ; and going to the Duke of *Lancaster's* House in the *Savoy*, upon notice of their coming, he and the Lord *Piercy* took Boat and fled to *Kingstone* on *Thames* ; however a Priest ill timing his discourse to them in Vindication of his Lord, they so miserably beat him, that he dyed next day in the Prison into which they had thrust him, and then taking

The Duke of Lancaster, a friend to Wickliffe.

The Clergy stir up the Rabble to mischief.

K. Ed. III.

down the Dukes Coat of Arms, they hanged it on a Gibbet in the publickeſt place of the City, as a diſgrace or reproach to him. Nay, ſo far did their fury proceed, that 'twas a good while e'er they could be ſuppreſſ'd: However at laſt being humbled, they were reconciled to the Duke, of which ſolemn Proclamation alſo was made in the Church at *Weſtminſter*; ſo that *Wickliffe* being Countenanced and upheld by the Duke, the Earl *Marſhal*, and other great Perſonages, frequently diſputed with, and always ever puzzled and non-pluſſed the Popes Clergy who were for the moſt Part very Illiterate Perſons Promoted more for Favour or Money than Merit and ſo in this Reign, for brevities ſake, I ſhall leave them, and treat further of them in the next, as matter and occaſion ſhall offer.

The King
of Caſtile,
reſtored by
Prince Edward.

During theſe Affairs, Prince *Edward* the King's Eldeſt Son, Eſpouſing the rightful cauſe of *Peter* King of *Caſtile*, who was driven out of his Kingdom by *Henry* his Baſtard Brother, and Marching into that Countrey overthrew a *Spaniſh* and *French* Army with a mighty ſlaughter, and reſtored *Peter* to his Kingdom: Yet the Prince no ſooner returned to *Bourdeaux*, but this King was again driven out and being taken by the Uſurper put to Death, leaving two Daughters Married to two of King *Edward's* Sons, viz. *John* Duke of *Lancaſter*, and *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, who in the right of their Wives laid claim to the Kingdom of *Caſtile*, but the Prince of *Wales* dying ſoon after this Expedition, not without ſuſpicion of having been Poiſoned, and King *Edward* grown Childiſh by reaſon of his great Age little was done in it, becauſe the *French* taking Advantage of the Diſcontents of the Eſtates of *Normandy*, for having unuſual Taxes levied to pay the Army returned to *Caſtile*, and ſiding with them ſwept away a great many ſtrong Towns; ſo that the *English*, who had never in this Kings Reign reaped any thing but Victories in all their Enterprizes

The Prince
dies.

izes, now proved too weak to withstand this tor-
 ment, tho' the Duke of *Lancaster* was sent over
 with an Army, and the Parliament (upon the Kings
 consenting to put away his evil Councellour, and
 specially *Alice Perry* his Concubine, who having
 bewitched him, as is said by the help of a *Fryar*,
 ruled and did all at Court in his Elder years) granted
 him a large supply, but (what through Age, and
 wasting his strength too much with Women, and
 particularly his great grief for the loss of so Incom-
 parable a Son) he lived not to see the Issue of this
 matter, for having Created *Richard* (Son to *Edward*
 the Black Prince) Prince of *Wales*, Earl of *Chester*,
 and Duke of *Cornwall*, Proclaiming him Heir Appa-
 rent to the Crown, and committing the Regency of
 the Kingdom in his Minority to the Duke of *Lan-*
 caster, he dyed the 12th. of *June*, Anno. 1377. In
 the 51st Year of his Reign, and about the 66th. of
 his Age, being buried at *Westminster*.

K. Ed. III.

The Death
 of King
 Edward.

In this Kings Reign the Proud Bishop of *Nor-*
wich, Quarrelling with the Mayor and Inhabitants
 of the Town of *Lennam* belonging to his Diocess,
 because they gave him not the Extraordinary Ho-
 nour he expected, was fallen upon beaten and
 wounded, and many of his followers slain.

Moreover King *Edward* sending his writs to the
 Bishops, to enquire what Church Promotions the
 Pope had bestowed on his *Italian* Clergy, and other
 strangers with their valuation, it appeared on the
 return of the said Writs and Certificates made there-
 upon, that the greater Part of these profits had
 been bestowed on Cardinals, Abbots, Priors, &c.
 that were not resident, but yearly sent for the Mo-
 ney arising thereby out of the Land, to the great
 impoverishment of the People.

The Pope
 had be-
 stowed most
 of the Be-
 nefices in
 England
 on stran-
 gers.

This King Instituted the Noble order of the *Gar-*
ter, as some say upon a blue Ribbon, dropping from
 the Countess of *Salisbury's* leg in a Dance, which he
 picking up and seeing some of the Courtiers smile,
 said,

The Insti-
 tution of
 the order of
 the Garter.

*K. Ed. III. said, Honi soit qui mal y pense, vowing e'er lo
that such Honour should be done that filken tye
should cause the best of them to be Proud of it.*

RICHARD the Second of that Na
King of England, &c. Began his Re
about the Year 1377.

*K. Rich II.
Prince
Richard
Crowned.*

*The
French
Invade
England,
and are
beaten out.*

Richard, Son and Heir to Edward Prince
Wales, Eldest Son to King Edward the Th
upon the Decease of his Grand-Father was Crow
ed at *Westminster*, Anno 1377. At the Age of E
ven years, and King Edward leaving behind him
Sons at Mens Estate, viz. *Leonel, John, Thomas*
Edmund, who mainly supported the young King
managed the Affairs of the common-wealth, till
grew up to riper years, but the *French* taking
Advantage of his Minority, and thinking to
wonders, put a great Fleet to Sea, and by surp
sacked and burnt *Plymouth, Dartmouth, Hasting*
Portsmouth and *Rye*, but being fallen upon by
mund Earl of *Cambridge*, the Kings Uncle, with
small Power they were put to the rout, many fl
and more drowned in the Sea, by over-ha
crouding to their Ships for shelter, and the *Scot*
the same time making In-roads, burnt *Roxborou*
and surprized the Castle of *Berwick*, into which
ing shut they were besieged, and all but *Alexan*
Ramsay their Captain upon storming it, put to
Sword.

Upon these and other mischiefs happening in
land, a Parliament was summoned, who granted
King a Subsidy of Aid, and an Army was Transf
red, who joyning with the Duke of *Britainy*, gre
endamage, the *French* taking many Towns and

but the Taxes to maintain this, was pressing ^{R. Rich. II.}
 somewhat heavy on the common People, they be-
 gan to murmur, of which one *John Wall* a factious <sup>The Eng-
lish In-</sup>
 vest, taking the Advantage (being underhand, ^{vade}
 encouraged by the disgusted *Fryars, Monks, and* France
 of the Prelates, because they could not prevail ^{successfully.}
 silence and punish *Wickliffe*) he went from Town
 Town, Insinuating and Preaching to the Ignorant
 sticks,

That by the Law of Nature every one was free Born, A factious
 that Laws were devised and made by Crafty Peo- ^{Priest.}
 only to bridle them in subjection and keep them Poor
 Low, that so they might enslave them to their
 s, and that by their Pedigrees derived from Adam,
 Monarch of the Universe, the good things of the
 should of right be equally divided amongst them,
 not some grow fat and rich whilst others pined
 starved, and that no Taxes were due on any pre-
 ce, but as they were free Born, in their Liberty they
 to be left free, and their Money and Goods to be
 at their own disposal: With much more to the
 purpose, for which he was Imprisoned by *Si-*
de Sudbury, Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, but up-
 his submission discharged, yet he left not off, till
 raised the People in Rebellion against their ^{The Rebel-}
 nce, and to commit Innumerable out-rages, for ^{lion of Wat}
 hering out of the Countries of *Essex, Bedford,* ^{Tyler and}
Essex, Kent, &c. and making themselves 3 Grace- ^{Jack}
 Captains, viz. *Wat Tyler*, a Taylor by professi- ^{Straw, &c.}
Jack Straw, and *Jack Shepherd*, two Husband
 en, they came to London, Assaulted the Bridge and
 length got entrance, Pillaging, Murthering, and
 rning at their pleasure; firing the Duke of Lan-
 er's House in the *Savoy*, and Murthering Divers
 his Servants, Plundering the Inns of Court, and
 rning all the Law Books and Records, that came
 their hands. And *Tyler* sending for his Master,
Richard Lyon a grave Citizen, caused his head to
 cut off, and carried before him on a spear in re-
 venge,

Rich. II. vengeance, because he beat him for his Rogueries, during the time of his Apprenticeship, and break into the *Tower Wall*, the Priest caused the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who he found there to be headed in revenge of his Imprisonment, and after many revilings broke the Princess the King's Mothers head, for reproving him of Insolency, after they had been Lords of the Revels for many days, Sir *William Walworth* Lord Mayor of *London* slew *Tyler*, for affronting the King, in *Smithfield* whereupon his followers dispersed, and many of the Ring-Leaders being taken were Executed in diverse Places, and thus this Cloud which threatened Storm to the whole Land was dissipated.

Tyler slain, and the Rebels dispersed.

Soon after this, the King Married the Lady *Anne* Daughter to *Charles* the Fourth, and Sister to *Westminster*, and summoned a Parliament at *Westminster* in which he Created his Uncles, *Edmund* of *Langley* Duke of *York*, and *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, Duke of *Gloucester*, and his Cousin *Henry* of *Bullenbrook*, Earl of *Derby*, also *Edward* Son to his Uncle, *John* Earl of *Derby*, also *Edward* Son of *Edmund* of *Langley*, Earl of *Rutland*, and divers others were promoted to high Honours and Dignities; But soon after this unfortunately he hearkening to the pernicious Counsels of *Michael de la Pole*, whom he had made Chancellour and Created Duke of *Suffolk*, and *Robert Vere*, whom he had Created Marquess of *Dublin* and Duke of *Ireland*, he fell into the dislike of his Nobles and Commons because these two Councillours directed him, and it were Governed in all Affairs: So that they not only refused to Aid him with any Tax, being then Assembled in Parliament, but resolved to separate as they said they Lawfully might do, if he refused Personally to appear amongst them in 40 days which highly displeased the King; but finding no remedy, he presented himself on the Throne in the Assembly, and in this Parliament the Chancellour was accused, and on Proof convicted for purloining

A difference between the King and his Nobles.

Kings Treasure, and with it purchasing an K. Rich. II.
 ate to his own use, for which, and other matters
 ere alledged against him, his Lands were seque-
 red to the Kings use, and he Amerced in the summ
 20000 Marks, deprived of his Chancellourship
 and all other Offices, and Committed to Prison;
 and the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, was made Lord
 Chancellor of *England*.

In this Parliament thirteen grave Persons were
 sworn, and Authorized with the consent of the
 King, in writing under his Hand and Seal to Ex-
 amine into abuses of Government, and punish cor-
 rupt Officers, which soon passed into a Law, that
 the King being sworn to observe this, if any should
 counsel or Perswade him to Infringe his Oath, for
 the first offence he should be Condemned to lose all
 his Goods, and for the second offence be Guilty of
 High Treason, and then a subsidy of one half fif-
 teenth was granted, but the Parliament being dis-
 solved, the King Released *De la pool*, and went with
 him, the Duke of *Ireland*, and *Trissilian* his Chief
 Justice, with other Judges to *Nottingham*, and there
 pronounced the Duke of *Gloucester* the Arch-Bishop
 of *Canterbury*, and the thirteen Commissioners to be
 guilty of High-Treason, for forcing the King against
 his will, to swear and sign the Commission, and from
 thence passing to *Coventry*, the Judges under their
 Hands and Seals, declared and confirmed their Opi-
 nions to be consonant and agreeable to the Laws of
 the Land, as they related to these matters.

During these Transactions in matters of State, I
 and *John Wickliffe* still bandying and strenuously
 maintaining his Doctrine, against the Pope and his
 Clergy, tho' the Bishops had strictly prohibited
 any more to medle in those affairs, he having
 by this time gotten him many followers, and his cus-
 tom was, to go bare-footed in a long coarse frize
 gown, Preaching diligently to the People against the
 errors of the *Roman Church*, plainly demonstra-
 ting

R. Rich. II. ring how contrary their Practice was to that of Saviour and his Apostles, and in his Sermons chiefly insisted on these Articles, viz.

Articles propounded by John Wickliffe. That the Holy Sacrament after the Consecration not the very body of Christ, but only so figuratively. That the Church of Rome, is not the head of Churches more than any other Church is, and that Peter, hath no more Power given him of Christ than any other Apostle.

That the Pope of Rome, has no more the Power the Keys, than any other within the order of Priesthood.

That the Lords Temporal may Lawfully take away or withhold their Temporalities from the Church, when they offend.

That the Gospel is a Rule sufficient of it self which a Christian may be directed to walk uprightly as he ought, without any other Rule.

That all other Rules under the observance of which Divers Religious Persons are governed, do no more perfect to the Gospel than the Light of the Sun to Clouds, when it Impresses those Colours on them, because the Rain-Bow, which with its Light suddenly vanish.

That neither the Pope, nor any other Prelate of Church ought to have Prisons for the punishment of Transgressors, but offences punishable in that kind, ought to be submitted to the secular Power.

The Popes Bull against Wickliffe's Doctrine.

These and many more he Preached and wrote upon which Pope Gregory in the first year of King's Reign sent a Bull (as some say) by the hands of one Edmund Stafford, directed to the University of Oxford, Imperiously rebuking them in the following words, for so long suffering Wickliffe's Doctrine to spread, As a Pestilent Heresy, false Conclusions and Propositions, misconstruing the right sense of Faith and Good works, things no longer to be disputed of or brought in question, and that if this Doctrine be not at the soonest withstood and eradicated; It might be perhaps too

prepare Remedies, when a great Number is Infected *K. Rich. II.*
the Contagion; Charging them moreover to apprehend him, and deliver him into the hands of
Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, or Bishop of London, to be dealt withal as they should determine he
deserved.

The Heads of the University having notice of this
a long time, deliberated among themselves
whether they should receive it, or reject it with Ignorance,
as not being capable of finding any thing
Wickliffe's Doctrine disconsonant to the Word of
God, or the Opinions of the Fathers of the Primitive
Church, and so much Incensed the Pope was,
he writ strict Letters to the Arch-Bishop, the
Bishop of London, and one to the King, commanding
Wickliffe's to be apprehended and Imprisoned; so
that is the Church of Rome, her Errors should be
brought into, least that dark Ignorance which is the
Foundation of her Devotion, and altogether upholds
it should vanish before the clear Morning light of
Truth.

Upon this Wickliff, was again cited before the Bishop of London
in their Provincial Council, and tho' they
insisted that no Man high nor low, should hinder
him from doing Justice upon him; yet one Lewis
Bourke a Courtier, being sent as some say by the
King, others by the Duke of Lancaster, entering the
Assembly, commanded them not to proceed to any
definitive sentence, which so dashed their courage,
that they sat mute looking on each other, and pro-
ceeded no further, whereat Wickliff was suffered to
depart upon a Declaration made of the Articles of
Faith, against which they could make no rea-
sonable objection, and moreover delivering his Pro-
testation in these words.

First, I protest, as I have often before done, that I
believe and intend with my whole heart, through the
Grace of God to be a true Christian, and as long as my
lasts, will profess and defend the Truth of Christ,
as

Wickliffe
cited be-
fore the Bi-
shops.

His Pro-
testation.

K. Rich. II. *as revealed in his Gospel, and if it shall so happen thro Ignorance, or otherwise I shall fail therein, I humbly beseech my Lord God, to Pardon and forgive me, own and submit to one holy Catholick Church, of which Christ is the Head, and seeing my Doctrine has spread so far least any should take offence by me, or I should be a stumbling block in their way; I purpose to explain the meaning in this matter, and set forth the sentence of the Articles for which I am now accused and wrongfully Impeached, the which also unto Death, I will defend. I verily believe all Christians ought to do; Especially the Bishop of Rome, and all other Priests and Ministers of the Church, for I do understand the conclusions of the sense and manner of the speaking of Scriptures, and the holy Fathers of the Primitive Church which I am required to expound, and if they shall be found contrary to fact I will be heartily willing to revoke them.*

Upon this he exhibited his exposition upon the conclusions he had written to them, but tho' they could object little against them, they seemed not at all to like them, as being contrary to their Interest, charging him strictly upon his dismissal, *That he should not Preach any such Doctrine for the future, that might estrange the minds of the Lay-People from the Apostolick see;* But for all this he continued to Preach during his life-time, and having gone through many Persecutions, gaining a Number of Profelytes, died in Peace, yet his Doctrine spreading after his Death, his bones in revenge were taken up 40 years or more after he dyed, burnt, and the Ashes of them thrown into a River.

**A Schism
at Rome
39 years.**

Soon after this Pope Gregory the XIth. dyed whereupon ensued such a Schism in Rome, between two pretending Popes, and others succeeding after them, one striving against the other, that it endured the space of 39 years, even till the Assembling of the General Council at Constance, in which spread all manner of Violence was Acted, and every thing in a manner given up to spoil and rapine, with abundance

lance of Blood shed, which laid the most fertile x Rich. II.
 parts of *Italy* waste; and this was chiefly occasioned
 by Pope *Urban* the Sixth's promoting his Nephews,
 Cardinals, Kindred and Creatures, to Dukedoms,
 Earldoms and Lordships, which made them Proud,
 and raise Factions and Divisions, to rend in pieces
 both the Ecclesiastical and Civil Government, in
 those and other Countreys, which plainly demon-
 strates that Ambition and Avarice, is the main thing
 the *Roman* Clergy aim at; however Religion for a
 colour, is pretended to work and carry on their de-
 signs; *Simon* of *Sudbury*, being Murthered by the
 Abbe, (as I have mentioned) in the *Tower*, *William*
Wautney, a no less Zealous Assertor of the Popes
 cause, succeeded him in the See of *Canterbury*, and
 persecuted not only *Wickliff*, but his followers, and
 more especially *Nicholas Hereford*, *Philip Repingdon*, Divers
 and *John Ashton*, writing to the University of Ox- Persecuted.
 ford, not to suffer *Wickliff*'s Doctrine to be taught
 there, nor so much as mentioned amongst them,
 and caused the three before-mentioned Persons to be
 brought before him, and *Divers Fryars*, his Assistants,
 who Courageously defended their Opinions in ma-
 ny things opposite to the Doctrine and Tenents of
 the Church of *Rome*; the two first, being Batchel-
 lors in Divinity, and the last a Master of Arts, all
 very learned and Judicious Men: So that after a
 long Examination and Controversy, their Conclusi-
 on and Tenents were pronounced Heretical, Erro-
 neous and Sophistical, and because *Hereford* and *Re-*
pingdon, did not appear according to the time, they
 were Excommunicated by the Arch-Bishop for con-
 temnacy, and again cited to Answer, whereupon
 they appealed to the Pope, but it was rejected as
 insufficient, or rather not agreeable to that Prelates
 constitution, and strict orders were sent to the Uni-
 versity of *Oxford* for apprehending them, and to
 that purpose the King was solicited by the Arch-
 bishop, to joyn the Temporal Power to strengthen
 U his,

K. Rich. II. his, for as yet it appeared not, there was any Law in England, whereby the Ecclesiasticks had Power to Persecute and Afflict any Man, tho' they carried it arbitrarily with a high hand; wherefore in the Parliament of 5. *Rich. II.* they procured one to be Enacted without the consent of the Commons, wherefore it was soon after repealed, Impowering the Sheriffs and other the Kings Commissioners, to Imprison such as Preached Heretical and Erroneous Doctrine (as they called it) their Maintainers and Abettors, which caused the ruin of many good Families, as being the ground-work, on which the Popes and Clergy laid their future Persecutions in England, to the effusion of much Innocent blood. And hereupon *Repingdon* and *Ashton* through fear abjured many particular Points in Religion, they had before Preached, but *Hereford* not doing the like was Imprisoned, and the Arch-Bishop writ to the King, grievously complaining against him; charging him to be an obstinate and obdurate Heretic, praying him to use his Power in punishing him: To whom the King returned a mild Answer, and among other Passages in his long Letter he has these briefly viz.

*The Kings
Answer to
the Clergy.*

We cannot but something wonder, First, to see you Men of the Church and Angels of Peace, so desirous of Blood. Secondly, to consider you again so violent in Prosecuting the Breach of your Law, and yet so cold in pursuing the breach of the express Law of God and his Commandments. Thirdly, to behold the unstable doubleness in your proceedings, as pretending in your publick sentence, to become Intercessors for them to be in the Bowels of Jesus Christ, that we will withdraw from them the Rigour of our punishment, and yet in your Letters, you are they that most Exasperate us, exert our Justice in the utmost severity, &c.

During the Persecution of these good Men, *Wickliff* by the advice of his friends, retired to *Lutterworth*, where he was Parson when he had absconded

for a time, and there after a short Sickness dyed K. Rich. II.
 Peace, in the beginning of the year 1384. How-
 ever strict Inquisition was made for his Writings,
 and as *Aeneas Sylvius* tells us, to the Number of 200
 of them, being several Treatises in Divinity, were
 found and burnt at *Oxford*; but so they could not stifle Wick-
 his Doctrine, which spread, and may be said to be the liffe's Books
 first Foundation of our latter reforming from the burnt at
 Church of *Rome*, as also of all other Protestant Oxford.
 Churches which have done the like, tho' his Books
 at those times were not only condemned and burnt
 there, but likewise in all other Parts where Copies
 of them were found; and by a Decree of the Synod
 of *Constance*, his Bones were taken out of the Grave His bones
 at *Lutterworth*, and with much Ceremony burned taken up
 his Ashes as Heretical, 41 years or near it, after he and burnt.
 had been Interred.

As for the spreading of *Wickliffe's* Doctrine in
Bohemia, it was occasioned by a young *Bohemian*
 Gentlemans being at *Oxford*, and taking Copies of
 several of his Books, carried them to *Prague*, where
John Hufs the Martyr, of whom I shall have occa-
 sion to speak, was a Divinity Preacher; who seeing
 and highly approving of them, soon after publicly
 professed and Preached according to the Articles
 and Tenents contained in them: Saying, *The Au-*
thor was a blessed Man, wishing his Soul might be with
him when he dyed; And by this Accidental beginning
 soon spread over that Kingdom, and into many
 parts of *Germany*, which made the Popes rage, and
 breath out nothing but slaughter against the Church
 of *Christ*; So the Persecution soon waxed hot and
 many suffered cruel deaths, and among the Persecu-
 ted in these early times were *William Swinderby*, A severe
Walter Brute, *John Purvey*, *Richard White*, *William Persecu-*
torpe, *Raynold Peacock*, first Bishop of *St. Asaph*, and tion.
John of Chichester, *Lawrence Redman*, Master of
Lutterworth, *David Sawtree* a Divine, *John Askwarby*, Vi-
 car of *St. Mary's Church* at *Oxford*, *William James*,

K. Rich. II. a Learned young Gentleman, *Thomas Brightwell*, *William Haxilam*, a Civilian, *Ralph Greenburst*, *John Scute* and *Philip Norris*.

Among others that fled the Persecution in *England*, was one *Peter* who went to *Bohemia*, and there Learnedly disputed in the Council of *Basil*; but his Learned Arguments defended not his Life against blood thirsty Men, with many others; so mightily encreased the Word of God and prevailed.

One *William Swinderby* a Priest, was grievously Persecuted by the Bishop of *Lincoln* and others, Anno 1389. For holding certain tenents, tho' he proved them to be agreeable to Scripture, and a good Faith yet he was sentenced to silence under pain of *Premunire*; as also all that should hear him Preach or adhere to him, were sharply threatened; and some say, afterwards he dyed in Prison, others that he was burned, but this remains doubtful.

The next the Clergy set upon, was *Walter Brute* who with a Christian Resolution defended and cleared himself by Scripture and the Fathers, from the Imputation of Heresy: Yet was he grievously Persecuted, and certain of the Inhabitants of *Leicester* were Persecuted and Constrained to abjure their tenents, and had their Penance allotted, to go in their shirts bare-footed before the Cross, with an Image of the Crucifix in one hand, and a wax taper in the other, 3 times in Procession to the Church of our Lady of *Leicester*.

Now *Boniface* the Ninth, coming to the See of *Rome*, and beginning to trouble *England*, with Persecutions; the King wrote several Letters to him, That he forbear any cruelty towards his faithful Subjects, which he could no ways suffer, for things charged upon them in matters of Conscience: Seeing they were not Oppugnant to the Word of God. And Indeed, all his Reign he was very tender in this particular, restraining the cruelty of the Clergy as much as in him lay: But now it is time I return again to the Historical Part where I left off.

The King
accuses the
Pope of cru-
elty.

The Kings Proceedings at Nottingham and Coventry before-mentioned, much perplexed the Nobles ; whereupon they addressed their grievances to him, charging him with the breach of his Oath and Promises, also his harkening to evil Councillours, Naming more than have been mentioned, *Alexander, Arch-Bishop of York*, and *Sir Nicholas Bamber Lord Mayor of London*, intreating him to Banish them and the rest, the Kingdom, who had so preverfly advised him ; but with a Princely Courage he refused it, and Practised with the Lord Mayor to raise forces in *London* to surprize the Nobles ; yet the Citizens refused to obey him in this particular : Then he demanded a Loan of 1000 l. but upon their refusal to lend it, he seized into his hands their Charter, Liberties and Privileges ; dissolving the Magistracy, and appointing *Sir Edward Darlingsdredg* Lieutenant, and called a Parliament, when the Duke of *Ireland*, privily lay in ambush with 5000 Men to surprize the Lords, as they came to give their Attendance : But they having notice came so strongly Guarded, that the Duke was forced to escape over the River of *Thames*, and Sailed into *France*, where Hunting a Boar he was slain.

The King
seizes on
the Charter of London.

The Parliament sitting, and the Evil Councillours cited to appear ; upon default they were attainted of High Treason, and *John Earl of Salisbury*, and *Sir Nicholas Bamber*, lost their Heads. *Trissilian* was hanged at *Tyburn*, and the other Judges concerned, had not the Queen Interceeded, had run the same fate : And then they settled the Nation in Peace ; so that *John Duke of Lancaster*, had leasure to pass into *Castile* with an Army in right of his Dutcheffs, and Warred so successfully, that for Peace he was allowed 10000 Mark yearly, and laden with Riches returned into *England* ; about which time Queen *Ann* dyed, for whom the King grieved Immoderately ; burning the Palace of *Sheen* to ashes where- in she dyed, laying a curse on any that should re-

Evil Coun-
cellours
Executed.

K. Rich II. build it : Yet in a while after he Married *Isabel* Daughter to *Charles* the Sixth of *France* an Infant concluding a Peace with him and the Duke of *Brittany*; and calling a Parliament, *Sir John Bush*, a favorite of the Kings, was chosen Speaker of the lower House: In which Parliament, *Thomas Arundel* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, was accused by him on several Articles; and not making a defence in due time, was Banished, and the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwick*, being attainted of High Treason; the former of these lost his Head, and the latter being Banished into the *Isle of Wight*, dyed through grief and penury: And by a stratagem, the good Duke of *Gloucester*, the Kings Uncle, was taken and carried to *Calis*, and there smothered to Death by the contrivance of *Thomas Mowbray*, Earl of *Nottingham*; for which wicked Exploit, he was soon after Created Duke of *Norfolk*: But accusing *Henry* of *Bullenbrook*, Son to the Duke of *Lancaster*, of Treasonable and scandalous words against the King, he Claimed the right of Arms, and Challenged him to the Combate; but as they entered the Lists prepared for the Mortal fight, the King threw down his warder and stayed their hands, Banishing *Mowbray* for ever, who dyed miserably beyond the Seas, and *Henry* was Banished only for six years; but in the mean time the Duke of *Lancaster* his father dying, and the King sequestering his Lordships and great Treasure into his hands, then going into *Ireland* to quiet the *Rebellious Irish*, *Henry* taking the advantage of his absence, returned with a small force, under pretence of recovering his Inheritance; but in a little time so many flocked to him, that he had a strong Army.

This News hastened King *Richard* out of *Ireland* but too late, for those favorites he left behind him were either fled, or taken and put to death: Whereupon he finding he was in a manner forsaken of all Men, surrendered himself to Duke *Henry*, resigning

The Persecuting
Arch-Bi-
shop Banished.

to him his Crown and Government: Yet was he committed Prisoner to the Tower. Whereupon a Parliament being called he was formally deposed, when he had Reigned 22 years, 3 months and 3 days, and the Crown of England Invested in Henry and his Heirs: So that some time after, the deposed King was Barbarously Murthered, as will appear more fully in the next Reign.

*K. Rich. II.
King Richard Im-
prisoned.*

In King Richard's Reign in one Parliament, all appeals to Rome were restrained, and the Pope's usurped Authority in England Abrogate; and a little before his deposing, all the Bay Trees in England withered, and soon after shot out again with fresh and flourishing Branches.

HENRY the Fourth King of England, &c.

KING Richard the Second being deposed, Thomas Arundel, Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, who came over from Banishment with Henry, and had greatly Encouraged him to aspire to the Crown, placed him on the Throne; when rising and crossing himself he said,

K. Hen. IV.

In the Name of God Amen. I Henry of Lancaster, Claim the Realm of England and the Crown, with all the Appurtenances, as coming by the blood Royal from King Henry the Third, and through the right of God of his Grace hath sent me, with the help of my friends, for the recovery of the said Realm, which was at the point of Perdition, through the default of Government and Breach of Laws.

Henry Claims the Crown.

K Hen. IV.

He is
Crowned.A conspi-
racy disco-
vered.

After these words Pronounced, the Arch-Bishop demanded the assent of the People, whether they would receive *Henry* for their King; who being before-hand prepared for this purpose, consented and shouted for Joy; and so he was Crowned in the lifetime of *Richard* the Second: Whereupon he Created his Eldest Son *Henry*, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal* and Earl of *Chester*; and in the Parliament the Bishop of *Carlisle* speaking in favour of *Richard* was Arrested and Committed close Prisoner in the Abbey of *St. Albans*, and the Crown Entailed on *Henry* and his Heirs for ever.

Soon after this, Divers Lords who Compassionated the Wrongs and Miseries of the deposed King Conspired the Death of King *Henry*; binding themselves under the obligation of a solemn Oath to Assassinate him at *Oxford*, where certain sports were appointed for his Entertainment. But *Edward*, Son to the Duke of *York*, being one of the Conspirators, his father drawing suddainly a writing out of his Bosom, by a Label that hung from it, containing the Combination and Agreement, hastened to Advertise the King of it: But being out-rid by the Son, who first discovered this Plot, the King granted him pardon, and advanced towards the Lords with an Army; who finding their project discovered took the field, declaring King *Richard* was escaped from Prison, and with them shewing to the People one *Margaret*, a fellow of mean Birth, whom they caused to Personate him, and who indeed was exceeding like him; but upon the Kings approach with a considerable Army, most of their followers left them. Whereupon they were constrained to shift the best they could for their Lives; some flying beyond the Seas, and others being taken, were mostly Executed, and this hastened the Death of *Richard*; for *Henry* complaining, That so long as he breathed he should have no quiet, and demanding, if none were so much his friends as to rid him of that trouble; A wicked Courtier

Courtier Named *Pierce* of *Exton*, to curry favour K. Hen. IV.
 with the King took the hint, went to *Pontefract Castle*, whither *Richard* had been removed, and with K. Richard
 Divers Assassins getting Admittance, entered the Murdered
 Lodging of the deposed King and set upon him; but in Prison.
 he still Valiant in his Misery, wrested a Bill or battle
 ax from one of them, fought so Valiantly for his
 life, that he laid four of the Villains dead at his
 feet, and had certainly destroyed the rest; but that
 coming by a chair where *Pierce* had retired for shel-
 ter, he struck him from his lurking hole so forcibly,
 that he felled him to the ground; and getting this
 advantage they Murdered him: Tho' some Au-
 thors will have it, but without any substantial
 ground, that he was famished to Death. How-
 ever, to satisfy the People he was dead; his body
 was exposed to view by King *Henry's* command cer-
 tain days, which wickedness so much grieved the
 French King, that he sent his Letters of defiance to
Henry; and Invaded his Transmarine Territories;
 refusing, though earnestly solicited thereto, to e-
 ver restore his Daughter *Isabel*, Widow of *Richard* the
 deceased King, to *Henry*, Eldest Son to King *Henry*:
 concluding that Matches between *England* and
 France were always unfortunate. So that being
 at home, she Married her Cousin *Charles*, Eldest
 Son to *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans*.

This Kings Title to the Crown being but weak,
 he found himself necessitated to keep and make what
 ends he could; so that the Pope and Clergy, in
 any things he was obliged to wink at for his In-
 terest, shewed their cruelty towards such as held
 the Doctrine of *Wickliffe*. For Anno 1400. the The Perse-
 Clergy got such an Ascendant over the Parliament cution of
 when holden at *Westminster*, that when *William Saw-* William
 a Priest, a Man very Devout and Religious, de- Sawtree.
 clared that he might be heard for the good of the
 whole Kingdom; the Bishops who had notice of
 Intendments, prevailed so as to have the hearing
 him

A. Hen. IV. him themselves in their Convocation: Where, without hearing what he had to say, they presently charged him with Preaching, Heretical and Erroneous Doctrine, disagreeing to the Catholick Faith and to the great Peril and Pernicious Example of others; causing Divers of his conclusions to be publicly read in their Assembly, viz.

That he had declared he would not worship the Cross on which Christ suffered, but only Christ who suffered on it.

*Articles
against
him.*

That he would sooner worship a Temporal King than that Cross.

That he would rather worship the Bodies of Saints, than the Cross if it was before him.

That if any one make a vow to go a Pilgrimage to the Tombs of St. Peter and St. Paul, &c. for obtaining any Temporal benefit; he was not obliged to keep his vow, but what he had to offer there, would be better bestowed on the Poor.

That every Priest and Deacon is more in Conscience bound to Preach the Word of God, than to say the Canonical hours.

That after the Priests Pronouncing the Sacramental Words, the Bread and Wine remain unchanged, and the same Elements they were before.

For the greater Part of this, as well he might he alledged Scripture and Reason; with the Opinion of the Fathers; and Learnedly confounded the Arch-Bishop; yet all would not avail him; for though he had the Word, they had the Sword on their side and sentenced him as a Heretick, degraded him from his Priestly Orders and Vestments; after which he was delivered over to the secular Power, to be consumed in flames: And to that end the Kings Warrant was directed to the Sheriff; and pursuant thereto he was burnt to Ashes, Singing in the fire and Praiseing God, *That he had counted him worthy to suffer for the sake of Christ, his blessed Redeemer.* His blood Appeased them not, for soon after the

His Martyrdom.

upon one *John Badby*, being by Trade a Tay-^{K.Hen.IV.}
 ; who living near a Friary in *London*, was over-
 ard by some of them, usually, devoutly to Pray
 and Sing Hymns; and further observed not to fre-
 quent confession, and the like. Whereupon they
 concluding he was a follower of *Wickliffe's* Do-
 ctine, and consequently, as they termed it, a He-
 retick and an Enemy to Holy Church; they com-^{John Bad-}
 manded of him: Infomuch that he was cited before ^{by Perse-}
 the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* and Divers others, ^{cuted.}
 who took him into strict Examination: His accu-
 sation being, *That he had maintained that the Sacra-* ^{His Accu-}
ment of the body of Christ, after the Consecration of the ^{sation.}
element upon the Altar; was not the real body of Christ,
the Virtue of the Sacramental words pronounced; but
the Element of bread did remain as before Conse-
cration. And further, that he had declared John Ra-
ther of Bristol, had as much Power and Authority to
make the body of Christ, as any Priest had; and that
when Christ sat at supper with his Disciples, he had not
the body in his hand to distribute to them. And also
that he uttered many other Heretical Expressions,
repugnant to the Ears of the hearers, and opposite to
Catholick faith; and that of these things, tho'
he had been admonished, he refused to abjure

To this he Answered meekly, that what he had ^{His An-}
 said and done, was warranted by the Scripture; and ^{swer.}
 Condemned by the Eminent Fathers of the
 primitive Church, nor any good Christian: Where-
 upon he was sentenced as a Heretick, and afterward
 temptations or promises of Riches being capable
 of shaking his courage and constancy; they procu-
 red the Kings Warrant, directed to the secular Ma-
 gistrate, to see him consumed in the flames. He was
 put into a Tub up to the middle, and fuel being put ^{His Mar-}
 about it, patiently suffered Martyrdom; being heard ^{tyrdom.}
 say no more when the flames horribly raged about
 him, than, *Mercy, Lord Jesus Christ, Mercy,* and so
 quietly

K.Hen.IV. quietly resigned his Spirit into the hands of the
 of all Mercy and Truth.

*A cruel
 Statute.*

The Clergy in these Cases dealing with the King as they pleased, in the next Parliament they passed a cruel Statute to be observed; called *Ex officio* Prohibiting any *To Preach privily or openly, without special Licence from the Ordinary; and that the Ordinary should have Power to Examine them, touch their faith, with much to the like purpose: Also* Power of punishment, and many severe punishments to be Inflicted on such as duly observed it. So that this Law, compared with those of the persecuting Tyrant, *Maximinus* Emperor of Rome, in great measure runs Parallel: Seeming to be founded on the Heathen Laws, by the Power of which many Thousand Primitive Christians were destroyed by cruel torments, giving the Popes Clergy full scope to exert their Vengeance on the faithful Servants of Christ; nor did they delay strictly put it in Execution; yet their labour was in vain, silence the spreading of the Gospel Truths, though the Arch-Bishop set forth his Injunctions against the exciting the People to destroy all that embraced New Heresy, as they falsely styled it, appointing Preachers what they should deliver as Doctrine, strictly charging them not to transgress in passing their bounds, and that diligent search should be made after all such as were disobedient, that they might be severely punished; yet like the Victorious Palm Trees rising under weights to a greater height, the more they were oppressed the more they increased, almost throughout all the Countries of *England*; yet some, as in all times, being over-awed and terrified by the Rigorous punishments inflicted on themselves and others, recanted; among

John Purvey and others Recant.

whom was *John Purvey*, who Recanted at St. Pauls Cross, *John Edwards* a Priest in the Diocese of *London*, *Richard Herbert* and *Eleonor Wille* of *London*, also *John Seynons* of *Lincoln-shire*, though the Article

they constrained them to abjure, were in no particular disconsonant to the Word of God, however they might be contradictory to the Popes Decretals and Institutions.

Among those that stood out, and whose constant fear could not shake, the next in order is *William Thorp*, who Courageously defended the truth, been often Imprisoned, Examined, Threatned and Persecuted, as appears in the large History of his sufferings, written by himself and transmitted to Posterity, tho' it is not mentioned therein, whether he died in Peace, or by a violent Death; however he left such Doctrine behind him in writing, as enlightened the Eyes of many, plainly to see the Errors of the Church of *Rome*, and how deceitfully the Clergy dealt with Mens Souls; upon which Account we have Termed him *the LOLLARDS Library*, or *Glosser upon Wickliffe*.

About this time the Clergy were much vexed at a Learned and Godly Sermon Preached at *St. Pauls* Cross, by *R. Wimbledon*, wherein he compared (from the Words of our Saviour) Heaven to a householder that went forth to hire Servants at the third, sixth, ninth, and eleventh hours, showing that God had sundry calls at Divers times, in Divers manners to bring his Servants into his Vine-yard, yet their reward should be the same, that he looked upon this last call as that of the eleventh hour, proving all those were called of God who Preached, and willingly heard his Gospel in sincerity of heart and uprightness, whatever the Pope or his Clergy esteemed of them, who were not so acquainted with the mind of God as to determine this matter: Also that those who Preached contrary Doctrine, and held tenents contrary to the revealed Word of God were no true servants, but Loiterers who stood Idle and kept others out of his Vine-yard, like the Pharisees shut the Gates of the Kingdom of Heaven, and would neither enter themselves,

R. Hen. IV.

William Thorp Persecuted.

A notable Sermon.

K. Hen. IV. selves, nor suffer if they could hinder it, those that were ready and willing to enter, &c.

Pope Gregory Perjured.

Cardinal Bituricensis, denies the Popes Supremacy.

K. Henry writ to the Pope.

3 Popes at one time.

The Schism continuing still at *Rome* between two Popes, and the Cardinals being some for the one and some for the other, it was at last agreed (seeing *St. Peter* ought not to have two Successors at one time) to joyn both Colleges of Cardinals together, and whosoever they chose, the Popes in being should give place to, if it fell not upon one of them; but **Pope Gregory** the XIIth. tho' he was sworn to the Holy Evangelists and the Sacrament, when it came to the up-shot would not recede; whereupon they accused him of Perjury, and Complaind of it to all the Christian Princes, and among others **Cardinal Bituricensis** came into *England*, and accusd him to **King Henry**, affirming, contrary to their usual way, that Popes ought to be subject to Laws and Councils.

Upon this **King Henry** writ to **Gregory**, declaring the mischief this Schism had done to the Church beside the loss of 200000 Mens lives in the Wars, Contentions and Quarrels it had occasioned, persuading him to desist according to his Oath and Promise made to the Cardinals; for the prevention of further mischief, he also writ to the College of Cardinals, acquainting them with the Contents of his Letter to the Pope; yet **Gregory**, tho' he was 80 years of Age, set light by it and resolved to keep his hold if possible; yet soon after, seeing no remedy for it, the Popes **Benedict** the Fifth, and **Gregory** met at *Pisa*, and agreed to the Election of a New Pope; whereupon **Alexander** the Fifth was Electd; but the other two, it falling to neither of their share as they expected, repented of this agreement, and would not give their consents in confirming the Election; however it was done without them by the Cardinals, so that now there were three Popes pretending to *St. Peter's* Chair; and the New Pope, to ingratiate himself with **King Henry**, sent Indul-

for the Pardon of all sorts of sins, to such as ^{R Hen IV}
ould Liberally bestow Money on St. Bartholomew's
ospital in *Smithfield*, that so the King might co-
rtly have an opportunity to do it, as an Expiari-
for the Murther of King *Richard*, and so great
ms were given to the Popes receivers, the most
rt of which came to his own fingering, yet he
ce out-lived the year of his Election, who dy-
g, *John the XXIII* got into St. Peter's Chair.

And now *Wickliffe's* Doctrine spreading in *Bohe-*
a, by the means I have recited, the Popish Clergy
ere Laboured with all their might, to suppress it,
prisoning and Torturing the Professors of it,
aking grievous complaints to Pope *Alexander* the
th, a little before he dyed, that Heresy spread so
they were not able to root it out; for *John Hufs*,
ning with Divers other Divines, boldly Preach-
g to the People soon got an Incredible Number of
lowers; whereupon the Pope sent his Bull to the
ch-Bishop commanding him, that with four Bat-
ellours of Divinity and two Doctors of the com-
on Law, he should proceed upon it, and see that
Person in Churches, Schools, nor in any other
ce whatsoever, should teach, approve, or defend
Heretical Doctrine, or the Articles it contain-
; and that whosoever should attempt it, should
accounted a Heretick, unless he solemnly revo-
and publicly abjured it, commanding more-
all Books and Writings containing those Arti-
should be destroyed, and that the secular Power
ould be aiding to Apprehend and Imprison such
taught, or were hearers of this Doctrine.

Against this Bull and others, *Hufs* justly com-^{John Hufs,}
ined, objecting many things in his Book *Intitu-*^{writes}
De Ecclesia, Cap. 18. Declaring them to be op-^{against the}
ite to Christs Institutions, and also the Doctrine^{Popes Bulls.}
the Apostles, alledging truly that Christ taught
People on the Sea, in the Desart, Houses, Streets
the Synagogue, that the Apostles did the like,
and

R. Hen. IV. and that the Pope did ill to go about to hinder Preaching of the Gospel to the People, when Christ had expressly commanded his Apostles to teach Nations, and was willing to appeal to *Alexander* when he should be better informed of the matter, but in the mean while this Pope dyed and was succeeded by *John* the XXIII^d. and the Arch-Bishop of *Suinco*, finding that neither *Vinceslaus* King of *Bohemia*, nor *Sigismund* King of *Hungary*, would assist with him for the destruction of *Huss* and his followers, he dyed of grief and vexation, so that some time after they had rest.

The Clergy of *England*, having King *Henry* altogether on their side, still continued the Persecution and grew so Intolerably Proud and Cruel with that they gained the General hatred of the Laity for the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* suspended several Churches in *London*, because they rung their Bells as he passed by, and caused Divers Country-men to do Penance in going bare-foot before the Cross in Procession with sacks of straw on their backs, because they had neglected to bring Hay and Straw, as by tenure bound to do; where upon these old Rhymes were written with the figure of a Man, carrying a sack of straw, under them, viz.

*This Bag of straw I bear on my back,
Because my Lords Horse his litter did lack;
If ye be not good to my Lord Graces Horse,
Ye are like to go bare-foot before the Cross.*

And now I return to Prosecute the History of *Henry* where I left off.

Whilst these things happened, the *Welch* were very troublesome to *England*, under the leading of *Owen Glendour*, and in a pitched Battel overthrew the Kings Army, taking the Lord *Grey* and *Edmund Mortimer*, the Kings Cousin, and true Heir to the Crown.

Crown, Prisoners, whom tho' the King was Earnestly Solicited to Ransom, he refused it, as rather desiring he should dye in his hard Imprisonment than be set at Liberty; whereupon the *Piercies* of *Northumberland* having over-thrown the Invading *Scots*, with great slaughter, and taken many of their Nobles Prisoners, which they refusing to deliver to the King upon his demanding them, a War Ensued; for they Joyning with *Glendowr* and the *Scots* Borderers, raised an Army and Proclaimed the King a Murderer and Traytor to his rightful Sovereign Lord King *Richard*, utterly defying him; whereupon the two Armies met and a bloody Battel was fought, wherein the King with great difficulty prevailed, and *Piercy Hotspur*, Son to the Earl of *Northumberland*, with many Nobles and Men of Account were Slain, with about 6000 of Lesser Note, and the Earls of *Douglas*, and many others were taken Prisoners; whereupon *Worcester* and several of the Ring leaders lost their heads, and those of lower degree, to a great Number, were hanged and quartered; and the *Welch* soon after being pursued by Prince *Henry*, were brought into such streights, that many thousands of them, together with *Owen Glendowr*, were famished in the Woods, beset with English Soldiers

A Rebellion
on in the
North.

Whilst these troubles happened in *England*, the Duke of *Burgundy* with a *French* Power laboured to reduce *Callis*, but upon notice King *Henry* was preparing a great Army to pass the Seas, the *French* King Recalled his forces; and in other attempts in *Gascoign*, they were worsted and lost a great part of their Army, 12 of their Nobles, and 120 others of Note, being taken Prisoners; when to quiet matters in *England*, of which disturbance the *French* took Advantage to Invade the Transmarine provinces, the King Pardoned the Earl of *Northumberland* and his Adherents their late Rebellion; but was not long e'er they broke out into new Hostilities,

K. Hen. IV. lities, but being closely pursued *Thomas Mowbray* Earl Marshal, and *Richard Scrope*, Arch-Bishop of *York*, lost their heads; whereupon *Northumberland* and the Lord *Bardolf* with many more, made the escape into *France*; And the *Scots* having Encouraged these Broils, the King sent Prince *Henry* with an Army, who retook *Berwick*, *Alnwick*, and other strong places, burning a great Number of Towns and Villages, which compelled them to beg Truce, and it was granted for one Year; and so the Prince returned home Laden with Rich spoils

The
French
Invade
England
and are
defeated.

About this time the *French* set out a great Fleet and Landed forces at *Dartmouth*; but being Encountered by the Countrey People, the Lord *Cassingham* with most of his Soldiers was slain, and the remainder that Landed taken Prisoners and brought to the King, who well rewarded the Rusticks for their Vigilance and Valour; but soon after the King taking his pleasure on the Sea, narrowly Escaped being surprized by a *French* Man of War, which was Imputed to the Intelligence given by the Lord *Cornwallis*, a *Norman* Nobleman who attended him; but upon Tryal he cleared himself of that Imputation and was again Received into favour.

King Henry
like to
be taken by
the
French.

The Truce Expiring with *Scotland*, they Invaded *England*, but, after they had done a great deal of mischief, they were Encountered and Totally defeated by *Thomas Rookby*, High Sheriff of *Northumberland*, who slew the Earl of *Northumberland*, and sent his head to the King; and in this Battell Lord *Bardolf* being sore wounded soon after dyed. Upon these troubles the King Summoned a Parliament, and therein Created his three younger Sons viz. *Thomas*, Duke of *Clarence*, *John*, Duke of *Bedford*, and *Humphrey*, Duke of *Gloucester*; and from this time he Enjoyed a settled Peace outwardly; but inwardly being troubled for the Murder of his Cousin *Richard*, he intended for the Expiation of that Guilt to War against the Infidels in the

The Scots
defeated

Land; and the Clergy, that they might Rule all ^{K Hen IV.}
in his Absence, mightily perswaded him to this so
Glorious (as they stiled it) an undertaking, trum-
ping up a Prophecy, foretelling the Victories he ^{A Lying}
should gain, and at last die in *Jerusalem*; but whilst ^{Prophecy.}
his Army was getting ready he fell into a fit of the
Apoplexy, and finding Death approach, caused his
Crown to be set on his Pillow, least any that had a
better right to it might seize it; but Prince Henry
his Son, supposing him to be Dead, took it away,
when the King coming to himself, demanded who
had done it, to whom the Prince replied, It was
me. Whereupon the King falling back and fetching
a deep sigh, said, *Ab, my Son, my Son, what right I*
had to this Crown, and how I have Enjoyed it, God
knows and the World hath seen. To which the Prince
said, *Comfort your self, Good father, in God, the*
Crown you have, and if you die it is mine, and I will
keep it with my Sword as you have done. And in a ^{The King}
few hours after the King dyed in the 46th Year of ^{dies.}
his Age, having Reigned 13 Years, 3 Months, and
9 Days, and was Buryed at *Canterbury*, Anno 1412.
In this Kings Reign a Plague Raged in *England*, of
which in *London* 30000 Persons Dyed, and two
terrible blazing Comets were seen a little be-
fore the Rebellion of the *Piercies* broke out in the
North.

HENRY the Fifth King of Eng- land, &c.

After the Death of Henry the IVth. Prince ^{K. Hen.V.}
Henry his Eldest Son succeeded, who having
been very Lewd during his fathers life time, now
became very Grave and Sober, Banishing from

V. Court all his former Graceless Companions, as soon
 as he was Crowned by *Thomas Arundel*, Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* at *Westminster*; yet, over him, as they had done over his father, the Clergy got a great Ascendent, and (because he should not be at leisure to enquire into their Irregularities and Abuses) they put him upon the Renewing the Antient Claim to the Crown of *France*; for in a Parliament holden at *Leicester*, it had been laid to their Charge, that Religious Houses were ill managed, and Instead of Promoting Godly Lives, had been Nurseries of Gluttony, Idleness, Pride, and Uncleanneſs; and that if they were suppressed they would yield to his Treasury the Annual Rent of 30000*l.* which would maintain 15 Earls, 1500 Knights, and 6000 Men at Arms; besides Alms Houses for the Relief of the Poor that were now Chargeable to the Kingdom; and for fear he should encline to this, *Arundel*, in the Name of the rest of the Clergy, offered a large Summ of Money for the carrying on the War against *France*.

The King being in his youthful blood naturally of a haughty Courage, soon closed with this proffer, and the *French* King refusing to redeliver *Aquitaine* and *Normandy* and *Anjou*, and his Daughter the Lady *Katharine*, whom King *Henry* required in Marriage, a Cruel War Ensued, tho' a Conspiracy by such were bribed with the *French* Kings Gold, was laid to take his Life e'er he should pass the Seas with his Army; but this being timely discovered, *Richard* Earl of *Cambridge*, *Henry* Lord *Scroop*, and Sir *Thomas Grey*, were Executed for Conspiring his Death, after which he Landed with his Army in *Normandy*, taking many strong Towns, and passing over land toward *Calis*, to winter there, the *French* opposing him by the way near *Agincourt* with a mighty Army, and having allotted Portions of the spoils before-hand amongst themselves, he gave them Battle with a small Power, and such a terrible overthrow

The King
 was the
 first to
 Crown
 of France.

The Battle
 of Agin-
 court

throu

throw, that the like had never happened in France ^{K 11}
till that Day ; for all the flower of the French Nobility were either slain or taken Prisoners, viz. Charles, Lord Delabreth, Constable of France, Jacques, Lord Dampier, High Admiral, John Duke of Alençon, Anthony, Duke of Brabant, Edward, Duke of Barr, the Earls Aumarle, Vaudemont, Beaumont, Grand-Pree, Fulconbridg, Foux, Lastrake, and 25 Lords, with 8000 Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen, and about 20000 of lower degree were slain, the Dukes of Orleans, Bourbon, with the Lords Croy, Roy, Harcourt, Humiers, Fosseux, Dovart, Noall, Bouquart, and others were taken Prisoners; but on the Part of the English none were slain of Note, but Edward, Duke of York, and the Earl of Worcester.

Soon after this Battel, King Henry subdued all Normandy, and Leaguings with Philip, Duke of Burgundy, whose father the Dauphin of France had Treacherously slain, he brought the French to such a streight, by taking a great Number of strong Places, and laying all wast before him with Fire and Sword, that Charles the French King, found himself under an Indispensible necessity to treat of an Accommodation ; So that an Interview being had on this occasion between the two Kings, it was Agreed the Crown of France and all its dependencies, after the Death of King Charles and his Queen, should remain to King Henry and his Heirs for ever, whereupon he Married the Lady Katharine, and so the Salique Law of France was at this time made void, and hereupon Peace was Proclaimed between both Kingdoms, tho' Charles the Dauphin would not accord to it but held out, as will further appear in this Reign, but at present pursuing my method, I turned aside to see what happened in Church Affairs, and what Mad Pranks the Clergy played during this Success of King Henry Abroad,

K Hen. V.

A Contrivance of the Clergy against Sir J. Oldcastle.

12 Bishops Accuse the Lord Cobham to the King.

And here I find Arch-Bishop *Arundel*, still breathing slaughter against those that Worshiped God in Sincerity and Truth, for holding the Feasts of St. *George*, and St. *Dunstan* in St. *Paul's Church*, in an Universal Synod of all the Bishops of *England*, they there Consulted the destruction of Sir *John Oldcastle*, commonly called Lord *Cobham*, who was a Zealous Asserter of *Wickliffe's Doctrine*, a Man very Learned and a Famous Warriour, who had done both this King and his Father many signal Services, but all Availed nothing in the end against the Malice of the Pope and his Clergy; for being charged to Encourage those to Preach whom the Bishops had Prohibited, holding and teaching Opinions of the Sacraments, of Images, Pilgrimages, Keys, and Church of *Rome*, contrary and repugnant to the received Determination of the *Romish Church*, &c. These Bishops called to their Assistance twelve Inquisitors of Heresies, whom the year before they had appointed at *Oxford*; These Men brought with them *Wickliffe's Books*, to the Number of 200 and 46 Conclusions, which they had Collected as Heresies out of them, whereupon they Issued out process against the Lord *Cobham*, Stiling him a Pestilent Heretick, and going to the King at *Kingston*, made grievous Complaints against him, but the King calling to mind his Good Services and Integrity, required them in consideration of his Noble Stock, that they would deal favourably with him, and if possible, without any Violence Endeavour to bring him over to the Church of *Rome*, and that himself in the mean while would Commune with him about this matter.

Tho' this was beside the Expectation of the Bishops, and little pleased those Men of blood, yet they seemingly consented to it, and the King accordingly sent for and Admonished *Cobham* to submit himself, and to be an Obedient Son to the Mother Church; whereto he Meekly replied, That he would

would be always Faithful and Obedient to him as a ^{K Hen. V.} Christian King, deriving his Power from God, but as touching the Pope and his Spirituality, he owed him no Obedience, for as much as he knew him by the Word of God to be Anti-Christ, the Son of Perdition, the open Adversary of God, and the Abomination spoken of standing in the Holy Place. This Speech of his so much displeased the King, that he flung away, and from that time left him to the Mercyleys handling of the Clergy ; whereupon the Arch-Bishop cited him to appear, and Answer to such Articles as should be objected against him ; but the Summoner coming to his Castle of Cowling, grew faint hearted, and durst not enter to deliver the Citation ; whereupon it was stuck upon the Gate of the Cathedral Church at Rochester, and so they proceeded to Excommunicate him; whereupon he wrote an Account of his Faith, containing several Articles of his belief Consonant to the Word of God, wherein he Answered four of the chief Articles laid against him ; which Writing he signed with his Name as containing nothing, but the Articles in the Apostles Creed, which all Christians believed, or ought to believe, and went with this Writing to the King ; but he refused to receive it, or hear it read, Commanding him to deliver it to those who were to be his Judges. Hereupon he desired that a hundred Knights and Esquires, might be admitted as his Compurgators, who he doubted not would acquit him of Heresie, bravely offering himself, according to the Law of Arms, *To fight for his Life against any Man, Christian, or Heathen, in the Quarrel of his Faith and the Religion he held, the King and the Lords of his Council Excepted ;* With all Gentleness, Protesting nevertheless, he would refuse no manner of Correction, that according to the Law of God should be Inflicted on him, but that he would at all times with all meekness suffer and undergo it ; but however, the King declining his Protection,

*The Lord
Cobham,
Excommu-
nicated.*

K. Hen. V.

*The Lord
Cobham,
Sentenced
as a Here-
tick and
Escapes.*

*He suffers
Martyr-
dom.*

*Sir Roger
Acton, and
others un-
justly put to
Death.*

rection, he was Summoned and Examined Divers times, and tho' his Answers were reasonable and sufficient, confuting all that was objected against him by Scripture, and the Opinions of the Fathers of the Primitive Church, he was Sentenced as a Heretick, and a Professor of Erroneous and Damnable Doctrines, he at that time Praying for his Enemies, giving them Good and Sober Advice to amend their Lives, and be more sparing in shedding Innocent blood. However being committed to the *Tower* in order to Execution, he made his Escape into *Wales*, where he continued about the space of four years, but great rewards being offered to apprehend him, the Lord *Powis* betrayed him, and brought him bound to *London*, where being presented before the Lords in Parliament, he was sentenced as a Traytor to the King, being Excommunicated, and out-Lawed, to go to the *Tower*, and thence be drawn through *London* to the *Gallows* in *St. Giles's Fields*, and there to be hanged, and burned hanging, which Sentence was Executed in the most cruel manner, a Chain being fastened round his Neck with a Collar of Iron, an other about his middle, and a third under his Hams, which being fastened to the *Gallows*, the fire was kindled under his back; and so he was consumed to Ashes, Praying and Praising God in the height of the fire: His Prosecutors giving out that he suffered for Treason on Attaindure, but the true Cause was his Religion, nothing more being proved against him.

Between the time of Lord *Cobham's* first Imprisonment and his last, being apprehended and put to Death, Sir *Roger Acton*, *John Brown*, and *John Beverley* a Preacher, Assembling with many more in *St. Giles's Fields*, to Preach and hear the Word of God, some Men in Arms were sent to apprehend them, and it being falsely laid to their Charge because they met in the Night time to avoid Persecution

tion, that they intended to make Insurrection
 and Raife Rebellion against the King, tho' they ut-
 ly Protested the contrary, averring they were his
 Leige Subjects, and ready to lay down their
 lives in his defence, nevertheless they were Con-
 demned as Traytors, and the three above-named,
 with about 36 more, were hanged, and fire being
 put under them burnt hanging, as some Authors
 say; others affirm they were only hanged. But
 the cruel Arch-Bishop, the chief Instrument in
 their destruction, did not long out-live this Trage-
 dy, for they being put to Death in *January, Anno.*
14. He dyed the *February* following, and was
 succeeded in that See by *Henry Chicheley*, who sat as
 Arch-Bishop 25 years, little Inferiour in cruelty to
 the Professors of the Gospel, than the former.

During this Persecution in *England*, the *Bohemi- Persecuti-*
 on in *Bo-*
hemia.
 among whom *Wickliffe's* Doctrine spread, as I
 have said, had their share in tasting the Popish cru-
 elty; for Cardinal *Colonna* Excommunicated *John*
Huss, the first Preacher of this Doctrine in *Bohemia*,
 and the Procurators who defended his Appeal to
 the Pope, were Cast in Prison for Insisting on it;
 and the *Bohemians* mostly sided with *Huss* against
 the Pope, as detesting his Tyranny, yet the Prelates
 strictly Prohibited his Doctrine, decreeing in a
 Council held for that Purpose, that all Doctors and
 Masters of the University of *Prague*, should be As-
 sembled in the Court of the Arch-Bishop, and in
 his presence swear not to hold, or maintain any of
 the 45 Articles of *John Wickliffe*; so often Con-
 demned at *Rome* and Elsewhere; and then drew
 up several Articles against *John Huss*; and whilst
John Objected, and the other Answered the Articles,
Alfonsus, King of *Naples*, warring on the Popes
 territories, Pope *John*, Incited all Princes to Arm
 against him, and gave by Indulgences full Remission
 of sins to such as would take up Arms to defend
 the Church, but these Indulgences coming to *Prague*,
 the

K. Hen. V. the common People scoffed at them, Calling the Pope *Anti-Christ*, for which 3 were taken and cast in Prison; whereupon the Citizens rise in Arms Tumultuously demanding of the Magistrates have them delivered from their Captivity; but notwithstanding they had fair promises to pacify them the three Men were secretly Beheaded in Prison and their bodies given to their Friends in order to a decent Interment, at whose Funeral solemnized several Priests, who favoured them, Sung, *These are Saints, who for the Testimony of God laid down their Lives, &c.* And *John Huss*, Preached their Funeral Sermon, giving Praise to God, *That he had bid the way of Truth from the Prudent of this World, and revealed it to the simple and lowly in heart*; And for this and other his Preaching, he was Banished by decree of the Clergy, Confirmed by the King against which decree he Published many Objections, shewing the unreasonableness and unlawfulness of its being Exhibited against him; and during these Passages, Pope *John* Assembled a Council at *Rome*, in which when the Mass began to Implode directions and guidance in their Proceedings against Hereticks, a Huge Owl appeared, and fell a Howling in a strange manner, and tho' many things were thrown to drive her away, she there continued till with Cudgels she was killed, which so startled the Pope, that concluding it an Ill Omen, he dissolved the Council.

John Huss, Banished.

An owl in the Popes Council.

The Pope Accused of Murder, &c.

During this Popes sitting at *Rome*, there were other Popes that contended with him, so that Schism continued 29 Years, which made *Sigismund* the Emperour, call a Council at *Constance*, to decide the Controversie, in which Pope *John* resigned the Papacy, but soon repenting of it, and endeavouring to fly into *Italy* in order to raise new troubles, he was taken and cast in Prison, and in this Council about 40 Heinous Crimes were laid to his Charge, chief of which were, that he had hired *Marcellus* *Parmensis*

menfis a Physician, to poison Pope *Alexander* his *K. Hen V.*
 decessour, and that he was an Adulterer, an
 erick and a Necromancer. In this Council like-
 it was decreed, that the Pope's withdrawing
 self could be no hindrance to their Proceedings,
 which shews a General Council may act without
 the Pope. And the Emperour being mostly pre-
 so well managed Matters that many profita-
 things for the good of the Church were de-
 ed, and the Cardinals, &c. going into the Con-
 ve, Elected a new Pope, who took the Name of
martin, because he was Elected on *St. Martin's*
 e, and was brought to receive his Triple Crown
 great Pomp, from the high Church of *Constance*,
 the Monastery of *St. Austin*, the Emperour be-
 on Foot, and leading his Horse by the Bridle
 the Right-hand, as the Marquess Electour of
andenburgh did on the Left, so that he who a
 le before was but a beggarly Priest, had now
 e greatest Princes of the Empire to wait on him,
 and having taken a round in the Monastery, he
 turned in like Pomp to the Church of *Constance*,
 here he was crowned with all Magnificence, the
 Emperour giving him good Advice, to reform what
 as amiss in the Church, and not to begin at the
 erior Clergy, but at the Head, that their Re-
 lar Lives might stand an Example to those of
 ver Degree; whereupon the Pope absolving, all
 resent at the Council of *Constance* of their Sins
 y broke up. And if what Historians say be
 ue, it was no more than needful, for they tell
 there were attending on the Clergy that sat
 ere, no less than 450 Concubines.

To appear at this Council *John Huss* was sent
 by the Emperour *Sigismund*, under his Letters
 safe Conduct, that he might clear himself of the
 opuration of Heresie and other Matters laid to
 Charge; so that in a little time, relying on the
 Emperour as his Patron and Protector, he was pre-
 sented

*The Empe-
 rour's Ad-
 vice to the
 Pope.*

K. Hen. V. sented before the Council and Pope *Martin*, who notwithstanding he answered all their malicious Objections and Accusations, and had many good Persons who sided with him, and testified his Innocency and Integrity of Life, he was contrary to the Mind of the Emperour, imprisoned without being allowed Bail, though the Emperour and Princes of *Bohemia* laboured all they could to free him, the Council passed Sentence against him as a Heretick, also against all his Writings; which highly offended *Sigismund*, that his Letters of Conduct should be disregarded by them: His Enemies thereupon hurried him to the Flames, where he prayed for them, and made a pious Speech to them in these words.

John Huss
Imprisoned
and Con-
demned.

Good People, these Lords and Bishops do exhort and counsel me here to confess I have erred; which because I have done I would not refuse to confess it, and take shame to my self; but being in the sight of God, and knowing my self innocent of what has been laid to my Charge, I can by no means do what they require of me, though to the saving of my Life. I have always preached, taught and written according to the revealed Word of God, and if I recant, with what Face can I behold the Heavens, or look upon those whom I have instructed in the ways of Truth? What Doubts and Scruples must I leave upon their Souls? No, I will rather suffer Death than do it, and for their Health and Salvation. I here lay down my Life, and seal the Truth of the Doctrine I have taught with my Blood.

His Books
burnt.

And when he saw his Books burned, he smiled at the Malice of his Enemies, declaring his Innocency to the People, and exhorting them to steadfast Faith in Christ, and a Constancy and patience in suffering for his Name sake. if they were called to it; and being come to the Place where he was to suffer, which was before the Gate of *Gothian*, he fell on his Knees, and lifting his Eyes towards Heaven, prayed, singing also certain Psalms.

with a chearful Countenance and merry Voice, ^{R. Rich. V.}
 and then said. *Into thy Hands, O Lord, I commend
 my Spirit, &c.* While he was at Prayers, a Cap
 lined with Devils they had put on his Head, fell
 off, which one of the Soldiers putting on again,
 said, *He should burn with his Masters, the Devils
 whom he had served;* and when he was bound with
 cords to the Stake, and a Chain fastened under
 his Chin, Lodwick Duke of Bavaria earnestly de-
 sired him to recant of his Errours, and yet be mind-
 full of his Safety; to whom he meekly replied,

*What Errors, most Noble Prince, shall I renounce, when- His Mar-
 I know not my self guilty of any; for as for those things tyrdom.
 which are falsly alledged against me, I am well satis-
 fied I never so much as thought of them. I indeed
 taught all men Repentance and Remission of Sins, ac-
 cording as Christ commanded in his Gospel, and my
 doctrine in all things has been blameless; wherefore
 with a chearful Mind and Courage I am here ready and
 willing to suffer Death.* Then was the Fire kindled
 and he sung with a loud Voice, *Jesus Christ the Son
 of the Living God have mercy on me;* but in a
 while, as if God had so ordered it to put him out
 of his Misery, the Wind blowing the Smoke full
 of his Face he was choaked, and in a little time
 consumed to Ashes, which were cast into the
 fire.

A little before his Death this blessed Martyr <sup>A true
 Prophecy.</sup>
 prophesied, *That out of the Ashes of a Goose, for so
 his Name signifies in the Bohemian Language, A
 man should arise whose sweet Singing, neither the
 Pope nor all his Clergy should be able to silence, and
 this was verified in Martin Luther.*

At the Death of this Man abundance of Tears
 were shed, and the Emperour was so much distur-
 bed at it, that in his Letters he excused himself of
 giving any hand in the Innocent Blood of so Just a
 man, much blaming the Cruelty and unjust Deal-
 ings of the Pope and his Bishops, declaring the ear-
 nest

K. Hen. V. next Endeavours he used to have saved and rescued him out of their bloody Hands.

**Jerom of
Prague
Martyr.**

These blood-thirsty Men making this beginning in *Bohemia*, and finding it rather encreased than lessened, the spreading of the Gospel-truths, resolved not to give over, so that next they fell on *Jerom of Prague*, who had been a Fellow-laborer in Christ's Vineyard with *John Huss*, cited him to appear before the Council of *Constance* in 15 Days; but when he desired Letters of safe Conduct the Emperour declined to grant them, because his Honour had so much suffered by the Pope and his Clergy's Violation of the law, whereupon *Jerom* writ often in the Defence of the Doctrine he preached, and the Reasons why he did not appear pursuant to the Citation, he being a learned Man, and Master of Arts in the Universities of *Paris*, *Cologne* and *Prague*. But this did not satisfy them; for having notice that he was at a certain Village near *Constance*, belonging to the Emperour; Duke *John*, whom some Histories count the Son of Pope *Clement*, was sent to apprehend him, who bound him with Cords, brought him to *Constance* and Imprisoned him in the Castle of the Friars Minors; whereupon he was successively accused to the Pope and his Clergy, by one *Gerson* and others, of Erroneous Conclusions and Heretical Doctrines; but being sent from that Place to the Tower in that City he was loaded with Irons, Hands, Neck and Legs, and put in a pair of Stocks very high, so that his Head hung downwards, and almost famished to Death: So that attempted to visit and relieve him being imprisoned, whereupon falling grievously sick, he took the Opportunity to thrust a Confessour upon him, who with Threats of worse Tortures at the fiery Trial, together with others, prevailed with him to subscribe a forced Recantation or Jurisdiction of his Doctrine, and close with the Church

Rome; yet they kept him in close Prison, and charged new Articles against him; whereupon perceiving they dealt treacherously with him, and distressed for his Blood, he renounced his Abjuration as extorted unduly from him in his Tortures and Sickness, defending again the Doctrine of Wickliff and Huss, confounding his Adversaries with Sequence and Truth, baffling all their Accusations, &c.

This so enraged the Council that they resolved no longer to spare him, but proceeded to pass Sentence on him as a pestilent Heretick; and one who had taught, maintained and preached the Doctrine and Tenents of Wickliff and Huss, Men of Damnable Memory, &c.

Upon this Sentence passing against him, he cited the Pope and his Clergy who had so unjustly and cruelly dealt with him, *To appear and answer the shedding his Innocent Blood at the Tribunal of the Righteous Judge of all the Earth, to whom in his Integrity he appealed.* And soon after a Paper was brought him painted with red Devils, which he patiently took and putting it on his Head, said, *When our Lord Jesus Christ suffered for me, a wretched Sinner, he disdaineth not to wear a Crown of Thorns; and I for his sake I will willingly wear this bedeviled Mitre;* and being degraded and delivered to the Secular Power, he went joyfully to his Marchion, praying and singing Psalms; then being stripped naked and bound to the Stake, which was carved in the Likeness of John Huss, he said to the people, *Dearly beloved Children, as I have sung praises to one Glorious and Invisible God, so do I trust and believe in him and no other, and on this behalf I build my Faith, notwithstanding I now die for this Righteous Cause, by reason I would not consent to agree to the Council, and with them affirm and hold that Mr. John Huss was by them justly and lawfully condemned and put to Death, for I was very well assured*

R. Hen. V. *assured of the contrary, and that he was a true Preacher of the Gospel of Jesus Christ.*

Jerom
burnt to
Ashes.

After this the Fire being kindled he sung with a loud Voice, *Into thy Hands, O Lord, I commend my Spirit: And when the Fire raged about him he cried, O Lord God, Father Almighty, have mercy on me, and be merciful to mine Offences, for thou knowest how sincerely I have loved the Truth, and gave up the Ghost, to receive a Glorious Crown as the Reward for his Patience and Constancy, suffering for the Testimony of Christ Jesus: But this not sufficing the Malice of his Adversaries, they brought his Bedding, Garments, Books, and all that belonged to him, consuming them in the Fire, and casting all the Ashes into the Rhine, yet the Nobles of Bohemia writ to the Council of Constantinople in Defence of him, and of John Huss, declaring their Integrity and Innocency.*

Ziska
a
Scourge to
the Romish
Church.

Not long after these good Men with others had been cruelly Martyred, God was pleased to raise up an Avenger of the Innocent, *viz. Ziska* a Nobleman of Bohemia, brought up in the Court, who had been in many Battels, and fighting victoriously for his Prince lost one of his Eyes; This Man offended at the Pope's Cruelty to Huss and Jerom, resolved to try whether those of the Church of Rome were as good at fighting and suffering as they were at Tyrannizing over and Murthering Men in Blood: Whereupon getting together a Company of his Friends, and such as affected the Doctrine of Huss, he destroyed a great Number of Monasteries and other Religious Houses, turning out Monks and Friars to wander in the Fields, and such as resisted he caused to be cut cross their foreheads Crowns, whereby he became in a while terrible to them, that the Pope's Clergy trembled at the Mention of his Name, every where flying before him: And this made it appear that those who were so prodigal in shedding the Blood

others were mighty tender of their own; so that ^{K. Hen. V.} he routed them quite out of *Bohemia*, and settled *Hus's* Doctrine among the People, which was embraced with much Zeal and Affection, and has increased ever since, notwithstanding the many cruel persecutions that have happened in that Country. As for *Zisca*, he ruled all *Bohemia* at his Pleasure, having gotten the chief Cities and Fortresses into his Hands; so that the Emperour suing to him for Reconciliation promised him great Rewards; upon which *Zisca* going to meet him fell sick by the way, ordering his Friends when he died To make a Drum-head of his Skin, the sound of which would make their Enemies fly, and Rome tremble, styling himself an Enemy to all wicked and corrupt Priests, but with a Godly Zeal, and so at this time he died.

The Death of *Zisca* was acceptable News to ^{*Zisca's*} *Pope Martin* and his Cardinals, who now shaking ^{Death.} off Fear, boldly sent his Bulls abroad (which during *Zisca's* Government durst not so much as peep into *Bohemia*) against all that held the New Heresie, as he falsely stiled it, Excommunicating and damning them by Bell, Book and Candle; yet, though divers were martyred, as in another Place has been said, their Blood proved the fruitful Seed of Christ's Church, and brought in a plentiful harvest.

For pursuant to this Hellish Bull, Inquisitors were sent into all Parts; who brought many Godly People to Imprisonment, Torture and Death by false accusations and crafty Snares laid to intrap them, so that few returned again to England.

Chicheley, as I have before said, succeeding *Thomas Arundel* in the See of *Canterbury*, followed his steps, bringing many good Men into trouble for pretended Heresie. The first he fell on after the *Claydon* and *Cobham*, and the *St. Giles's Men*, was one ^{and Tur-} *Richard Tur-* ^{ming Mar-} *Claydon* a Currier of *London*, and *Richard Tur-* ^{tyrs.} *ming*.

K. Hen. V.

ming. *Claydon* being apprehended by the Lord Mayor on Suspicion of Heresie, was convened before the Archbishop in *St. Paul's Church*. It was objected against him, that in the City of *London* and other Places within the Province of *Canterbury*, he had been suspected as a Heretick by many good Men, and had once upon being imprisoned abjured before *Robert Braybrook* Bishop of *London*, which he denied not; then was he charged with having several Heretical Books by him which he read and approved, and also for keeping company with *Baker*, reputed a Heretick; this he likewise denied not; however for these Crimes, as they called them, they adjudged him a Heretick, and sentenced him accordingly, and being committed to the Secular Power, he was unjustly and unlawfully burned to Ashes in *Smithfield*, patiently and religiously resigning his Soul into the Hands of God. For such like Objections, *Fabian* and other Historians tells us, that *Richard Turming*, a Baker, was also sentenced and burned with him, and a strict Command was given to the Inquisitors, that twice every Year at least they should make enquiry after Persons suspected of Heresie, and open Professors of it, that they might be brought to Punishment.

John Barton
persecuted.

During this Convocation, Anno 1416. two Priests were brought before the Bishops, as noted and famed for Heresie; viz. *John Barton*, against whom it was objected by *Philip*, Bishop of *Lincoln*, that he had been excommunicated about six or seven Years before, and would not appear, though often cited, nor seek Reconciliation to the Church whereupon he was imprisoned till further Order.

Robert
Chapell
persecuted.

The other was *Robert Chapell*, otherwise *Hutch*, some time Chaplain to the Lord *Cobham*, who I have told you was cruelly put to Death: he was charged, that being under Excommunication about three or four Years past, yet in Contempt to the Catholick Church did continue to say Mass.

and Preaching; not seeking to be reconciled, this *K. Hen. V.*
 denied, saying, He did not know of any such
 communication, whereupon the Copy of it was
 produced and read to him; but at length submit-
 ting and abjuring, he had his Penance allotted him
 to make his Recantation of several Articles pub-
 licly in *St. Paul's Church*, and this Favour was
 procured him by the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, or else it
 had gone far worse with him, though nothing ma-
 terial was proved against him. About this time
 many others being persecuted, and fearing to en-
 counter the fiery Trial, deserted cowardly, abju-
 ring their Righteous Cause. But to return to the
 conclusion of the Historical Part.

The Dauphin of *France*, Son to King *Charles*,
 would by no means agree to give up his Right to
 the Kingdom of *France*, after the Decease of his Father and
 Mother, and being appealed with his Accomplices
 by the Dutcheſs Dowager of *Burgundy*, for the
 murder of her Husband, and summoned on a set
 day to appear at the Marble Table in *Paris*, up-
 on refusing to do it, he was disinherited and pro-
 claimed a Traitor to the Crown of *France*, at the
 instance of the Queen his Mother, who mortally
 hated him, by reason he had privily seized and ta-
 ken away all her Jewels and Treasure to support
 himself and his Followers; hereupon King *Henry*
 was appointed Regent and Protector of *France*;
 and because the Dauphin endeavoured to make
 himself Master of some strong Places, King *Henry*
 with an Army pursued him so close, that his Fol-
 lowers mostly deserted him, when being left in a
 manner alone he went privately into *Languedoc*,
 to his constant Friend the Earl of *Armaignac* who
 supply'd his Necessities.

*The Dau-
 phin dis-
 inherited.*

And now King *Henry*, having settled the Affairs
 of *France*, returned to *England* with his Queen,
 where they were joyfully received, and she soon
 after crowned at *Westminster*. In the mean while

K. Hen. V. Fortune that had hitherto sided with him, began somewhat to decline his Interest in *France*, for having constituted his Brother the Duke of *Clarence* Lieutenant there, the *Dauphin* sent the young Duke of *Alençon* with a considerable Army to take in such Places as he could; and the Duke of *Clarence*, being deceived in their Number by *André Forgusa*, a treacherous *Lumbard*, advancing to oppose them with a small Power, was drawn into an Ambush of five to one, and slain fighting valiantly and with him the Earl of *Tankerville*, the Lord *Ross*, or *Gilbert Umpbrevile*, with 2000 of less Note, and the Earls of *Suffolk*, *Somerset* and *Perth*, the Lord *Fitz-walter*, and others taken Prisoners. But Sir *Thomas Bantfort*, hastening with a Band of Archers, the *French* much wasted in this Battle, fearing to try another, fled with their Prisoners and Spoil, leaving the *English* to bury the dead Bodies of their Friends.

The English
slain and
the Duke
of Cla-
rence
slain.

The News of this Defeat no sooner reached the King's Ear, but it filled him with Princely Resolutions to revenge it; so that assembling a Parliament, the Clergy gave him two fifteenths, and the Temporality one; and of the Rich Bishop of *Winchester*, as he was termed in those Days, he borrowed 10000 *l.* and with this Aid sent over an Army of 24000 Men, who joined the Duke of *Burgundy's* 4000 Horse, and soon drove the *Dauphin* out of all the Places he had gained during his Absence, marching every where without Opposition.

The Queen
delivered
of a Prince.
A True
Presage of
the King's

During the King's being this time in *France*, the Queen was brought to bed of a Son at *Windsores* Castle, though the King had charged her not to lie in there, upon a Prophecy that a Prince Born there should be unfortunate, and when he had notice of it, he Prophetically said, *I Henry of Monmouth shall have but a short Reign and win much but Henry of Windsor shall have a long Reign, and lose all.*

The King by this Time having reduced the K. Hen. V
lands of *France*, and most of the other Provinces
to their Obedience, over-heated with Travelling,
fell Sick, and perceiving his End draw nigh, he
appointed the Duke of *Bedford*, Regent of *France*,
and Lieutenant-General of *Normandy*, also his o-
ther Brother *Humphrey*, Duke of *Gloucester*, Re-
gent of *England*, and Protector of his Son's Person,
that he should become of fit Age to govern, exhor-
ting them to hold strict Amity with the Duke of
Burgundy, and not to release the Duke of *Orleans*
from his Confinement in *England*; and soon after
his Death conquered this Great Conquerour, who King Hen-
ry dies.
made all *France* tremble at his Power. He dying
the 31st of *August*, Anno 1422, at *Bois le Vince-*
nt, in the 30th Year of his Age, when he had
reigned nine Years, five Months, and ten Days,
and his Body being brought into *England*, was bu-
ried at *Westminster* with Great Pomp and Solem-
nity. He had been in all things a most Renown-
ed King, had he not too much Favoured the
Cruelty of the Clergy.

R. Hen. V.

The Archbishops of Canterbury in this fifth Conclusion were ;

Simon Islip,	William Courtney,
Simon Langham,	Thomas Arundel,
William Wincbelsea,	And
Simon Sudbury,	Henry Chicheley.

THE
Sixth Book,
OR
SECTION,
Pertaining to the last
Three Centuries.

HENRY the Sixth King of Eng-
land, &c.

KING Henry the Fifth dying in France, Hen-
ry his only Son an Infant under the Age
of one Year Succeeded him, Anno 1422. Henry the
Sixth, Crowned in
at the Age of Eight Years was Crowned at
Westminster, and two Years after at Paris in France,
England
Charles the Sixth being Dead, which was to
and
pose the Dauphin, who had procured himself to France.
Crowned and Stiled Charles the Seventh, and
on many places of considerable strength; Inso-
much that the Parisians, tho' they had taken an
Oath

K Hen. VI.

Oath of Fidelity and Obedience to King Henry
 privately Solicited him to hast with his Army and
 take possession of that City, which they were wa-
 ling to put into his hands: But the Duke of Be-
 ford, Regent of *France*, as he was Celebrating
 Nuptials with *Anne*, Sister to the Duke of Be-
 gundy, having notice of this Intended revolt, came
 upon them by swift Marches, and Entering the Ci-
 ty, caused the chief of the Conspirators to be Pu-
 blickly Executed, placing a strong Garrison to over-
 Awe and keep the rest in their Obedience to King
 Henry, Regaining by main force Divers Towns
 that had revolted to the *Dauphin*, Chasing him
 from place to place, but without being capable
 Engaging him to a Battle, for as the Regent Ap-
 proached with his Army he still fled before him,
 tho' the Duke of *Britanie* and his Brother, had re-
 volted from the *English* and Closed with his In-
 rest, and the latter Besieging *Bayonne* with 4000
 Men, the small Garrison of 600, Issuing out, at-
 tacking St. George and *Salisbury*, they fearing the
 Earl of *Salisbury* had entered on the other side with
 an Army, fled, and left their Tents, Ammunition and
 Provision to this handful of *English*; Nay, so
 the Terror wrought upon them, that hastily pass-
 ing a River, tho' not pursued, a great Number
 of them were drowned.

The Bishop
 of Win-
 chester,
 Quarrels
 with the
 Protector.

The King, as I said, being in his Minority, the
 Clergy of *England* bore themselves much upon
 and especially the Bishop of *Winchester*, Uncle
 the Protector of *England*, and Regent of *France*
 who greatly Repining that he had not been ap-
 pointed Governour of the young King's Person
 Laboured with the other Clergy what in him
 to Cross the purposes and good Intendments of the
 Duke of *Gloucester*, using his utmost skill to displease
 him, because being of a Mild and Merciful dispo-
 sition, he was not inclin'd to consent to the Per-
 secution the Arch Bishop, this Bishop and others
 Laboured

laboured to continue against the *Gaspellers*, as they
 now Stiled them in Derision: And this had come to
 open rupture to the disturbing the whole King-
 dom, had not *John Duke of Bedford*, Regent of
 France, upon the first notice of it come over and
 conciled them, in a Parliament called for that
 purpose; Nevertheless when he saw a fit opportu-
 nity the Bishop of *Winchester*, Prosecuting his Ma-
 liciousness to Perplex the Protector, Procured the
 Countess, his Virtuous Lady, to be accused of Sor-
 cery and Witchcraft, in holding Correspondency
 with Witches to take away the Kings Life; and
 most believed there was nothing at all in it, the
 Bishop, whom the Pope had also made a Cardinal,
 the better to carry on his Interest in *England*, pro-
 ceeded without the Kings Warrant, or Consent
 to do Publick Penance twice in the City of *London*;
 and to be Sentenced to perpetual Imprisonment:
 and the better to Colour this Malitious proceed-
 ing, several who were pretended her Confederates
 in Witchcraft, were Sentenced to Death and were
 executed, and in Process of time the Good Duke be-
 came Imprisoned in the *Tower* on slender pretences,
 and was there smothered to Death between two sea-
 soned Beds.

*The Dut-
 chess of
 Glouce-
 ster, false-
 ly Accused
 and Impri-
 soned dur-
 ing Life.*

Whilst these things were in agitation, the Clergy
 went on railing against, and Persecuting the Prea-
 chers and Professors of the Gospel; and the first they
 began with was *William Taylor*, a Priest, who had
 been Persecuted by *Arundel* and Escaped, was again
 apprehended by the Bishop of *Worcester*, and caused
 to appear before the Convocation of Bishops,
 where it was objected against him that he had
 taught at *Bristol* the following Articles, viz.

*William
 Taylor
 Persecuted.*

*That whosoever hangeth any Scripture about his
 neck, taketh away the Honour only due unto God and
 giveth it to the Devil.*

That

K. Hen. VI.

That no Human Person is to be Worshipped, but Divine Worship is only to be Payed to God.

That Saints are not to be Worshipped, or Invoked.

Upon these was grounded his second Accusation tho' he had been absolved before for it; and upon putting in sufficient security was to have been discharged, but they now adding, *During his Imprisonment in the Custody of the Bishop of Worcester* he had writ again to the same purpose in Correspondency held with one *Thomas Smith* of *Bristol* a Friest, and he not denying his hand, the Writing was referred by the Arch Bishop to the four orders of *Fryers* in *London* to Examine, who gave it in *Heresie* and *Damnable Doctrine* opposite to that taught in the *Catholick Church*; for these *Fryers* and *Monks*, always fighting for their Altars (that is their Bellies) when any thing was referred to them never gave any other Opinion of it than what their Interest Dictated, concluding (as they had for Reason) if Error and Superstition fell to the ground, they must with that *Dagon* also fall before the Divine Truth revealed in the Word of God; and tho' this Good Man yielded in his Conclusion and Answers, as near to what was held and taught by the Church of *Rome*, as his Conscience would permit him, allowing, *That Moses when he Introduced God for the Israelites, remembered him of the Merits of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, tho' Dead, Quoting St. Austin* and other fathers, who allow there was a Venerable Esteem to be had of the Memory of Saints departed, but not to Worship them; it all availed him nothing, for he was Condemned for denying Saint-Worship, the *Fryers* averring the Points to be Heretical, viz.

That Prayer is to be directed to God alone.

That to Pray to any Creature is to Commit Idolatry.

And further to Aggravate the matter, and render the thing more plausible, they alledged that had absolutely opposed the Worshipping of Saint

Decreed and held in the Church of Rome, by ^{K. Hen. VI.} erring in his Writings, That every Petition or Prayer for some supernatural or free gift, is to be put up directed to God Alone, and not to any Creature; which does so expressly agree with the Word of God, that nothing is more pressed in Scripture, yet these Malitious Ignorants charged this as a mighty crime, and being degraded for the same, he un-^{He suffers}derwent the fiery Tryal with much Con-^{Martyr-}fidence and Meekness, commending his departing ^{dom.} soul into the more favourable hands of his Merciful Redeemer.

The next they fell upon was one John Florence, John Flo-
Turner of Shelton in the Diocess of Norwich, ^{Persecuted.} whom they charged to have taught Heresies and damnable Doctrine, putting the same in Writing, viz.

That the Pope and his Cardinals, have no Power to constitute or make any Laws.

That there is no day necessary to be kept Holy, but only the Lords Day.

That Men ought to fast no other time but in Lent.

That Images are not to be Worshipped, nor is it necessary for People to set up Tapers Lighted before them on their Days, nor go on Pilgrimage, or offer for the Dead.

That such as swear shall be Damned, unless they keep.

That Curates should not take Tythes, such Tythes being proper to be distributed to the Poor of the Parish wherein they were gathered.

This last Tenent was enough to procure him the will of the Clergy indeed, and he was accordingly enjoined a severe Penance, in two publick Processions carrying a lighted Taper in his hand of a pound weight, Naked before the Cross, for putting the Priests in mind of losing the Lands, which they followed more than Religion.

Hen. VI. *Richard Belward* of *Erfam* in the Diocese of *Norwich*, was in this Reign Accused for holding a teaching Divers Errors, and Damnable Opinion contrary to the Doctrine of the Church of Rome.

Richard Belward,
Persecuted,

viz.
That if the Clergy Excommunicated any Person, God on their Repentance, if they had sined to occasion it, would Absolve them in spite of the Bishops.

*That the Lord Cobham was a true Christian wrongfully put to Death; And others of the kind were objected against him, but bringing several Neighbours to testify he was an Honest, Ignorant Poor Man, and denying what was laid to Charge, swearing never to hold such Opinions more, or converse with any that did, he was dismissed. About this time one *John Goddesel*, a Parliament Maker, was brought into much trouble binding Heretical Books, but Purging himself upon Oath as the other had done, and abjuring his Trial in that particular, in Conclusion he was dismissed. Indeed upon the Encouragement that was given to trouble People upon every slight surmise, the Land so swarmed with Promooters, or Informers, that People were fearful of Conversing together about Indifferent matters, for many times their words were wrong Interpreted and Spightfully wrested, some Part being taken, and the rest which should have Explained it left out; So Infinite troubles and vexations happened of this kind throughout the Kingdom; but passing over light ones that befell a great Number, not so proper here to be Inserted, come to those more grievous and weighty Afflictions of suffering Martyrs, who passed through flames to receive their Crowns.*

John Goddesel,
taken up
and dismissed.

William White, a Priest being Enlightened by reading of *Wickliffe's* Books, by degrees withdrew himself from the Errors and Superstitions of the Church of Rome, and followed the Truth, being directed in his ways by the Shining Light of

Persecuted.

ospel. This Man was Persecuted by *Arundel* for *K Hen. VI.*
 ing a Priest, and yet Marrying contrary to the
 pes Decretals, and now apprehended at *Canter-*
 by the order of *Chicheley*, Arch-Bishop of that
 Metropolitan See, was charged with certain Articles,
 which some Writers tell us he had Recanted in his
 former troubles, viz.

That Men should apply themselves only to God for
 forgiveness of their sins, and not to a Priest.

That the wicked Lives of the Popes were a Devilish
 state, and their seeming sanctity the heavy Yoke of
 Anti-christ, so Colouring their Oppressing and Persecu-
 ing the Church of Christ by a specious pretence of Ho-
 ly Zeal.

That Men ought not to Worship Images, or Idolatrous
 Figures of Saints departed, nor those Holy Men which
 are Dead.

That the Church of Rome resembled the Fig-tree
 which Christ Curst, because it brought forth no Fruits
 of Truth, &c.

Upon these Articles (a Letter the Clergy had
 obtained of the King Encouraging it) he was after
 second dismission Convened before *William*, Bishop *White*,
 of *Norwich*, and Sentenced as a Heretick. As he *Martyr'd.*
 went to the stake, the People flocked about him,
 and desired his Prayers to God for them, that if
 they should be brought to the like Tryal, they
 might be Enabled to undergo it with Patience;
 as he was about to make Answer to their de-
 sires, one of the Bishops Men struck him full on the
 mouth with his staff, Commanding him to keep si-
 lence, and so not being suffered to speak, he patient-
 ly in silence resigned his Soul to God, in *Norfolk*.

About this time likewise, Father *Abraham* of *Abraham*
Walden, a Priest, suffered the *and Wal-*
 same upon the like Articles as *White* did. Also by *den, Mar-*
 virtue of a Letter sent to the Dean of *Rhodenhal*, *tyrs.*
 and the Parish of *Alborough* from the Bishop of
Norwich, *Thomas Pie*, and *John Mendham*, did Pe-
 nance

R. Hen. VI. nance nine times before the solemn Processions, being every time so severely scourged, that the blood run in streams from their Bodies, for holding Articles and Doctrines like the foregoing; Nay, such was the wicked Malice of the Clergy, that for some years hardly a week passed, but many were Whipp'd, Imprisoned, and Tortured in every Diocese throughout England.

**Hoveden,
Martyr.**

Anno 1430. One *Richard Hoveden*, a Wool spinner and Citizen of *London*, received the Crown of Martyrdom, which Godly Man, when no perswasion would prevail with him to Abjure the Truth he held, the Bishops, notwithstanding he made it appear his Tenents were Consenant to the Word of God, Condemned him for Heresie, and delivered him to the secular Magistrate, he was consumed in Ashes near the *Tower Ditch*, Singing Psalms and Praising God in the midst of the fire.

**Bagly,
Martyr.**

Soon after *Hoveden*, *Thomas Bagly*, a Priest, was Accused of Heresie, and tho' he defended his Opinions very Learnedly, confuting and confounding his Examiners, yet was he overborn, sentenced and burned in *Smithfield*; this Man, as *Fabian* tells us, was Vicar of *Monenden*, near *Malton* in *Essex*, and died for strictly adhering to the Doctrine that *Wickliffe* taught.

**Crow,
Martyr.**

The same year *Paul Crow*, a *Bohemian*, flying from Persecution there, and coming into *England*, fell into the Merciless hands of the Arch-Bishop, before whom, being Accused of holding several Hereticall Opinions as he termed them, contrary to the Opinions of the *Romish Church*, touching *The Sacraments of the Lords Supper, Worshipping of Images, and Saints departed, Auricular confession, &c.* he was sentenced as an Heretick, delivered to the Temporal Magistrate, and received a Crown of Martyrdom, passing to it Joyfully through the flames.

In Italy, as well as other Countreys, the Persecution was carry'd on, where one *Thomas Rhedonensis*, French Man and Priest, being at Rome, openly preached Christs Doctrine, and found many followers, tho' so near the Pope's Chair; but order was taken to send him out of the way, for tho' in his Doctrine he agreed in all that the *Romish Church* possessed in her purity; yet these Articles being maliciously packed to destroy him, he suffered the same, viz.

Hen. VI.
Thomas Rhedonensis, Martyr.

That the Church lacketh Reformation, and that it all first be punished and then reformed.

That Infidels, Jews, Turks, and Moors, shall be converted unto Christ in the latter days.

That Abominations were used at Rome.

That the unjust Excommunications of the Pope, ought not to be dreaded by any Man, and those who rendered them not, did neither sin nor offend.

To Condemn this Man, Pope *Eugenius*, who succeeded Pope *Martin*, sat as Judge, and therefore he could not expect but his doom would be that which followed. Divers others also suffered Martyrdom, *Henry Grunfelder*, a Priest at *Ratisbon*, *John Drun-* Divers
Henry of Noble Birth, and a Priest, at *Worms*; *Henry* Martyrs in
Adgeber at *Ratisbon*, *Peter Thorrow* at *Spires*, *Ma-* Germany.
rw Hager at *Berlin* in *Germany*.

Immediately after the Death of Pope *Martin*, who sat 14 years, Succeeded to the Popedom *Eugenius*, the Fourth of that Name, Anno 1431. A man fierce and bloody, who Embroiled all Christendom in cruel Wars. This Pope called the Council of *Basil*, but in a little time perceiving it favoured him not, he repented of what he had done, and used his endeavours (fearing it might be to his detriment) to dissolve it, and Summoned it at *Ferrara*, or *Florence*, where he had Power better to over-awe it; and after many Contestations and Debates, it was by his Procurement dissolved, without producing some benefit to the Church;

For,

K. Hen. VI. For, that I may be as brief as possible, it was argued before this Council broke up, That this Pope was not barely a Heretick, but a Relapsarian, which is the worst sort of them, as they hold it: That the General Council was above the Pope: That the Pope may Err: Whether the Pope might be deposed, and the Council proceed to govern the Church without his Authority: That the Pope had no Power to dissolve the Council: That Priests as well as Bishops had determining Voices: That Abbots were not of Christs Institution: And after many debates and sometimes great Heats, they resolv'd to depose Pope *Eugenius*. And *Amadeus*, Duke of *Savoy*, being commended as a fit Person (tho' he was Married) to sit in *St. Peter's* Chair, they proceeded to a new Election, and according to the Decree of the Council, upon a Scrutiny he was chosen Pope, taking upon him the Name of *Felix*; and of this Pope *Volaterran* in his third Book writes, That being asked of some Ambassadors, whether he kept any Hounds for his Pass-time, he carried them into his great Hall, and shewed them a Number of poor People sitting and feeding plentifully at his Table, declaring, *These were the Hounds he kept and fed every day, with whom he trusted through the Mercy of God to obtain the Glory of Heaven in the Life to come.* This Council of *Basil* is said to have continued the longest of any; for it sat seventy Years; the *Bohemians* Addressed their Complaints to it, who among other Advantages were Indulged, as well Laity as Clergy, to receive the Sacrament in both Kinds, which was denied to the Laity of other Nations, Except Princes; and much of the Cruelties Cruelty was restrained in that Countrey towards the *Hussars*, that should carry themselves disobediently and quietly in their Stations.

Pope Eugenius Excommunicated, and his restless Endeavours to maintain his Title to the Triple Crown.

Eugenius, tho' another Pope was chose, did not rest so satisfied, notwithstanding he was Excommunicated by the Council, but, to strengthen his Power

Created 18 New Cardinals ; then sent his Orators into Germany, labouring to have the Council of Basil dissolved, he having set up another Council at Ferrara ; but they not regarding him, he applied himself to the French for assistance, who laid siege to the City ; but the Helvetians with a small power Vanquished them, destroying the greatest part of their Army ; yet new troubles arising daily, the Council at length was dissolved by the means of Eugenius, who gained Frederick to his side, that was then labouring to settle himself in the Empire, Eugenius promising to help him all he could to gain his Point ; By which means the Council was sent home, and Felix the New Elected Pope, and the best that ever bore that dignity, was perswaded to Resign his Papacy to Nicholas the Fifth, who succeeded to Eugenius, and Confirmed Frederick in the Empire of Germany, Crowning him at Rome, Anno 1451.

Whilst these things were in agitation in the Council of Basil, Eugenius called another Council at Florence, after that of Ferrara, and so cunningly thought it about, that the Emperour and Patriarch of Constantinople, with the rest of the Grecians present, were perswaded to agree with the Church of Rome in relation to the Procession of the Holy Ghost, which they could never before be Induced to admit ; also to receive the Communion in unleavened bread, hold the Doctrine of Purgatory, and put themselves under the Authority of the See of Rome ; but on their return, the other Churches of Greece were displeased at this Concession and Submission, that they afterwards publicly Condemn'd all those Leagues that consented to these Articles, not to have Christian Burial. But to return ;

During these matters, the Bishops in England, were hot upon the scent of Innocent Blood ; for the Year 1439. One Richard Wich, a Priest, being Accused of Heresie, notwithstanding all he

The
Greeks,
submit to
the Ro-
mish
Church.

Richard
Wich,
Martyr.

K. Hen. VI. ledged in his defence, he was sentenced, degraded, and burnt on *Tower-Hill*.

His Prophecy, and the Peoples superstition.

A little before his Death it is Remarkable, he Prophecyed the *Postern* of the *Tower* should sink to justify his Innocency, which coming to pass a little after his Martyrdom; It is almost Incredible how the People flocked to the place where he suffered declaring him a Holy Man, and a Prophet, gathering up the Dirt and Ashes that remained there, preserving them as Relicks, and placing a heap of stones in the form of a Cross, some superstitiously Prayed to him as a Saint of their own Canonizing Cursing the cruel Clergy for putting him to Death and so much the Frenzy wrought, that the King to quiet them was forced to put out his Proclamation Prohibiting all Persons to resort in any devout way to the place where he suffered under great Penalties, for many had gone on Pilgrimage thither, making their Prayers and Oblations to him; Such was the superstition of those times, when the Laity were not suffered to have the use of the Scriptures, as a Rule and Guide to their Devotions.

And now the Clergy consulted to render themselves in a manner free from all Temporal Laws that the Statute of *Premunire facias*, might be taken away, which, with the Power they had over the King, was so far effected, that they were at liberty to oppress others, but not to be Molested nor Accountable in themselves. To this end they obtained the Kings Writ till the next Parliament *Anno 1439*. And indeed before this time, when the Cardinal of *Winchester*, upon Transgressing this Statute, and for many other, Heinous Crimes laid to his Charge, and plainly proved against him, he forfeited all his Lands and other Temporalities to the King, the Pope so far Intermeddled, as for a Sum of Money to grant him a Charter of Pardon, and so unjustly defeated the Laws of the Realm.

Realm, and the Kings Treasury of a great Mass of Money. K. Hen. VI.

Anno 1445. Henry Chicheley, Arch-Bishop of Canterbury Died, upon whose being taken out of the way it was hoped the Persecution would cease, but the Good Duke of Gloucester, the Kings Uncle, who favoured the Preachers and Professors of the Gospel, being removed by a Violent Death, hastened through the Malice of the Clergy, it abated little or nothing. One thing which vexed the Clergy was, this Dukes discovering a cheat in their pretended Miracles; for a Man who said he came from Barwick, and had been blind all his life time, till he was restored by his Prayers at St. Alban's Shrine, being brought into his presence he shewed him divers Colours, which he could readily Name and Distinguish, tho' he pretended to have seen but a few hours, he declared him a wicked dissembling Knave, which most believing as well as himself, St. Alban lost much of his fame for working Miracles, few resorting thither on Pilgrimages as they were used to do, concluding the many Miracles, reported to be wrought by him, to be of as little Credit as this; for certainly had this fellow been suddainly restored to sight as he pretended, it is Morally impossible, not having seen perhaps any Colours, or very few, he could so readily name and distinguish them one from another, and so this Good Duke, entirely beloved by the common People, being Principally brought to his untimely end, by the Malice of the Clergy, for standing in their way against Persecuting of the Innocent, is Accounted a Martyr, and all that were concerned in his Death put the hand of God upon them. The Cardinal of Winchester soon after Died, being much grieved that his vast Treasure, with which he said he was able to buy the Kingdom, could not bribe, or stave off Death till he had got the triple Miter which was his chief Aim, and William De-la-Pool, Marquess of

A pretended Miracle detected.

The Good Duke of Gloucester, Accounted a Martyr.

K.Hen.VI. *Suffolk*, another great Enemy of *Gloucester's*, being Banished in Parliament, was taken in his Passage, and his head being laid on the side of a Cock Boat stricken off by the Mariners.

Soon after the King, who had made an unfortunate Match in *France*, lost all his Territories there, and in the end his Crown and Life. And now one main Battering Engine against Popery, was luckily found out, *viz.* The Art of Printing, so that great Numbers of Godly Books being dispersed by this means throughout *Christendom*, the People began to be wonderfully Enlightened with Truth, and in a great measure to reject Error: Insomuch, that the Pope and his Clergy laboured in vain to take from them the Key of Knowledge, many of the Laity by this means in a little time proving more Knowing and Learned than the Pope, or his Cardinals, Bishops, and their Subordinates.

Constantinople taken by the Turks, upon Divisions raised in Christendom by the Pope.

Not long after these matters happened, *Constantinople* was taken by the *Turks*, and the *Greek Empire* utterly ruined and laid waste by them, through the Divisions and Wars raised among the Christian Princes by the Popes means, for they not being at league through unnatural Jars among themselves to assist *Paleologus* the *Greek Emperour*, *Mahomet* the Second, Emperour of the *Turks*, broke into the Imperial City, put all to the Sword that he met, and in the Multitude, as some say, being trodden under foot, the Christian Emperour lost his Life, and within a while, *Servia*, *Bulgaria*, *Dalmatia*, *Epirus*, *Transylvania*, *Moldavia*, *Stiria*, *Carinthia*, Part of *Hungary*, and many other Provinces were over-run by the Barbarous Nations, who Persecuted or carried into miserable Captivity four Millions of Christians, beside a great Number slain in the Wars, and to this day they continue the scourge of the Christians under their Dominion spreading wide in *Europe*, *Asia*, and *Africa*, which may be concluded to be permitted by God as

Judgment

Judgment for the Luke-Warmness, Errors, Persecutions, and Divisions arising in the latter Days amongst those professing Christianity. But to come nearer to my purpose,

I find not only those of low Esteem were Persecuted by the Pope and Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, &c. But even the dignified; for *Reynold Peacock*, first Bishop of *St. Asaph*, and afterward of *Chichester*, holding some Opinions agreeing with the Doctrine *Wickliffe* had taught, was accused of Heresie in the Archiepiscopacy of *Chicheley*, *John Stafford*, *John Kemp*, and Particularly in that of *Thomas Bourchier*, who cited him to appear before him and other Bishops at *Lambeth*, and tho' he made a Learned defence and proved his Opinions to be agreeable to scripture and a sound Faith, yet he was so over-born that they Compell'd him to retract them, and acknowledge publicly that he had lain under Errors for more than twenty years past: Tho' they were no other than these, viz.

Reynold, Bishop of Chichester Persecuted.

That it is not absolutely necessary to salvation, to believe in the Holy Catholick Church.

That it is not necessary to salvation, to affirm the body of Christ materially in the Sacrament.

That the Universal Church may Err in matters that pertain unto Faith.

That it is not necessary to salvation, to believe what every General Council enjoins as Articles of Faith; and some others to the like purpose.

But however he Recanted these at this time, being over-born, and having his Recantation forced on him, some Authors are of Opinion, and not without good grounds, that he retracted his Recantation and still held his Integrity; for I find being Condemned as a Heretick he was Imprisoned, cruelly used, and, as some say, privately put to death in Prison, to prevent danger from the common sort of People, who held him in high esteem, and one who taught the Word of God in Truth and

Hen. VI. Sincerity ; and certain it is, his Books were Condemned and Burned as Heretical.

Palmerius, Martyr. During these things, *Matthew Palmerius* Writing a Book Intituled, *De Angelis*, was Condemned by Pope *Nicholas* as a Heretick, and suffered Martyrdom in the Flames at *Corona*. After Pope *Nicholas* succeeded *Calixtus* the Third, who ordained the Tolling of Aves, Superstitiously Fancying the Ring of a Bell would give the Soldiers Victory over the *Turks*, and contrary to the Decrees of the Councils of *Constance* and *Basil*, decreed, That none should Appeal from the Pope to any General Council.

Many
Popes in a
little time.

To *Calixtus*, succeeded *Aeneas Sylvius*, who wrote the two Books of the Commentaries on the Council of *Basil*, wherein were contained many good things contrary to what he Acted and Decreed being in *St. Peter's* Chair, so that it may be said of him, a just and upright Man as he before appeared to be, was Marr'd by being made Pope for then he sought by all possible means to Deface and Abolish what he had so well Written, he took upon him the Name of *Pius* the Second, at his Instalment in the Papacy, and was succeeded by *Papal* the Second, a Man Gluttonous, Ambitious, and illiterate, hating Learning and Learned Men. After him succeeded *Sixtus* the Fourth, who Encreased his Revenue by allowing stewes in *Rome*, the Whores Paying every one a yearly Pension for their Licences to commit Lewdness, and at the Instance of *Peter Ruerius*, a Cardinal, and of *Hierom* his Brother, Indulged the whole Family of the Cardinals of *St. Lucie*, to commit Sodomy in the three Months of the year, viz. *June*, *July*, and *August* with this Clause, *Fiat ut Petitur*. To this wicked Pope succeeded *Innocent* the Eighth, as illiterate and Rude as the foregoing, who among other cruel Acts in the Town of *Poins* apud *Piquico* caused 8 Men and 6 Women with the Lord of that Place to be Condemned as Hereticks, for sayi

Stews allowed in
Rome, by
Pope Sixtus.

Divers
suffer Martyrdom at
Piquico.

some succeeding St. Peter were Christs Vicars, but ^{K Hen. VI.}
 as imitated the Meekness and Poverty of Christ.
 He also Condemned George King of Bohemia for a
 Heretick, depriving him and his Heirs of the Royal
 Dignity and Kingdom, settling both on Matthias,
 King of Pannonia, or Hungary. But to return;
 King Henry the VIth. of England, being now of King Hen-
 full Age, by the means of the Duke of Suffolk, ry Marriess.
 and others, Married the Lady Margaret, Daughter
 of Keyner Duke of Anjou, Titular King of Jerusa-
 salem, Naples and Sicily, and for her refused the Earl
 of Armaignac's, Daughter with a wealthy Dower,
 as he had none with this, her father being Poor;
 and soon after the Miseries of England began, for
 John Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, and Un-
 cle to the King, being Dead, and his other Uncle,
 the Duke of Gloucester, Murthered, as has been
 related, Richard Duke of York, laid Claim to the
 Crown, and Kingdom as his right, descending Line-
 ally from Lionel, Elder Brother to John Duke of
 Lancaster, Father to Henry the IVth. Grand-father
 to King Henry the VIth. and this causing much
 contest, and some Rebellions, it was agreed in Par-
 liament, that the Duke should succeed King Henry
 after his Decease, but the Queen and her favourites
 breaking the Articles of Agreement in favour of her
 son, Prince Edward, both Parties Armed, and ma-
 ny cruel Battels were fought with Various success;
 one of which, Richard Duke of York lost his life,
 and did his youngest Son the Earl of Rutland; but
 Edward Earl of March, his Eldest Son, taking on
 in his Father's Title and Prosecuting the Quarrel,
 assisted by the Earl of Warwick, fought the Queens
 Army of 60000 Men with 50000, in a spacious
 field near a Town called Towton, in which Battel
 6000 Men on both Parts were slain, and Edward Towton.
 the new Duke of York remaining Victor, so that
 King Henry with his Queen fled into Scotland, and
 the Duke Marching to London, was of the Citizens
 received

Hen. VI. received in Triumph and Proclaimed King on the 4th. of *March*, Anno 1461. Which in the Account of Historians put a Period to *Henry's* Reign, when he had Reigned 38 Years, 6 Months, and 3 Days; tho' he lived many years after, till in his Confinement in the *Tower*, he was Barbarously Murthered by *Richard* Duke of *Gloucester*, Brother to King *Edward*, Anno 1471. in the 49th. year of his Age, and shall be more amply touched on in the Ensuining Reign.

A strange thing.

In this Kings Reign, a little before the breaking out of this unnatural War between the Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*, wherein the flower of the Nobility and the strength of the Kingdom was in manner wasted, and all the Territories in *France* lost, a Rose Tree, contrary to its former use, bore on the one side Red, and on the other side white Roses, the Cognizances of the two Families, and all the Lyons in the *Tower* died.

EDWARD the Fourth of that Name since the Conquest, King of England, &c.

Ed. IV.
Edward
Crowned.

Edward, Eldest Son to *Richard* Duke of *York*, after the Victory of *Towton Field*, being Proclaimed King, and finding at present no more Enemies to contend with, on the 19th of *June* following was Crowned at *Westminster*, but after that doing many things displeasing to the *Londoners*, who before highly favoured him, it caused them to change their Minds, and side with *Henry* the deposed King, as soon as an opportunity offered them advantage so to do, and soon after the King sending

over his great friend, the Earl of *Warwick*, by *K. Ed. IV.*
 whose Valour he had chiefly obtained the Crown,
 to treat of a Marriage for him with the Lady *Bona*,
 Daughter to the Duke of *Savoy*, and Sister to *Char-*
lotte, Queen to *Lewis* the Eleventh of *France*; when
 in the mean time Soliciting the Lady *Elizabeth*
Grey (Widow to Sir *John Grey*, slain in the late
 War fighting against him) to be his Concubine,
 and she refusing it, he fell so passionately in Love
 with her, as to Marry her and make her his Queen;
 which affront and slight put upon the Earl of *War-*
wick in his Negotiation, changed him from a friend
 to be a Mortal Enemy ever after, when upon his
 return Confederating with the Duke of *Clarence*, the
 Kings younger Brother now Living, and other No-
 bles, it was agreed amongst them to depose him, and
 restore *Henry* to the Throne; when underhand in or-
 der to it having raised many Commotions, they at
 length defied him, and broke out into open Hostility,
 but by the Mediation of some Nobles, a treaty in or-
 der to reconcile them was set on foot, which making
 King *Edward* too Supine and Negligent of his safe-
 ty, the Earl, with a select Party, entered his Camp
 in the Night and took him Prisoner, Committing
 him to the Castle of *Midaleham* in *York-shire*, under
 the Custody of the Arch-Bishop; but having liber-
 ty to hunt for his Recreation under the Conduct
 of a Guard, he was soon rescued by a Party of his
 own Men, lying in Ambush for that purpose.
 King *Edward* being thus at liberty, the Truce
 however continued, and upon earnest suit made by
 the Mediators, the King gave the Earl and other
 Lords of his faction a meeting, in order to Accom-
 modate differences if it might be, in *Westminster*
 Hall; but Objections of good Deserts and Evil re-
 mitals, were so vehemently urged by the Earl of
Warwick, that the King much displeased thereat,
 they parted with threats and in great fury, where-
 upon both Parties armed again, but the King over-
 throwing

*The King
 Marries,
 and much
 trouble En-
 sues.*

*The King a
 Prisoner
 and is
 Rescued.*

Ed. I. V.

Warwick
and Cla-
rence fly
the Land.

King Ed-
ward flies,
and Henry
is restored.

Queen
Margaret
returns.
Edward
Lands a-
gain in
Yorkshire.

throwing an Army commanded by Sir Robert Wells, who imprudently fought ere the Earl came up with his main Strength, which so discouraged the rest that finding them wavering and irresolute, the Earl of *Warwick* with the Duke of *Clarence*, and others fled, and thinking to enter *Calis*, they were denied entrance by Monsieur *Vauclere*, the Earl's Deputy, he had left there in his Absence; yet they were kindly received at the French-Court, where they found Queen *Margaret*, Prince *Edward* her Son, and many English Nobles, and entering into a Confederacy to depose *Edward*, and restore *Henry*, the Prince was married to the Lady *Anne*, Daughter to the Earl of *Warwick*, and so returning with Forces they had gathered, Landed at *Dartmouth* in *Devonshire*, and proclaimed King *Henry*; whereupon the People flocked to his Standard in such great Numbers, that King *Edward* fearing to be put into their Hands by his own Army, privately fled with a few Followers, and sailed to *Holland*, from whence he passed into *Burgundy*, where he was kindly received by the Duke, who had before married his Sister *Margaret*.

Upon this Success the Earl of *Warwick* came to *London* with his Army, took *Henry* out of the Tower where he was a Prisoner, carrying him through the City in Triumph to *St. Paul's Church*, and soon after a Parliament being called in *Henry's* Name, in it *Edward* and all his Adherents were attainted of High-Treason; their Goods and Lands given to *Henry*; and the Crown entailed on *Henry* and his Heirs Male, but in defect of such Heirs to remain to the Duke of *Clarence*, and his Heir Male.

The News of *Henry's* being restored flying to the Court of *France*, Queen *Margaret* and the Prince her Son hastened over, but this Joy lasted not long for *Edward* gaining Supplies of the Duke of *Burgundy*, Landed at *Ravensborough* in *Yorkshire*; and

earing the People in hand that now he came not ^{K. Ed. IV.}
 for the Kingdom, but to claim the Dutchy of *York*
 his rightful Inheritance, a great Number came to
 him, so that his Power hourly encreasing he enter-
 ed *York*, and seized on that City, causing himself
 new to be proclaimed King, and the Duke of
Clarence shrinking from the Earl of *Warwick*, and
 siding with his Brother in a Mortal Battel at *Barnet*-
field, near *London*; the Earl courageously fighting
 was slain with his Brother the Marquess of *Mon-*
acute, who endeavoured to relieve him, and many
 other Nobles; and Prince *Edward* being taken
 Prisoner in another Battel at *Tewksbury*, was stabbed
 to the Heart by the Duke of *Gloucester*, in the Pre-
 sence of King *Edward*: Soon after this Innocent
 King *Henry* was in the Tower by the Dukes of
Clarence, and *Gloucester*, and the Queen along
 while detained Prisoner, till the People generally
 murmuring at such Cruelties, her Father had Li-
 berty to Ransome her; to do which he sold his
 Titles to *Jerusalem*, *Sicily*, and *Naples*, when re-
 turning into *France*, she soon after died of Grief
 for her irreparable Losses of a Husband, a Son, and
 Kingdom, &c. And *Edward* putting most of his
 Capital Enemies to Death, was by these means a-
 gain established in the Throne, where for a time
 leave him to see what happened in Church-Af-
 fairs, and matters tending to Religion, during these
 troublesome Times.

I find them about *Anno 1465*, that the Carme-
 lite Friars, Jacobines and others had a great Con-
 tention with several Doctors and Civil Lawyers, for
 preaching up *Christs Poverty* on Earth; the lat-
 ter denying he was in want or need of any thing,
 and that the former ought not to take Encourage-
 ment from this to beg as they did; and much
 Preaching and a long Controversy was held about
 to little purpose, and though the Persecution
 had a litle ceased on so great an Inundation of
 Blood

Edward a-
 gain Pro-
 claimed
 King.
 Warwick
 slain.
 Prince
 Edward
 Son to
 Henry
 Murthered.

Queen
 Margaret
 dies with
 Grief.

A Contra-
 versie a-
 bout
 Christs
 Poverty
 on Earth.

K. Ed IV.

*Joh. Goos
Martyr.*

Blood as was shed by the Sword in War, yet sooner the Clergy had time to consider, but the renewed it again; for one *John Goos*, a godly Man preaching and holding several Articles disallowed by the Romish Church, was condemned by the Bishops as an Heretick, who delivered him to *Robert Belisdon* one of the Shrieves of *London* to Execution done on him by Fire on Tower-hill, and he not being able to prevail with him to recant after craving Meat and eating a good Meal, saying *He should have a sharp Passage to his Supper*, he was committed to the Flames dying with great Courage and Constancy.

*The King
of Bohemia Ex-
communicated by
Pope Inno-
cent.*

Now though the *Turks*, *Tartars*, and other Barbarous Nations were in War bringing Ruin and Desolation where-ever they came, and this attended too with a cruel Persecution almost in the Bowels of Christendom, yet the Popes, who still themselves in some Cases the common Fathers of it supposing they were far enough at a distance from the growing Calamity, so little regarded it, that to wreck their private Revenge they ceased not to embroil those Princes in Troubles, that should have opposed the Torrent, and put a stop to the Deluge of Christian Blood; for Pope *Innocent* being displeased with *George Pogiebracius*, King of *Bohemia*, for not persecuting those that embraced the Doctrine of *Huss*, but rather favouring them, excommunicated him, deposed him, and gave his Kingdom to *Matthias*: But *Frederick* the Emperour hindring his taking Possession of it, and after the Death of *George*, assigning it to *Uladislaus*, Son of *Casmire* King of *Poland*, great Wars ensued; and the Emperour had been hard put to it, if *Albert* Duke of *Saxony* had not assisted him. Nay, such was the restless Temper of this Pope that e'er he died, he set many other Princes at Variance, insomuch that they were shedding each others Blood when the *Barbarians* were in a manner at the Gate

of their Cities; so that it may be questioned which was the worst Scourge, the Pope or they in burning the Towns, and slaying the People; yea, such was the Pope's Covetousness, that this Turkish War served him for a Pretence to exact nine Millions of the French Clergy, which he received and converted to his own Use, with a great deal more which he received from other Countries, in which England bore a share, and though the Germans, who bore the Brunt of the War, complained, but yet got no relief, for this Money was spent in Riot and Luxury, and bestowed on Harlots, Pimps and Panders, who were thought by the Pope rather to share it than the Soldiers, who freely spent their Blood fighting for the Christian Cause.

R. Ed. IV.

The Popes
Luxury.

All this while the Pope's Inquisitors were busie to find out whom they might destroy; and among others they fell upon one John a poor Neat-herd of Frankford in Germany, accusing him of Heresie the Bishop of Persopolis, who condemned him to the Flames, for no other Cause as is recorded, but that in his Simplicity he spoke against the evil Practices and wicked Lives of the Clergy.

John a
Neat-herd
Martyr.

Next Dr. *Johannes de Wesalia* fell under their persecuting Hands, who was accused to *Dietherius* Archbishop of *Mentz*, for certain Articles and Opinions they had collected out of his Books, who referred it to the Universities of *Heidleburg* and *Collen* for Examination, who cited the Dr. before them, causing him to swear that he would presently deliver up all his Books and Sermons, which he did, and so they fell in strict Examination of them; upon the nicest and severest Scrutiny could fix nothing upon him but what follows, viz.

Dr. Wesalia
persecuted.

That all Men are saved freely and through meer Grace, by Faith in Christ, Free-will having no Power, that we should believe the Word of God, and not the Gloss of any Man or Fathers.

That

x. Ed. IV.

That the Word of God is to be expounded by comparing one Text within another.

That Prelates have no Authority to make Laws, or peculiar Right given them to expound the Scripture more than another.

That Men's Traditions; as Fastings, Pardons, Feasts, long Prayers, Pilgrimages and such like are to be rejected; extreame Unction and Confirmation to be reprobated, Confession and Satisfaction to be reprehended, the Primacy of the Pope also to pass for nothing, as being equal to other Bishops.

After a long Examination, being threatened with Excommunication, and an Anathema, (which is *That which none but the Pope, as they say, can absolve from, till the Hour of Death*) together with Tortures and Threatnings of Death, they at length

Herecants. prevailed upon his weak Old Age to recant the foregoing Articles, and some others; but he was dispensed withal from reading them publickly to the People, for they well knew there was nothing in them whereon to ground a reasonable Accusation, and for fear lest their Malice against so Reverend a Man being seen into, it might enrage the Citizens against them for having given him so much needless Trouble.

Pope Sixtus the Fourth dies.

Anno 1484. died Pope Sixtus the Fourth, rather a Monster in Nature than a Prelate of the Church for Platina tells us, he in a manner ruined the flourishing Country of Italy, with War and Dissension; and Agrippa writing of him says, that he encouraged all manner of Lewdness and Debauchery in Rome, which thereupon encreased so mightily that he received of the Citizens for privileging and protecting them in their wicked Employments from 20 to 40000 Pieces of the Julian Money. He excommunicated and made war upon the Venetians from which they could not get free till his Death. Nay, further, he was a great Patron of the begging Friars, who purchased of him contrary to the

Institute

Institutions of their order, to be Invested in Lands & Ed IV.
and other Possessions, assuring them moreover of Everlasting Life in the World to come.

In his Popedom one *Allen de Rupe*, Composed the Book called *our Ladies Psalter*, Erecting a new Fraternity upon the same, called, *Fraternitas Confraternitatum*, Pertaining to the order of the *Dominicans*; and the better to justify himself, he, but how truly Leave the Reader to Judge, Swore, That the *B. Virgin Mary*, Mother of Christ, often came to his Cell, Kissed him and took him to her Husband, giving him her Paps to suck, &c. But to return.

Our Ladies Psalter,
wrote by a
Notorious
Lying Fry-
ar.

King *Edward* being Established in the English Throne by the Murther of *Henry*, &c. Enter'd into a League with the Duke of *Burgundy* against the French, but that Duke, contrary to *Edward's* Expectation and his promise, not being in any readiness when the English Army Landed, and the French King offering large Sums of Money for Peace, King *Edward*, in vain Expecting the *Burgundian* in the Field, it was agreed, the French King should Pay 65000 Crowns to defray the Charges of the English Army, and 50000 Crowns per Annum, during King *Edward's* Life, and that the Dauphin should Marry *Elizabeth*, his Eldest Daughter. The French King Paid the 50000 Crowns for the 9 Years, and then Peaceably took Possession of the Dutchy of *Guienne*, for the performance of his agreement, Hostages being given, the English quitted France, but the Duke of *Burgundy* in a great rage refusing to be Included in the Peace, being worsted in several Battels, at last lost his Life, with the greater Part of his Countrey. King *Edward* having now by his Queen two Sons and several Daughters, that he might settle his Posterity after him, laboured to get into his hands *Henry Earl of Richmond*, Allied to the Crown, who was then with the Duke of *Britaign*, but failed, tho' it cost him much Treasure, and many Stratagems were used

K. Ed. IV. used to take away his Life. Nay, his Jealousy proceeded so far as upon a Prophecy, *That a G. should succeed an E.* he caused his Brother *George*, Duke of *Clarence*, to be secretly Murthered, or as some say drowned in a Butt of Malmsey, who left behind him two Children, *Edward* and *Margaret*, one of them afterwards wrongfully put to Death by *Henry* the VIIth. the other the like by *Henry* the VIIIth. yet this Prophecy came to Pass for *Richard* Duke of *Gloucester*, Murthering King *Edward's* 2 Sons did succeed him, the *G.* being in his Title not his Name.

A Prophecy causes the Murther of the Duke of Clarence.

After this the *Scots* entering *England*, were beaten out by the Duke of *Gloucester*, and pursued till they were brought into such Distress, as made them sue for Peace, which was agreed on Advantageous Articles on King *Edward's* Part; but the *French* about this time refusing to perform the Agreement lately made, the King Prepared to pass the Sea and by Sword and Fire Compel them to it; yet having much weakened and wasted himself by Excess of Venery with the many Concubines he kept of whom *Jane Shore*, so much Noted, was chief, he fell Sick; when Calling his Nobles about him, he endeavour'd to reconcile his own Kindred and his Wives, amongst whom had happened some heats which were seemingly Accorded between them whereupon recommending to them the care of his Queen and Children, and Exhorting them to live in Unity, he died, *Anno* 1483. in the 40th Year of his Age, and the 23d of his Reign, being Buryed in a Chappel of his own founding at *Windsor*.

King Edward dies.

This King is Accused of much Cruelty; having caused a Mercer in *Cheap-side* to be hanged at his own Door, only for saying in jest to his little Son *If he would be a good Boy, he would make him Heir to the Crown*, meaning his House that had the Sign of the Crown.

Also one *Thomas Bardet*, Esquire in *Warwick-shire*, K. Ed. IV.
 who had plentifully treated him and his retinue, for
 saying (upon a Deer being killed in his Park which
 he much fancied) *He wished the Horns in his Belly,*
who perswaded the King to kill him, was Beheaded as
 one that had Conspired the Kings Death.

EDWARD the Fifth of that Name
 since the Conquest, King of Eng-
 land, &c.

KING Edward the Fourth dying, left behind K. Ed. V.
 him, by *Elizabeth* his Queen, two Sons, *Ed-*
ward, and *Richard* Duke of *York*, and several
 Daughters; yet upon his Brothers Death, *Richard*,
 Duke of *Glocester*, resolving to place the Crown
 on his own Head Procured himself in a Council of
 the Nobles of his Faction to be chosen Protector of
 the young Kings Person, and of the Realm, during
 his Minority; and Associating with him the Duke
 of *Buckingham* as his chief Confident, they with a
 strong Party went to meet the young King, return-
 ing from the Marches of *Wales*, in order to be
 Crowned at *Westminster*, having before perswaded
 the Queen to write to the Lords, that attended
 him, to dismiss their forces, that so there might be
 no Misunderstanding between them; when advan-
 cing to *Northampton*, he Imprisoned the Lord *Ri-*
vers, and then going to *Stony-Stratford*, did the like
 by the Lord *Grey* and *Sir Thomas Vaughan*, sending
 them to *Pontefract* Castle in the North, where after-
 wards he caused them to be beheaded without any
 Crime laid to their Charge, Tryal, or Colour of
 Justice, only giving out false reports to amuse the
 People,

*The Lord
 Rivers,
 Lord Grey,
 and Sir
 Thomas
 Vaughan.
 Imprisoned.*

K. Ed. V. People, that those of the Queens blood had Conspired to destroy all the Kings nearest Relations, and so proceeded with the King on his way to London.

The Queen takes Sanctuary.

This surprizing News reaching the Queens Ear, she hasted into the Sanctuary at *Westminster*, with her younger Son *Richard*, and her Daughters, e'er the King Arrived at *London*, who upon his approach was met by the Lord Mayor with 500 Citizens in their formalities, and so conveyed in a seeming Pomp to the *Tower*; yet *Gloucester* having got but half his Prey, to gain the other Part, Asssembled a Council of the Nobles and Prelates, Insinuating, *How disgraceful a thing it was to them and the whole Kingdom, that the Queen, Possessed with foolish and groundless fears, should keep the young Duke, the Kings only Brother, as a Prisoner in Sanctuary, who being an Innocent had no occasion for it, Sanctuaries being intended as Refuges for the guilty only*; By which he prevailed on their weakness, that they promised to use their Endeavours with the Queen to get him out of her hands, that he might Accompany the King his Brother as the Protector desired, but the Arch-Bishops Opinion was, that it must be done by fair Perswasions; for he would by no means consent the Privilege of a Sanctuary, should be Violated, which (as he said) *St. Peter* descending with many Angels attending him had Consecrated, and left such visible Marks thereof behind him, that the Holiest Bishop never after durst presume to Consecrate it anew.

Hereupon the Arch Bishop of *Canterbury*, was chosen by the General consent of the Council, to go to the Queen and perswade her quietly to deliver the young Prince, who urged to her, so many Reasons and Arguments of the necessity of her delivering him, that at length, fearing he would be taken by force, and it might then prove worse with him, she shedding a flood of Tears, delivered him

the Arch-Bishop, after having kissed him many times, saying, *That at the tribunal of the Majesty of Heaven, she would require that Poor Infant at his hands, if any Injury befell him.*

K. Ed. V.

The Protector, who with many Nobles attended the Issue of this Negotiation in the Star Chamber, no sooner saw the Arch-Bishop with the Infant in his Arms, but he Advanced and Kissed the young Duke, dissemblingly saying, *Now Welcome my*

The Protector gets the Duke from the Queen.

Lord, even with all my heart, Protesting to the Nobles, that nothing was dearer to him, except the Kings Person; but the Scene quickly changed, for the Duke being Conveyed to his Brother in the Tower, a Council was there held to consider what was fitting to be done, in order to the Crowning King Edward; and having already entirely gained Buckingham to his Interest, he laboured to do the like by the Lord Hastings, who had been Lord Chamberlain to King Edward the IVth. but upon sounding him by one Catesby a favorite of Hastings, and finding it was not to be done, he resolved to cut him off, and so Quarrelling with him in the Council, on a feigned Story, that the Queen and Shoars wife had Conspired to take away his Life by Witchcraft, pulling up his sleeve and shewing his withered arm to confirm it, which they all knew had been ever so from his Cradle, whose Parts Hastings seemed to take, he there caused him to be Arrested,

wearing by St. Paul (his usual Oath) *That his Head should go off before he Eat or Drank,* and he was accordingly without Tryal, or being once heard in defence, Beheaded on a Log within the Tower, and the Lord Stanly at the same time of his being arrested, was grievously wounded by an Armed man that rushed with many more into the Council Chamber, and on the same Day, the two Lords and Knight were Beheaded at Pontefract Castle, by order of the Protector and Buckingham; and this Lord Hastings, who so little Imagined danger was near

Lord Hastings Beheaded, and Lord Stanly wounded.

K Ed. V.

*A true
Dream.*

himself, that as he was going to the Council, meeting a Priest of his own Name, he told him familiarly, *That he should soon hear those that had brought him into danger in King Edward the Fourth's Reign, would be put out of the way and rendered Incapable of doing it any more*; And the very Night before, the Lord Stanly Dreaming he and Hastings were **Gored** by the Tusks of a Boar, that the blood ran about their Ears, and considering the Protector had the white Boar for his Cognizance, Interpreting it that the danger might proceed from him, Advised Hastings of it, with his Opinion, requiring him to fly with him out of the reach of their Enemy but he refused this Advice, saying to the Servant *Good lack, doth my Lord lay such stress on Dreams? Pray tell him from me they are meer-Witchcraft, and I am as sure of the Man he doubts, as that my Head is on my Shoulders.*

After this Execution, the Protector and Buckingham thrust themselves into old rusty Harness, as if they had been the first they could come at, and sending for the Lord Mayor and many Citizens, told them *That Hastings and his Accomplices had Conspired their Death, which had taken Effect, had they not by force prevented it, ordering them so to report it to their fellow Citizens, and, That this was the cause of the Disturbance and Execution in the Tower*; And soon after a Declaration under the Broad Seal, Written before hand to Colour this matter, was Published by the Heralds in the Eminent places of London, &c.

*A Mercenary
Preacher.*

And now these Lets removed, the Protector made no scruple openly to aspire to the Crown, and the better to further his Purpose, one Dr. Shute a Mercenary Priest, was Employed to Prepare the People to give their Voices, by Extolling him and defaming all his Kindred; the substance of his Prolegate Sermon Preached at St. Paul's Cross, was to insinuate to the Auditors,

That neither King Edward the Fourth with his K. Ed. V. Sons, nor the Duke of Clarence were Lawfully begotten, no, nor any of the Children of the Duke of York, Except the Protector, who was his very Image and Picture: Moreover declaring that King Edward was never Lawfully Married to Elizabeth Grey, for that before he had been privately Married to the Lady Elizabeth Lucy, and so his Children begotten on the Pretended Queen were no other than Bastards, and therefore the Crown of right appertained to the Lord Protector; And more of the like stuff to the wounding of his Conscience, and Scandal of his Profession, which caused him to be so generally scorned and hated afterwards of the People, that he pined away and dyed of grief and vexation for shame, and being defeated of the reward he expected, because his Harangue took not as he had promised it would do.

This way failing, Buckingham Assembled the Citizens in Guild-Hall, and made long Orations, persuading them to accept the Protector for their King, but when he Expected Shouts and Acclamations of Long Live King Richard, &c. No such thing Entered, unless from a Rable of Pages, and Footmen placed by him behind the Citizens, who being surprised at it looked over their shoulders, and departed in silence shaking their heads, as being much grieved at these Base and Traiterous Practices. But the Duke reporting the Shout of the Footmen to the unanimous Voice of the whole City, went with some Noblemen and a few of the Ruff-raff of the City to Baynards Castle where the Protector lay, Humbly beseeching him to pity the Kingdom of England, &c. and take upon him the Government of the People as their King, which he dissembling refused to do, seeming mighty unwilling to injure his Nephew; when indeed he in his heart desired nothing more: But Buckingham still urged and pressed it on him, threatening, That if he refused

The Protector Petitioned to take the Crown.

K Ed. V. *sed to accept the Crown, the Nobles and Commons were stedfastly determined to reject the whole Line of the Plantagenets, and Elect some worthy Nobleman to be their King.*

He accepts it.

This you may believe, if you please, mightily startled the Protector and made him Condescend to their request, *Protesting, No other consideration could have obliged him to such a Condescension, and hereupon they shouted, God save King Richard the Third; yet but with a very faint Acclamation so that he plainly perceived their minds were not with him, but that he leaped as it were over their Heads into the uneasy Throne.*

And thus an End was put to *Edward the Fifth* Reign, having been only shown on the Stage as Pageant King, without being Crowned, the space of two Months and 13 Days, and was afterward together with the Duke his Brother, cruelly Murdered in the *Tower*.

As for Ecclesiastical matters, I find none of Note in this short Inter-regnum, as I may not Improperly term it, and therefore I pass to the next.

RICHARD the Third King of England, &c.

R Ric. III.

Richard Duke of Gloucester, a Man by nature fierce and cruel, having laid aside his Nephews, and gotten into the Throne, Created his Son at the Age of 10 years, Prince of Wales, &c. And *John Howard*, who had been Industrious promoting his Interest, Duke of Norfolk, promoted others to Honours and Dignities, whom he concluded would be helpful to him at his need, therefore caused himself and *Ann* his Queen, who had been

Richard and his Queen Crowned.

W

Wife to Prince Edward, Son to Henry the Sixth, to
 e Crowned with great Pomp; yet found himself
 uneasy in the Throne, whilst his Innocent Ne-
 phews were on this side the Grave, wherefore he
 tampered with Sir Robert Brackenbury, Constable of
 the Tower, wherein they remained disconsolate Pri-
 soners, to make them away, but he trembling at
 the mention of so great a wickedness utterly refu-
 sed it; yet Richard gave it not over, and the rather
 because he plainly perceived by his Ambassadors,
 being slighted and denied Audience at the French
 Court, he could not be an absolute King whilst they
 breathed, wherefore positively concluding on this
 great Crime, he, the better to put away the Impu-
 nation of it from himself, went a Progress to Glou-
 cester, that the Murther might be done and over in
 his absence, and so sent a Summ of Money to one
 James Tyrrel, a beggarly Knight that lurked
 about the Tower, with Orders to Execute his Com-
 mands. This wicked wretch soon complied, in
 hopes of Advancement, and shewing the Kings
 Orders, had the Keys delivered to him, who asso-
 ciating with John Dighton and Miles Forrester, two
 desperate Ruffians, when the Innocent Princes
 were asleep, they entered their Lodging, and smo-
 thered them to Death with Bolsters, Dighton and
 Forrester, lying upon them till by their no longer
 struggling they concluded them Dead, then they
 were Buryed under the stairs and after removed
 none knows whither, and thus the Male Line of
 King Edward the Fourth was Extinct, which some
 took on as a Judgment for the Blood of King Henry,
 Prince Edward, and his own Brother; however
 the wickedness of those that committed and com-
 manded these Murthers was not thereby Extenu-
 ated, but Guilt and Punishment pursued them to
 their Graves. Upon News of the Death of her
 Children, the Queen for a time fell Distracted, As
 for the Murtherers of these Princes, a severe ven-
 geance

The two
 Princes
 Murthered
 in the
 Tower.

Gods Judg-
 ments on
 the Mur-
 therers.

K. Ric III. geance over took them; *Dighton* died miserably at *Callis*, unpitied by all; *Forrester* rotted Piece-meal alive in *St. Martins Le-Grand*, and *Tyrrel* lost his Head for Treason in the next Reign. King *Richard* lost his only Son by a fall from a Horse soon after, and himself was deprived of his Life and Kingdom in *Bosworth-field*. But to proceed;

Morton Bishop of *Ely*, being taken up and committed to the Custody of the Duke of *Buckingham*, he laboured so diligently to perswade him he was more worthy of the Kingdom than *Richard*, who by his means had got the Crown, that he was soon Induced to use his Endeavours to depose him; Especially upon calling to remembrance, that the King contrary to his Promise detained from him the Earldom of *Hartford*, to which he pretended a right, and when he was sent for to Court, he at first put it off with delays, and then absolutely refused to come, sending him word, *That he held him for a Monster and a Tyrant, a Murthering Usurper, and no Lawful King, and therefore would not trust his Person in the hands of one who was cruelly unmerciful to his nearest Relations.* So raising forces took the

Field, and defied him as his Mortal Enemy, and the Enemy of his Countrey; against whom *Richard* advanced with a Powerful Army, but as they were about to joyn Battel near *Gloucester*, such abundance of Rain fell for many Days, that a little River between them swelled to such a heighth and overflowed the Fields that they could not meet. Whereupon the *Welch-men*, making the greater Part of the Dukes Army, deserted him, so that he was Constrained to shift for his life, and going to one *Humphrey Banister's* near *Shrewsbury*, who had been his Steward, and raised by him to a great Estate, for shelter, 1000*l.* being set upon his Head he betrayed him to the high Sheriff of the County who apprehended him in the disguise of a Gardener, as he was digging, and conveyed him to *Salisbury*

The Duke of Buckingham, betrayed and beheaded.

bury, Pardoned him, headed, fled, Earl of order but hime r coming and t agreee dy EL and so ay al which Of Spies ed the mandy such a calling were Effect Favou Ratcliff er hi Rhimi was e But ing a f Go rbed er, to heads bury

bury, where the King resided; where, in Hopes of ^{R Ric.III.} Pardon, he confessed all he knew, but that availed him not; for without any legal Trial he was beheaded: Whereupon the rest of the Confederacy fled, the Chief of them beyond the Sea to *Henry Earl of Richmond*, in *Bretaigne*, who had put to Sea in order to have landed in Favour of these Insurrections, but his Fleet scattering in a Tempest, he was by this time returned, and now being strengthened by the coming of so many valiant English Commanders, and the Bishop of *Ely* a subtil Councillour, it was agreed among them, that he should marry the Lady *Elizabeth*, Eldest Daughter to *Edward* the IVth. and so by joining the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*, may absolute Claim to the Crown of *England*, upon which Condition they owned him as their King.

Of these Proceedings *Richard* had notice by his Spies; and to cross their Intentions strongly fortified the Sea-Ports, looking towards *Bretaigne* and *Normandy*, also by terrible Executions cutting off all such as he suspected to favour *Henry's* Interest; and calling a Parliament, *Henry* and all his Adherents were attainted of High-Treason, their Lands and Effects as forfeited were bestowed on King *Richard's* Favourites, as the Lord Viscount *Lovel*, Sir *Richard Ratcliff*, and Sir *William Catesby*, who ruled all under him, which caused this Distich to be writ by a Rhiming Esq; named *Collingborn*; for which he was executed at Tyburn, viz.

*The Rat, the Cat, and Lovel our Dog,
Rule all England under a Hog.*

But hearing frequent News of Preparations made against him beyond the Seas, with a great Summ ^{labours to} of Gold, (as his Brother *Edward* had done) he ^{get the} ^{Earl of} ^{Richmond} ^{into his} ^{Hands.} ^{ha-}ribed *Peter Landois*, the Duke of *Britains* Treasurer, to deliver *Henry*, Earl of *Richmond*, and the heads of the Conspiracy into his Hands, but they

Ric. III. having timely Notice of the Design fled into *France*, and were kindly received at the *French Court*, with Promise of Aid; but King *Richard*, to strengthen his Alliance, married the Lady *Anne*, one of his Nieces to the Duke of *Rothsey*, Eldest Son to *James* King of *Scots*, concluding a League with *Scotland*, and himself made Courtship to *Elizabeth*, another of his Nieces, Eldest Daughter to *Edward* the IVth though his Queen was alive; yet soon after she was taken out of the World, as some write, by *Poison*, to make way for this new Match; whereby he proposed to defeat Earl *Henry* of his Intendments who by agreement was contracted to the said *Elizabeth*; but the virtuous Lady abhorring one stained with the Blood of her Brothers and Mothers near Kindred, prudently put him off with Delays and fair Words, and so escaped the Misery she had like to have fallen into.

Q. Anne suddenly dies.

The Earl of Richmond lands with Forces.

This News of Courtship coming to the Knowledge of Earl *Henry*, he hastened his Preparation for *England*; for Embarking such Forces as the *French King* and his own Friends afforded him, he set sail from *Borſleur*, and Landed with 2000 Men at *Milford Haven*; but the *Welsh* came slowly in till at length hearing he was of the Family of the *Tuthers*, and of their own Blood, one who might prove an especial Friend to them if he prevailed they flocked to his Standard from all Parts, under their approved Captains *John ap Morgan*, *Rice ap Thomas*, *Richard Vaughan* and others, so that soon having a strong Army, he marched forward and was joined on his way by Sir *George Talbot*, Sir *Thomas Bouchier*, Sir *William Hungerford*, and a great many other experienced Commanders with their Forces.

King *Richard*, during this March, was not idle but levied great Forces to the Number of 20000 which were Marshalled under the Leading of the Duke of *Norfolk* and others, himself advancing in

the main Battle, and on the 20th of August 1485, K. Ric. III.
in Bosworthfield in Leicestershire the Battle joined, The Battle of Bos-
and was fought with doubtful Success, shedding worth-
Blood like Water, till such time as the Lord Stanly field.
revolted from King Richard with the Regiments un-
der his Command, which when Richard perceived,
and that the Victory was likely to go against him,
resolving to lose his Life with his Crown, he broke
furiously into the Earls Battle with his Sword in
his Hand, slaying Sir William Brandon, his Stan-
dard-bearer, and threw Sir John Cheney from his
Horse much wounded, then like an enraged Lion
he charged upon the Earl, but being oppressed by
many at once he was beaten down and slain, as al-
so was the Duke of Norfolk, and many others of Richard
Note; whereupon his Army fainted and fled, about slain.
4000 of them being slain.

After this Battle the Crown was found in a
Hawthorn Bush, and set on Henry's Head by the
Lord Stanly, so that in the Field he was proclai-
med King, and the dead Body of King Richard
bloody and naked, being laid cross a Horse, was
carried to Leicester, where after it had been two
Days exposed to view, it was buried in the Grey-
Friars there, and thus by a just Hand he was cut
off for his many Murthers, when he had Reigned
two Years and two Months.

It is remarkable of this Richard, that he was
born with many Teeth, and much Hair on his
Head, a withered Left-arm, and a Bunch on his
Back, so that in sucking he usually fetched Blood
of his Nurses, for he had many, one Woman not
being able to endure him long, which presaged he
would be cruel and bloody in his Actions, and his
Manners as deformed as his Person.

HENRY the Seventh King of England, &c.

K. H. VII.

Henry's
Pedigree
and Title.

THIS Henry was of the Blood Royal in the following Manner, Queen Catharine, Mother to King Henry the Sixth; being a Widow, married Owen Tudor a Welsh Gentleman of mean Fortune, but lineally descended from Cadwallader, the last King of the Britains, or Welsh, and had Issue by her two Sons, viz. Edmund and Jasper; Edmund was by King Henry the Sixth created Earl of Richmond, and took to Wife the Lady Margaret, sole Daughter and Heiress to John Duke of Somerset, of the Blood Royal, from Edward the Third and on her he begat Henry Earl of Richmond, of this Henry the Seventh; and thus having set forth his Title to the Crown, I proceed to what happened during his Reign.

He marries
the Lady
Elizabeth.

After the Victory of Bosworth, yet fearing Troubles from the House of York, to secure against them as well as he might, he imprisoned Edward Plantagenet, Earl of Warwick, Son to George Duke of Clarence, Brother to King Richard, and coming to London, according to Contract married the Lady Elizabeth, King Edward's Eldest Daughter thereby uniting the Houses of York and Lancaster and she the ensuing September was delivered of a Son who was christened Arthur; afterwards married to the Princess Catharine of Spain. But he died young, during his Father's Reign.

Upon the Birth of this Prince King Henry freely pardoned all those that had bore Arms against him conditionally that they shou'd swear Allegiance to him, but many refusing so to do, their Lands and

Grou

Goods were confiscated; whereupon the Lord *Lovel*, Sir *Humphrey Stafford*, and others, leaving Sanctuary, raised a Rebellion, but the King coming suddenly upon them with an Army, the Chief of them fled, and left their Soldiers to shift, who submitting mostly were pardoned, but Sir *Humphrey Stafford*, and his Brother *Thomas* were taken out of *Culnham* Abby; whither they had fled for Sanctuary, whereupon the first was beheaded, and the latter pardoned, as being seduced by his Brother to take up Arms against his Mind.

This Storm being over another more dangerous threaten'd much Blood-shed; for one *Richard Simond* a Priest, having trained up a Pupil much resembling the Earl of *Warwick*, imposed him on many for the true Earl, who was then Prisoner in the Tower, whereupon War was levied to place him on the Throne; but in a Battle near *Stoke* in *Lincolnshire*, they were overthrown by the King's Forces, where the Lord *Lovel* and many more of Note were slain; *Symnel* taken Prisoner, and publickly confessing he was an Impostor, was put to be a Scullion in the King's Kitchen, and after made his Falconer, but soon after *Margaret*, Dutches Dowager of *Burgundy*, mortally hating the House of *Lancaster*, intruded another Impostor named *Perkin* or *Perkin Warbeck* who affirmed he was *Richard Duke of York*, second Son to *Edward* the Fourth, who was not murdered in the Tower, but privately sent away to his Aunt the Dutches, and King *Richard* deceived in his Expectation.

This raised more dangerous Troubles than the former, for not only the *Irish*, but the King of *Scots* took part with him, and married him to *Catharine Gourdon* his Niece, a Lady of singular Beauty and Virtue, so that all *England* was greatly perplexed and disturbed for a time with many Insurrections of the People, but after much Blood-shed *Perkin Warbeck* being left of his Companions, took Sanctuary

K. H. VII. *Stuary in the Abby of Beaully near Southampton;* but the place being surrounded with Armed-men, he upon promise of Life surrendered himself, and at *Westminster* publicly declared his mean Birth and Parentage, and how he had been perswaded by the Dutchess to undertake this Enterprize, and when he had made his Confession in several places, he was committed to the Tower, but practising to escape though he had been pardoned, was as a Traitor executed at *Tyburn*. And it being falsely charged, as most believed, on the innocent Earl of *Warwick*, that he also practised to escape with him, and raise Troubles in the Kingdom, King *Henry's* Fears laying hold of the Surmise to put him out of the World, caused him to be tried and wrongfully condemned for High-Treason, and so beheaded on the Tower-Green, when he had been a Prisoner the greater part of his Life through the Jealousies of his two Uncles, and this King; insomuch that it is reported of him, he could not distinguish a Goose from a Hen, having been so little abroad in the World; and in this King *Henry's* Cruelty equalled if not exceeded *Richard's*; for as the latter privately caused his Nephews to be murdered by the hands of two or three mercenary Villains, the former bare-faced and openly defiled his own Conscience and his Courts of Justice, with the innocent Royal Blood of the last Male of the *Plantagenets*, nor was his Cruelty and Ingratitude less to *Stanly*, who had been mainly instrumental in setting the Crown on his Head; for Sir *Robert Clifton*, one of his Spies abroad during these Troubles, accusing *Stanly* to have said, *If he thought Perkin was the true Duke of York, he would not draw his Sword against him*; he was for this slight Cause beheaded; nor did this King at all restrain the Clergy's Cruelty, but rather himself oppressed his People by encouraging corrupt Judges and Informers, rigorously to put the Penal Laws in execution; of which more hereafter.

*The true
Earl of
Warwick
wrongfully
beheaded.*

*Stanly
beheaded.*

During these Troubles, *Thomas Bouchier* Arch-^{K. H. VII.}
 Bishop of *Canterbury*, died, and was succeeded by *Morton* Bishop of *Ely*, the King's great Favourite,
 who was also Lord Chancellour of *England*, and
 soon after dignified with a Hat and Habit of a
 Cardinal, by Pope *Alexander* the Sixth. This
 Man being crafty and cruel caused much Persecu-
 tion against the Professors of the Gospel; for An-
 no 1494, a very aged and religious Gentlewoman,
 named *Joan Boughton*, was called in question upon
 Articles touching her Faith, and for holding *Wick-*
liff's Opinions contrary to those of the Church ^{Joan Boughton}
 of *Rome*, which the Doctors at *London*, before ^{Martyr.}
 whom she was cited, laboured to have her to recant,
 but not being able to prevail, they threatened her
 very grievously, saying, She should be burnt for an
 obstinate Heretick, to which, smiling, she replied,
She feared not to pass through the Fire to receive a
glorious Crown of Martyrdom; for she doubted not, how-
ever she was deemed by them, she was notwithstanding
beloved of God and his Holy Angels, and being here-
upon condemned, though above fourscore Years of
Age, she courageously suffered the Flames, fervent-
ly praying to God To receive her Soul into his most
merciful Hands, &c.

Soon after this Cruelty, viz. Anno 1497, many ^{Many per-}
 were persecuted upon light Suggestions, and made, ^{secused for}
 for clearing themselves, to do severe Penance, as ^{the Truth.}
 carrying Faggots before the Cross in Procession, and
 standing with ridiculous Papers on their Heads in
St. Paul's Church; and Anno 1498. the King being
 at *Canterbury*, a Priest grounded in *Wickliff's* Opi-
 ons, could not be perswaded to renounce them
 by the Bishops, nor any other Clergy, which thing
 the King undertook to perswade him to do, and
 being brought into his Presence he expressed so
 many Promises and Threatnings, that the Man
 fearing the Date of his Life was near expiring, did
 recant, notwithstanding having in some manner an-
 gred

H. H. VII. gred the Archbishop he was sentenced and burhed to Ashes, the King not in the least opposing it, standing to the Promises of Life he had made him upon Condition of his revoking the Doctrine he professed.

Barham
Martyr.

In this Year 1498 the King and Queen heing at *Callis*, a godly old Man named *Barham*, was persecuted by the Clergy of *Norfolk*, who after many grievous Afflictions laid on him by Imprisonment and Tortures, sentenced him as a Heretick, where upon he suffered Martyrdom by Fire; and the next Year the Pope raised a general Persecution, so that among others *Hieronymus Savonarola*, a Monk in *Italy*, preaching against the corrupt Lives of the Clergy, and particularly against the Wickedness and Debauchery of those of his own Order, a great Number approved his Doctrine, he being a Man very well learned, saying it was but reasonable it should be followed, and *That the Clergy ought to live more regular Lives to give the better Examples to the Laity*. But this so angered the Pope, that he was put under his Curse for opposing the Proceedings of his Vicar as was pretended, but indeed to silence him because the People had him highly in Esteem; yet he gave not over preaching, adding thereto a Prophecy, *That for the Wickedness of the Clergy God would wast Italy, and particularly afflict Rome*, which exactly came to pass when King *Charles* the VIIIth. of *France* came into *Italy* with a powerful Army, and so streightly besieged Pope *Alexander* in *Rome*, that he was forced to humble himself, and agree on very severe Terms. But *Hierom* in the mean time having joined to him two Friars Associates, notwithstanding the learned Defence they made, being often cursed and excommunicated, the Pope's Legate coming to *Florence*, condemned them for these and such like Articles, viz.

A True
Prophecy.

Hierom
and two
other Mar-
tyrs.

That there is free Justification through Faith in *K. H. VII.*
Christ Jesus.

That the Communion ought to be ministred under both Kinds.

That the Pope's Indulgences and Pardons were of no Effect.

That the wicked Lives of the Cardinals, and others of the Spirituality was a Scandal to Religion, and ought to be reformed, and that the Pope was not Supream Bishop, nor did he follow the Life or Doctrine of Christ, but attributed more Virtue to his own Pardons and Indulgences, than to Christ's Merits; and therefore might be justly accounted Anti-Christ.

Upon these Articles and more to the same Effect, not varying from the Truth, after Sentence being delivered, and Orders given to the Chief Magistrate of Florence, they were hanged and burnt as they hung on the Gallows, undergoing their Martyrdom with much Constancy and Patience.

Pope Alexander about this time oppressing the Germans, as well Clergy as Laity, they complained to the Emperour Maximilian, how by his Covetousness and Extortions he had in a manner ruined and impoverished the Empire, by exacting vast Sums for all Promotions and Investitures of Bishops and other Clergy; as frequently 25000, Florins a Man, and that he gave away the Principal Vacancies to his Court-favourites at Rome, illiterate Persons and Men of scandalous Lives, fitter to keep Mules than intermeddle in Church-Affairs, with much to the same purpose, drawn up in ten Principal Grievances, for which they also proposed a Remedy to restrain the Pope's Avarice, and bring him to do reason to the German Churches.

The Germans complain of the Pope to the Emperour.

The good Emperour moved at these just Complaints, delayed not to put out his Edict, restraining Plurality of Benefices, and the Encroachments of the Pope, and his Non resident Clergy, which

K. H. VII. as it disgusted the Bishop of *Rome*, so it greatly satisfied the *German Nation*. As for Pope *Alexander*, he notwithstanding Tyrannized in *Italy*, committing many horrible Wickednesses, and amongst others that rendered him infamous both to the Christians and Turks, he poisoned *Zemes*, or *Gemes*, Brother to *Bajazet*; Emperour of the *Turks*, who flying his Brothers Cruelty, put himself under the Protection of the *Venetians*, who received him of the *Rhodians*, their Tributaries, and Honourably maintained him, till this Pope (hoping to get a great Summ of Money of *Bajazet*, against whom this young Prince had warred as laying Claim to the Turkish Empire, either to keep him close Prisoner or deliver him up a Sacrifice) got him out of their Hands, under a Pretence of converting him to the Christian Religion, and had 40000 Crowns yearly for his Maintenance, but *Charles* the 8th of *France* soon after demanding him of the Pope, to hinder him of gaining any Reward or Advantage by him, he first gave the Turkish Prince Poison, and then delivered him, so that on his way he died in great Torture at *Terracina*, and then in despite stirred up the *Turks* to War on King *Charles's* Countries and Islands lying in the *Mediterranean*, by which we may see what Religion this Pope had, who preferred his own private Revenge before the Honour of our Lord and Saviour, professing outwardly with his Lips, but in his Heart denying him; and indeed the *Turks* are chiefly beholden to the Pope of *Rome* for their Greatness, especially in *Europe*, who mostly have furthered it by raising Wars and Troubles both in Church and State; nay, I might add further, that for the abominable Wickedness of these Rulers of the Church, they may be looked on as a Scourge in God's Hands to punish the Professours of Christianity for not living according to their Profession.

*Zemes a
Turkish
Prince
treacher-
ously poi-
soned by
the Pope.*

As for this Poisoning Pope *Alexander*, he did not long out-live this Great wickedness, the measure that he meeted being remeasured to him again, for sitting at Dinner with his Cardinals, he and many others were Poisoned with Wine brought to the Table by one of his Servants, whether purposely, or by mistake remains *doubtful*, and so amidst Cries and Horrible Groans he ended his wicked life.

R. H. VII.

Pope Alexander Poisoned.

This Pope *Alexander*, caused the hands of *Antony Mancinellus* to be cut off, and his tongue to be cut out for Writing against his Wicked Proceedings.

His Cruelty.

To *Alexander* Succeeded Pope *Pius* the Third, and to him *Julius* the Second, a Man fierce and cruel, altogether addicted to War and Blood-shed, and raising a cruel Persecution, because the *Venetians* and others opposed him in it, he Warred upon them, girding himself with a Sword, and Marching at the Head of his Army, when passing the River *Tyber*, over a Bridge having *St. Peters Keys*, as they call them, in his hand, he furiously threw them into the River, saying, *That since the Keys of Peter would not prevail to serve his Intentions, Paul's Sword should supply their defect*; And thereupon drawing out his Sword, he flourished it over his Head in a mighty Bravado; and of this Pope it is certainly reported, that what with Wars and Persecution in 7 years space, 200000 Christians lost their Lives, ruining in a manner all the Principalities and Estates of *Italy*, as *Imolia*, *Ravenna*, *Bologna*, *Faventia*, and others, and altho' upon his Election he took an Oath to call a General Council within two years, he utterly neglected it, till several Cardinals separating from him, called one at *Visa*, resolving to depose him, because he had broke his Oath; which coming to his Ear, he put out his Bull, commanding under great Penalties none should obey them; and the next year called one himself, viz. Anno 1512. But *Charles* the French

St. Peter's Keys thrown into the River Tyber, by Pope Julius.

K. H. VII King, understanding he had joyned with the *Vene-
tians* to War upon his Territories in *Italy*, Con-
vened a Council at *Turin*, wherein these Questions
were Proposed, *viz.* Whether it was Lawful for the
Pope to move War against any Prince without cause
Whether any Prince in defence of himself, might justly
Invade his Adversary and deny his Obedience.

To these Questions the Answer was, That the Bi-
shop of Rome ought not to Invade, and that it was
Lawful for the King to defend himself. That the
Pragmatical sanction was to be observed throughout the
Realm of France, and that no Excommunication was
to be feared or regarded, if it was found to be unjust.
Which Questions and Answer of the Council the
King sent to the Pope, requiring him either to agree
to a Peace, or suddainly appoint a General Coun-
cil in some other place where this matter ought to
be more fully decided; yet he not only refused
both, but sent his Legates to curse Charles the
French King and his Kingdom. But being over-
thrown by the French with great slaughter, he soon
after died of Grief and Vexation, that he could
not be revenged on his Enemies, *viz.* Anno 1513.

*The Death
of Pope Ju-
lius II.*

*William
Tilsworth
Martyr.*

In England the Clergy continued the Persecution
for I find that in the Diocess of *Lincoln*, *William
Smith* being Bishop, one *William Tilsworth* suffered
Martyrdom, *Joan Clark*, a Married Woman, and
her only Daughter, being Compelled by the Perse-
cutors to set fire to the Pile of Wood that consumed
him, and at the same time *John Clark* her Husband
did Penance, bearing faggots on his back, as his fel-
low in Law was burning, as also did 18 others
after which they constrained them to wear Badges
and pass through most of the Principal Towns
doing further Penance, &c. Nay, over and above
Divers of them were Branded in the cheek with a
H. standing for Heretick. A great many more
were Imprisoned and Persecuted; also at *Buckin-
gham*, one Father *Roberts* suffered Martyrdom.

Not long after the sufferings of *Roberts, Thomas Bernard* and *James Moron*, were Accused and Condemned, being soon after sent to the fire, where they patiently suffered Martyrdom, the one being a Farmer and the other a Labouring-man, and all the Crimes charged on them so far as can find, amounted to no more than speaking against the Idolatrous Worshiping of Images, and the Pride and Covetousness of the Clergy, and for such like words about 30 were Branded in the cheek, much about the same time, and many languished and died in Prison. Among the latter was *Thomas Chase* of *Amersham*, who being put into the Bishops Dungeon Loaden with Irons and almost famished, was after a long suffering found strangled in Prison, as also shortly after was one *Richard Hun*; and to lay scandals on them, it was industriously given out, they hanged themselves either in despair, or to avoid a worse punishment. *Thomas Harding* of the same Town, after a long Persecution was compelled to abjure his Tenets, yet afterwards he died a Martyr in the reign of King *Henry the VIIIth*.

During the Persecution in this Reign, one *Thomas Norice*, a Godly Man, for holding his Religion, according to the Rule of the Gospel, and contrary to the Decrees of the Church of *Rome*, suffered by Persecution at *Norwich*, Anno 1507. Soon after this one *Lawrence Ghest*, was burned at *Salisbury*, for matters relating to the Sacrament: This Good Man had a Wife and 7 Children, who were brought before him at the stake, in hopes that out of a tender compassion to them he would abjure his Tenets; but when his Wife, with abundance of Tears Intreated him to save his life, he bid her be patient and trust in God, who would be a Husband to her, and Father to his Children, and not to stand in his way now that was running the Race to obtain a Crown of Glory; and so meekly commended his Soul into the hands

K. H. VII.

Roberts,
Bernard
and Mo-
ron, Mar-
tyrs.

Thomas
Chase and
Richard
Hun,
strangled
in Prison.

Thomas
Norice
and Law-
rence
Ghest,
Martyrs.

R. H. VII. of God, passing through the fire to Peace and Everlasting rest.

*Gods
Judgment
on a Perse-
cuting Dr.*

A Godly Woman, whose Name I find not, being burnt at *Cheping Sudbury*, by *Dr. Whittington*, the Bishops Chancellour, and there patiently enduring Martyrdom, a wonderful Judgment of God fell on the wicked Chancellour, for he being among the Croud, to Glut his cruel Eyes with her sufferings, a Bullock breaking loose from a Butchers Slaughter House, came runing amongst them in great fury, yet hurt neither great nor small, till making his way to the Chancellour, he thrust his Horns into his huge fat Belly, and trailed his Guts upon them after him a good way in the street, so the cruel Chancellour immediately died, not living to triumph in the Death of her, whom he thought no doubt to have out-lived by many years, and though this may appear to some as an accidental thing, yet let them consider Gods ways both of Mercy and Judgment with Men, are wonderful, and of all to be admired in awful silence, since the secret Actings of his Providence are past finding out.

Divers

Persecuted.

In this Reign a greater Number than I have yet mentioned were Persecuted, viz. *John Blomston*, *Richard Hegham*, *Robert Crowther*, *John Smith*, *Roger Brown*, *Thomas Butteler*, *John Fals*, *Richard Hill*, *min*, *Margery Goyt*; and Particularly in *Italy* the Learned *Johannes Picus*, Earl of *Mirandula*, who disputing against the Pope and his Clergy, so well proved the Truth of the Doctrine and Faith he Professed, that they were Astonished at his Excellent Parts and Profound Learning; yet where Malice and Interest take Place, the brightest Virtue is rarely secure against them; but seeing none of these as I find came to a Violent Death, for brevities sake (their Accusations being no other than for opposing the Corrupt Doctrine of the *Roman Church*) I pass over the Particular Circumstances attending their troubles, and conclude it only fit to Name them

them in this History. Yet plain is it by these many grievous Persecutions, the Church of Rome had utterly lost all Christian Charity, which is the Bond of Amity, proving more Inhumane than the Heathen Persecutors, who seeing the Unity among the Christians, were wont to admire so strict an Amity, and often cry out, *O see, how these Christians Love one another !* But to begin where I left off in Affairs of State.

King Henry the Seventh following the Example of some cruel and Politick Kings, laboured all he could by cutting off such as stood in his way to Establish his Throne, and leave an undisturbed Succession to his Posterity ; To effect which he waded very deep in blood, tho' he had promised better things upon his Accession to the Crown, for which a punishment befel him in Gods taking away Prince Arthur his Eldest Son, who was a little before Married to the Lady Catharine, Daughter to King Ferdinand of Spain, who bringing a great Dower, and being in his Worldly Policy resolving to secure it, with the consent of her Father, Married her to Prince Henry his only remaining Son, which caused many Troubles and Vexations, as will appear in the next Reign, and to James the Fourth King of Scotland, who Married Margaret his Eldest Daughter, by which Marriage in process of time happened the Union of the two Kingdoms, which for so many hundred years had contended in cruel Wars.

Prince
Arthur
dies,

These things being over, the King set his mind only on getting Riches, and so far extended his Insatiable Avarice that he regarded not how it was gotten, Extorting it from his Subjects by Violence, and very grievous oppressions, to the utter ruin of a great many Eminent Families.

This King
a great
oppressor

As for his chief Instruments of Injustice, they were Sir Richard Empson and Edmund Dudley, two of his Judges, who putting the Penal Laws severely in Execution, and stretching them where they had

K. H. VII. not a sufficient Extent, did whatsoever he Dictated. Under them were a swarm of Informers and other Subordinates, who oppressed the People in all the Shires of *England* and *Wales* without redress; for the Kings Ears were stoped to all Complaints, which gained him an Universal Hatred.

Whilst things passed thus with a high hand, *Philip* Duke of *Austria*, in right of his Dutcheſs, being King of *Spain*, Sailing to take Poſſeſſion of his new Kingdom, was by a Tempeſt driven into *Weymouth*, and Invited by King *Henry* to his Court at *Windſor*, where with his Queen, he was Royally Entertained, and rather through fear of being detained a Priſoner, than of his own free Princely Inclination, King *Henry* got a ſolemn promiſe of him on his Arrival in his own Country, to put into his hands the Duke of *Suffolk*, being of the Blood Royal, who ſheltered there, and accordingly he was delivered up, on condition his life ſhould be ſpared and kept cloſe Priſoner, but in the next Reign he was, without any other cauſe than State Jealouſie, put to Death; nay, in all probability he had not lived ſo long, but that this King ſoon fell into a Languiſhing Diſeaſe, and being in his Sickneſs ſmitten with remorse of Conſcience, ſtayed the further Execution of the Penal Laws, Enlarging ſuch as were Impriſoned on that Account, and for ſome other matters of little moment, reſtoring Money to ſome Ruined Families, and relieving the Poor, ſoon after which he dyed, when he had Reigned 23 years and 8 Months, being Buryed by *Elizabeth* his Queen (who dyed a little before) in his New Chappel at *Weſtminſter*, Aged 52 years.

The King falls ſick, ſtops the Execution of the Penal Laws and dies.

A Table of the Arch Biſhops of *Canterbury* in this Sixth Book.



John Stafford,

John Kemp,

Thomas Bourchier,

John Morton.

Thomas Langton.

Henry Dene

Guliel. Warham.

The End of the first Volume.

T H E T A B L E.

A.

- A** Braham and Walden Martyrs, page 333.
 Accuser of St. James, owns himself a Christian and suffers Death with him, p. 4.
 Achaicus, Heliades, Theodorus, &c. put to Death p. 25
 Acton (Sir Roger) and others put to Death, p. 312.
 Adrian dies, and is Succeeded by Antoninus Pius, a
 favourer of the Christians, p. 27.
 Adrian (Pope) and his Cardinal taken Prisoners, p. 194,
 the Emperor opposes his Proceedings, p. 195, he Ex-
 communicates the Emperor, *ibid.* he is choaked with
 a fly, p. 196.
 Agapetus, Calepodius, Pammachius, and his Wife
 and Children suffer Martyrdom, p. 41.
 Agincourt, a Battle fought there, p. 308.
 Alexander, Bishop of Rome, &c. put to Death, p. 24.
 Alexander made Bishop of Jerusalem, during the Life
 of Narcissus, p. 37, his Death, *ibid.*
 Alexander Severus, Emperor, under whom the Fifth
 Persecution Ceased, p. 39.
 Alexander, Bishop of Jerusalem, put to Death, p. 43.
 Alexander (Pope) Excommunicates the Emperor,
 p. 196, is Poisoned, *ibid.*
 Alexander (Pope) Poisoned, p. 371, his Cruelty, *ibid.*
 Alfred (King) retrieves his Country, and forces the
 Danes to sue for Peace, p. 118, he Assigns Norfolk,
 &c. to the Danes, p. 119, his Death, *ibid.* he is Suc-
 ceeded by his Son Edward, *ibid.*

Alfred

The TABLE.

- Alfred (Prince) *his miserable Death, by the wicked contrivance of Earl Goodwin*, p. 143.
 St. Andrew, *his Life and Sufferings*, p. 6.
 Andoclus *Martyr*, p. 37.
 Anne, *Queen dies suddenly*, p. 362.
 Anselm *appeals to the Pope*, p. 169, *he goes to Rome*,
ibid. his words to the Pope, p. 170, *the Pope's Answer*, *ibid. he is Banished*, p. 177.
 Anterius *put to Death, and why*, p. 41.
 Anthimus and Lucianus, *put to Death*, p. 62.
 Apollonia, *a Virgin burnt*, p. 46.
 Arch-Bishops, *their Number and Names down to the sole Monarchy*, p. 106.
 Arnold, *a Divine of Oxford Murdered*, p. 182.
 Arnulphus, *Bishop of Lugdunum, Preaches at Rome*,
 p. 183, *he is Persecuted*, *ibid. his Courage and Constancy in suffering Martyrdom*, p. 184.
 Arthur (Prince) *lost his Life*, p. 212.
 Arthur (Prince) *dies*, p. 375.
 Arundel, *Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Banished*, p. 294.
 Asclepiades, *hardly escapes Martyrdom*, p. 37.
 Asclepiades, *Bishop of Antioch, Martyr, and Babylon say some*, p. 44.
 Avignon *taken by surprize, and the People cruelly slain*, p. 232.
 Aurelianus, *Emperor, puts to Death his Sisters Son*,
 p. 56, *he is kill'd by his Secretary*, *ibid.*
 Aurehus *Poisoned*, p. 87, *is succeeded by Uter*, *ibid.*
 Austin, *Gregory's Legate, fearful of going into Britain*,
 p. 91, *but is well receiv'd by Etheibert*, *ibid. made a Bishop*,
 p. 92, *made Primate of England*, p. 94, *his Great Pride*,
 p. 96, *Baptizes 10000 Saxons*, p. 97, *his Death*, *ibid.*

B

- Bagly, *Martyr*, p. 334.
 Baliol, *sent Prisoner to the Tower of London*, p. 237,
he is released and dies in Normandy, p. 243.
 Baptist (St. John) *Beheaded*, p. 3.

Basilides,

The TABLE.

- Basilides, *Converted and Suffers Martyrdom*, p. 37.
 Barham, *Martyr*, p. 368.
 St. Bartholomew, *his Life and Death*, p. 6.
 Bassianus *Successor to Severus, Murders his Brother Gera, and is himself Murdered by his own Servants*, p. 38.
 Bede a *Famous Man*, p. 103, *stones Proclaim him venerable*, *ibid.* *his Death*, *ibid.*
 Benedict III. *Pope*, p. 114.
 Benedictines (Order of) *first introduced into England*, p. 127.
 Bernard and Moron, *Martyrs*, p. 373.
 Bituricensis *Cardinal, denies the Popes Supremacy*, p. 302.
 Bohemia, *a Persecution there*, p. 313, *the King of Bohemia, Excommunicated by Pope Innocent*, p. 348
 Boniface, *Pope, his Letter to King Edward*, p. 239, *he sets up an Arch-Bishop against the Kings mind*, p. 241, *the Pope taken Prisoner and Roughly handled*, p. 242, *he dies at Rome*, *ibid.*
 Bosworthfield, *the Battle there*, p. 363.
 Boughton (Joan) *Martyr*, p. 367.
 Britain *falls into the hands of the Romans*, p. 82, *Saxons gain ground in Britain*, p. 83, *its Fertility*, *ibid.* *Exhausted of its Youth of both Sexes by the Romans*, *ibid.* *Insulted by the Scots and Picts*, *ibid.* *forc'd to call in the Saxons*, p. 84. *Vice of the People, its Ruin*, p. 87, *several Persecutions in Britain*, p. 88.
 Britains *invite over Aurelius Ambrosius, and Uter Pendragon, who gain a signal Victory over the Saxons*, p. 86.
 Buckingham, *D. of, Betrayed and Beheaded*, p. 360.

C.

- Callis *taken by the English*, p. 266.
 Calocerius *Converted and Immediately put to Death*, p. 25.

The TABLE.

- Canterbury, *the Monks of that Place without the Kings Knowledge Elect an Arch-Bishop*, p. 213, *another Election*, *ibid.*
- Canute, *gets Edmund's Children into his hands*, p. 140, *he takes Possession of Denmark*, p. 141, *his Death*, *ibid.*
- Castile (King of) *restored by Prince Edward*, p. 280.
- Cecilia's Constancy in her sufferings, p. 40, *what happen'd at her Death*, *ibid.*
- Cedwallo and Penda, *waste the Country*, p. 98.
- Celsius, *King of Northumberland, shorn a Monk*, p. 103.
- Chase (Thomas) and Richard Hun, *strangled in Prison*, p. 373.
- Chichely Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, p. 321.
- Chichester, *the Bishop of, Banished*, p. 171.
- Christians, *their Constancy and Sincerity*, p. 18, *the Number that were Martyr'd under Domitian*, p. 20, *Divers Apologies for them*, p. 26, *Malicious Accusations against them*, p. 36, *more Martyrs*, p. 45, *burnt in a fire made of the Wood of their own Houses*, p. 46, *some Renounce their Religion*, p. 46, *Differences amongst themselves*, p. 50, *Crimes objected against them*, p. 51, *300 Martyr'd in Carthage, with innumerable others in other Places*, p. 55, *Prosperity occasions fallings out amongst themselves*, p. 57, *an Edict Publish'd to Demolish and Level all their Churches and Temples with the Earth*, p. 60, *many thrown to Wild Beasts who do them no harm*, p. 61, *Bishop of Sidon, and Bishop of Gaza, with 39 others suffer Death*, p. 61, *several burnt in a Temple*, p. 63, *a City in Phrygia, with all its Inhabitants burnt*, *ibid.* *they suffer very great Persecution in Alexandria*, *ibid.*
- Clarence, D. of, *a Prophecy the cause of his Murther*, p. 352.
- Claydon and Turming, *Martyrs*, p. 321.
- Clergy, *swarm very much*, p. 127, *they stir up the Rabble to mischief*, p. 279, *they procure a cruel Statute*, p. 300.
- Clement,

The TABLE.

- Clement, Pope, his reply to the King, p. 248, many Knights Templars suffer the Flames, p. 249, his Pride, p. 250, his Legates Robbed and Soundly beaten, p. 251.
- Clement VI. Pope, and the Emperor side with the French King, p. 264.
- Cobham, Lord, a Contrivance of the Clergy against him, p. 310, he is accused to the King by the Bishops, *ibid.* he is Excommunicated, p. 311, and Sentenced as an Heretick and Escapes, p. 312, he suffers Martyrdom, *ibid.*
- Colding, Abbess of, and her Nunns cut off their Noses, p. 111.
- C. Hagar, Preaches and is Imprisoned, p. 270.
- Constantine, the Citizens and Senators of Rome, write Letters to him, p. 67, he is Encouraged by a Cross in the Heavens, *ibid.* gains a Compleat Victory, p. 68, he and Licinus, Establish'd in the Empire, p. 69, his Parentage, p. 71.
- Constantinople taken by the Turks, upon Divisions raised in Christendom by the Pope, p. 340.
- Cremensis, Cardinal, Preaching up Chastity, taken with a strumpet, p. 182.
- Cressly, a Battle there, p. 266.
- Crow, Martyr, p. 334.
- Crucifixion of our Saviour, p. 2.
- Crucifiers of our Lord, their untimely Deaths, p. 3.
- Cursing by Bell, Book and Candle, p. 188.
- Cyprian (Saint) his Apology for the Christians, p. 51, Beheaded, p. 52.

D.

- Danes and Norwegians, Invade England, p. 110, become Masters of England under Canute, p. 111, they Treacherously design to Murther Ethelstan, p. 123, but miscarry, *ibid.* Invade England, p. 133, Land again, p. 147, but are totally defeated, p. 148, they Land, and are driven out again, p. 155.
- Decius Drown'd, and his Son slain, p. 48.

Dionysius,

The TABLE.

Dionysius, *Bishop of Alexandria, with his Fellows Banish'd*, p. 53.

Domitian's *deserved and untimely end*, p. 20.

Dorotheus and Gorgonius, *strangled*, p. 62.

Dunstan, *stories related of him*, p. 130, *his Prophecy*, p. 132, *his Death*, p. 134.

E.

Edgar *plac'd on the Throne*, p. 127, *is row'd in his Barge by 8 Petty Kings*, p. 129, *his Vices*, *ibid.* *his Death*, p. 131.

Edmund *sur-nam'd Ironside succeeds his Father Ethelred*, p. 138, *he and Canute engage singly*, p. 139, *Peace between him and Canute*, *ibid.* *he is kill'd by Edrick, Duke of Mercia*, p. 140.

Edrick *Beheaded for the Murther of King Edmund*, p. 140.

Edmund K. *slain by the Danes*, p. 117.

Edmund K. p. 125, *is Victorious against the Danes*, *ibid.* *Enacts good Laws*, *ibid.* *takes Cumberland*, *ibid.* *gives it to Malcolm*, *ibid.* *his good Laws*, p. 126, *his Death*, *ibid.*

Edward Confessor, *King*, p. 111.

Edward, *King, obtains great Victories over the Danes*, p. 120, *his Death*, p. 121.

Edward, *King, succeeds his Father Edgar*, p. 131, *is Murder'd by his Step-Mother*, *ibid.*

Edward Confessor, *made King*, p. 144, *Marries Earl Goodwins Daughter*, *but refuses her Bed*, *ibid.* *his Death*, p. 147.

Edward, *Prince, goes with an Army to War in the Holy Land*, p. 233.

Edward I. *and his Queen Crowned*, p. 234, *several good Laws Enacted*, p. 235, *the Jews Banished*, p. 236, *he gives his Judgment for John Baliol to be King of Scotland*, p. 237, *he seizes on the Treasure in Religious Houses, &c.* p. 238, *his Resolution*, p. 239, *his Answer to the Pope*, *ibid.* *the Peers write to the Pope*, p. 240, *his Death*, p. 244, *a Remark on this Kings*

The TABLE.

Kings Clemency, ibid. his great prudence in detecting a pretended Miracle, ibid. his good advice to his Son, p. 245.

Edward II. Married and Crown'd, p. 246, his Answer to the Pope, p. 247, a Prince Born, p. 252, his Queen Lands with an Army, p. 255, the King taken Prisoner, ibid. he is deposed, ibid.

Edward, Prince, Crowned King, p. 257, he invades Scotland, ibid. a daring attempt, ibid. Privileges Confirmed to the City of London, p. 258, the Deposed King Barbarously Murthered, p. 259, the Kings Uncle Beheaded, ibid. a Prince Born, p. 260, his Title to the Crown of France, ibid. he assumes the Title of King of France, p. 261, he Challenges the French King, p. 263, Corrupt Officers punished, p. 264, the King and Nobles write to the Pope, p. 265, a Peace concluded, p. 268, the King opposes the Popes Proceedings and Writes to him, p. 269, his Death, p. 281.

Edward IV. Crown'd, p. 344, he Marries and much trouble Ensues, p. 345, he is a Prisoner and is Rescued, ibid. he flies and Henry is restored, p. 346, he Lands again in York-shire, ibid. and is again Proclaimed King, p. 347, his Death, p. 352.

Edward, Prince, Son to King Henry, Murthered, p. 347.

Edwin First, Christian King of Northumbria, p. 98.

Edwin, King, succeeds his Father Edmund, p. 126, his Vices, ibid. he is Dethron'd, p. 127.

Egbert, King, subdues several Petty Kings, p. 110, Names his Country England, ibid. his Death, p. 112.

Eleutherius and his Mother Anthia suffer, together with their Children and many others, p. 25.

Eleutherius, Pope, his Letter to King Lucius, p. 34.

Elred comes to the Crown, p. 132.

Ely the Bishop of that See, troublesome to England, p. 206, he flies in Disguise, is taken and made Prisoner, ibid.

Æmilianus

The TABLE.

- Æmilianus Emperor, slain, p. 49.
- Emma, Queen put to the Tryal of Ordeal, p. 145.
- England, a Persecution there, p. 31, the Christian Religion Establish'd by King Lucius, p. 34, so Named by the Saxons, p. 89, becomes one sole Monarchy under Egbert, p. 105, the Number of Monasteries, &c. *ibid.* a Violent Sickneſs there, p. 133, a Famine p. 145, a Famine and Peſtilence, p. 162, great Fires p. 183.
- English-man, Pope, p. 189, the English Invade France ſucceſsfully, p. 283.
- Erpenwald receives the Faith, p. 99.
- Ethelbald, King, p. 117, he dies and is ſucceeded by his Brother Etheldred, *ibid.*
- Etheldred, King, p. 117, is ſucceeded by his Brother Alfred, p. 118.
- Ethelred, King, Marries Emma, Daughter to Richard D. of Normandy, p. 135, he with his Family retire to Normandy, *ibid.* he dies through grief, p. 136.
- Ethelred, King of Mercia, becomes a Monk, p. 102.
- Ethelfred ſlays Eleven Hundred Monks, p. 97.
- Ethelſtan, King, ſucceeds his Father, p. 122, Earl Elfrid Conſpires againſt him, *ibid.* he thro' ill advice deſtroys his Brother, p. 123, Death of his accuſer *ibid.* his Siſter Married to Otho 1^{ſt}. *ibid.* he receives great Preſents from Forreign Princes, p. 124, his Death, *ibid.*
- Ethelwold becomes a Chriſtian, p. 101.
- Ethelwolf, King, p. 112, Marries Charles the Bald's Daughter who returning to her Father, is taken, and Married by Baldwin of Flanders, p. 113, his Death *ibid.*
- Evaristus Renounces the Faith, p. 48.
- Eugenius, Pope, depoſed in the Council of Baſil, p. 336 he is Excommunicated, and his Reſtleſs Endeavour to maintain his Title to the Triple Crown, *ibid.*
- Eusebius's Account of the Thundering Legion, p. 32.
- Exeter, the Biſhop of that See, Beheaded by the Londoners, p. 255.

The TABLE.

F.

- Fabianus, *Martyr*, p. 43.
 Faustinus and Jobita, *their Constancy under Martyrdom*, p. 25.
 Flavia, *a Roman Lady Banished, and why*, p. 18.
 Florence, John, *Persecuted*, p. 331.
 Fluence, *the Bishop thereof, declares Anti-christ to be Born*, p. 179.
 Dr. Foliot *Persecuted for blaming the evil Lives of the Clergy*, p. 200.
 Frederick, *the Emperor submits, and the Pope treads on his Neck*, p. 196.
 French *Invade England and are beaten out*, p. 282;
they Invade England and are defeated, p. 306.
 Fructuosus and his two Deacons, *ibid.*
 Fryars, *two of them suffer Martyrdom*, p. 270, *the Prelates write against the Fryars*, *ibid.*

G.

- Galerius's *Speech to St. Cyprian*, p. 52.
 Gallus and Volusianus, *Emperors slain*, p. 49.
 Garter, *the first Institution of that Order*, p. 281.
 Gaveston *Banished*, p. 248; *Beheaded*, p. 249.
 Germanicus *put to Death*, p. 28.
 Germans *complain of the Pope to the Emperor*, p. 369.
 Germany, *Divers Martyrs there*, p. 335.
 Glastenbury *Abby, built by K. Edmund*, p. 125.
 Gloucester, *of Dutcheſs, falſely Accuſed and Imprisoned during Life*, p. 329.
 Gloucester *the Good Duke, accounted a Martyr*, p. 339,
he detects a pretended Miracle, *ibid.*
 Goddesel (John) *taken up and diſmiſs'd*, p. 332.
 Goodwin, *Earl, his Death*, p. 146.
 Goos (John) *Martyr*, p. 348.
 Greeks *submit to the Romiſh Church*, p. 337.

The TABLE.

Gregory, Bishop of Rome, introduces the Christian Faith in Britain, p. 89.

Gregory the 7th. a wicked Pope, p. 158, he casts the Sacrament into the fire, p. 159, he raises a Rebellion against the Emperor, *ibid.* the Emperor, his Empress, and Son wait three days at the Pope's Gate for admittance, p. 160, he is deposed and dies penitent, *ibid.*

Gregory, Pope, raises a Persecution, p. 231, the Persecutors destroyed by Pestilence and Famine, *ibid.* his Legate forsworn, p. 232.

Gregory, Pope, his Bull against Wickliffe's Doctrine, p. 286, he is Perjured, p. 302.

Guy, the Noble Earl of Warwick, p. 124.

Gysors, the Battel there, p. 209.

H.

Harold King, p. 111, is subdu'd by William, Duke of Normandy, p. 112.

Harold, King, succeeded his Father Canute, p. 142, his Death, p. 143.

Harold Crown'd King, p. 147.

Hastings, Lord Beheaded, and the Lord Stanly wounded, p. 355.

Heliogabalus Emperor, p. 39, slain, *ibid.*

Hengist and Horsa slain, p. 86.

Henry I. Crown'd King, p. 113, his good Laws, p. 174, he Confirms the Laws of Edward the Confessor, p. 175, flatterers Banished the Court, p. 175, he Marries, p. 176, he Invades Normandy, p. 176, he recalls his Grants, p. 177, he erects a Bishoprick, p. 180, is Victorious in France, p. 181, most of his Children drowned by Shipwrack, *ibid.* he builds the Abby at Reading, *ibid.* a Parliament framed of three Estates, *ibid.* he Marries again, *ibid.* he has an interview with the Pope, p. 182, he Marries his Daughter to Geoffry Plantagenet, p. 183, the Nobility three times sworn to her, *ibid.* he dies in Normandy, *ibid.* his good deeds, *ibid.*

Henry

The TABLE.

Henry Son to the Empress Maud Invades England, p. 187, an agreement made, *ibid.*

Henry the Second three times Crown'd, p. 190, he subdues Scotland, p. 191, his Son and others invade Ireland, p. 192, is vexed by Tho. Becket, p. 197, King Stephen's Laws repeal'd, *ibid.* Becket's Relations Banished, p. 198, he confers with Becket in France, but to no purpose, p. 198, he restores Becket for fear of the Pope's Curse, p. 199, he goes bare-foot to Becket's Tomb, and is scourged by the Monks, *ibid.* he dies in Normandy, p. 200.

Henry the Third Crown'd King, p. 221, he overthrows the French in England, *ibid.* the French shut up in London Article and have leave to depart the Land, p. 222, strangers Banish'd the Kingdom, p. 224, he is Crowned a second time, *ibid.* an Army sent into France who War successfully, p. 225, the King goes in Person, and a Peace is concluded on advantageous Terms, *ibid.* Edward the Kings Son, Married and Created Prince of Wales, &c. p. 226, he narrowly escaped being Murder'd at Oxford, *ibid.* he is put to the worst in France, p. 227, he concludes a Peace with Scotland, *ibid.* he signs a Patent against his Prerogative, *ibid.* the King Sails to France, and confers with King Lewis, p. 228, he returns from France, p. 229, and Publishes the Popes Bulls against the Barons, *ibid.* a Civil War breaks out, p. 229, a cruel Battel fought, and the King taken Prisoner, p. 230, a Treaty and Peace concluded, *ibid.* he is set at Liberty, p. 231, his Death, p. 234.

Henry IVth. Emperor of Germany, Poison'd in the Sacrament, p. 251.

Henry Claims the Crown, p. 295, and is Crowned, p. 296, a Conspiracy against him discover'd, *ibid.* he writ to the Pope, p. 302, a Rebellion against him in the North, p. 305, he is like to be taken by the French, p. 306, his Death, p. 307.

The TABLE.

Henry Vth. Crowned, p. 308, and renews the Claim to the Crown of France, *ibid.* he is Victorious in France, p. 309, part of his Army worsted in France, and the D. of Clarence slain, p. 324, his Queen delivered of a Prince. A true presage of the Kings, *ibid.* his Death, p. 325.

Henry VIth. Crowned in England and France, p. 327, he Marries, p. 343, he flies into Scotland, and Edward is Proclaimed King, p. 344, a strange thing, *ibid.*

Henry VIIth. his Pedigree and Title, p. 364, he Marries the Lady Elizabeth, p. 364, he becomes a great Oppressor, p. 375, he falls sick, stops the Execution of the Penal Laws and Dies, p. 376.

Hierom and two others Martyrs, p. 368.

Honorius, Pope, his Legate fleeces the English Clergy, p. 222, the Pope Writes to King Henry, p. 223.

Hovedon Martyr, p. 334.

I.

St. James slain, p. 3.

St. James the Brother of our Lord, his Testimony and Sufferings, p. 8.

Jews Fomenters of the Persecutions of Christians, p. 11, they Crucify a Child at Norwich, p. 189, many hurt and slain, p. 201, a desperate Madness of the Jews at York, *ibid.*

Jerom of Prague Martyr, p. 318, he is burnt to Ashes, p. 320.

Ignatius's Exemplary Sufferings and Death, p. 23.

Images destroy'd by Lightning, p. 166.

Ine, King, resigns his Crown and goes on Pilgrimage to Rome, p. 102, his Queen becomes an Abbess, *ibid.*

Innocent, Pope, sends his Legate into England, p. 212, he recommends an Arch-Bishop to the Monks of Canterbury, p. 213, he would impose an Arch-Bishop on them, p. 214, his Command to them, *ibid.*, they Elect as he directed, *ibid.* he threatens the King, p. 215,

The TABLE.

- p. 215, *he interdicts England, and no Divine service for six years*, p. 216, *he gives the Kingdom of England to King Philip of France*, p. 217, *the Legates Speech*, *ibid.* *he Curses Philip of France, and his Adherents*, p. 218, *he Excommunicates several Princes*, p. 219, *and causes their Subjects to Rebel against them*, *ibid.* *he dies suddenly*, *ibid.* *he caused many to be Persecuted for opposing the Monks and Friars, and in Alsatia 100 suffered Martyrdom*, p. 225.
- Innocent, Pope, *Pronounces a Curse against the Living and Dead*, p. 272, *some of his Agents, sentenced to be hanged*, *ibid.*
- Innocent, Pope, *his Luxury*, p. 349.
- Joan, a Woman Elected Pope, p. 113, *she falls in Labour at a solemn Procession*, p. 114.
- St. John's Sufferings and Banishment, p. 17, *Eusebius and Irenæus concerning him*, *ibid.*
- John, Earl, *submits himself to the King, and is Pardoned*, p. 207.
- John, King, *Crown'd and takes an Oath*, p. 211, *a Truce between England and France, soon broke*, *ibid.* *a Conference with the King of France*, *ibid.* *War with France*, p. 212, *his Letter*, p. 214, *he Banishes the Monks of Canterbury*, p. 215, *a Contest between him and the Pope*, *ibid.* *he Banishes several Bishops*, p. 216, *he is Cursed by the Popes Legate, and his Subjects discharged from their Allegiance*, *ibid.* *the Kings stout Answer*, p. 217, *a lying Prophecy*, *ibid.*
- King John *meanly submits to the Pope and Angers the Nobles*, p. 218, *the Nobles desert him and side with the French*, *ibid.* *great spoil made by the Rabble*, *ibid.* *he is Poisoned by a Monk*, p. 220.
- John Badby *Persecuted*, p. 299, *his Accusation*, *ibid.* *his Answer*, *ibid.* *and Martyrdom*, *ibid.*
- John Purvey and others *Persecuted*, p. 300.

The TABLE.

- John Huss, *writes against the Popes Bulls*, p. 303, *he is Banished*, p. 314, *he is Imprisoned and Condemned*, p. 316, *his Bosks burnt*, *ibid.* *his Martyrdom*, p. 317.
- John Pope, *an Owl in his Council*, p. 314, *he is Accused of Murther*, &c. *ibid.*
- John Barton *Persecuted*, p. 322.
- John, *a Neat-herd Martyr*, p. 349.
- Joseph of Arimathea, *supposed to be bury'd at Glasterbury*, p. 125.
- Ireland *submiteth to King Henry*, p. 192, *the Prime thereof opposes Persecution*, p. 276.
- Irenæus of Lyons, *suffers Martyrdom*, p. 37.
- St. Jude *put to Death*, p. 4.
- Julius Pope, *throws St. Peter's Keys into the River Tyber*, p. 371, *his Death*, p. 372.
- Justus *made Bishop of Jerusalem*, p. 16.

L.

- Lambeth, *the Arch-Bishop builds his House there*, p. 208.
- Lancaster, *the Earl thereof, and other Nobles Beheaded*, p. 253, *the Duke thereof, a friend to Wickliffe*, p. 279.
- Lawrence, St. *his Remarkable Sufferings and Death*, p. 52.
- Legates *are sent to Curse the King and Realm*, p. 198.
- Leicester and Gloucester *disagree*, p. 233, *a Bloody Battel and Leicester slain*, *ibid.*
- Leonides, *Origen's Father Beheaded*, p. 36.
- Lewelin Prince of Wales, *and his Brother Beheaded*, p. 235.
- Lewis the French King *raises troubles in England*, p. 193.
- Lewis King of France, *dies at the Siege of Avignon*, p. 232.
- Lewis Emperor of Germany, *Accounted a Martyr*, p. 261.

Licinius

The TABLE

Licinius still Persecutes the Christians, p. 70, he revolts and is slain by his own Soldiers, ibid.

London Tower built, p. 161, a Parliament held there, p. 223.

Londoners commit an evil Action, p. 230, they humble themselves and are Pardoned, p. 233.

Lucius King of England, first encourag'd the Christian Religion, p. 76, his Piety, p. 180, his Death, p. 81.

Romish stories related of him, ibid.

Lucius Pope, resolved to Murder the Senators, p. 188, he is soundly beaten, ibid.

St. Luke's Preaching and Martyrdom, p. 10.

M.

Macrinus and Diadumenus, Emperors of Rome, being slain, are succeeded by the Monster Heliogabalus, p. 39.

Marcus Aurelius Antonius's Letter to the Senate of Rome, p. 33.

Margaret Queen, returns, p. 346, she dies with grief, p. 347.

St. Mark his Life and Death, p. 5.

M. Patavinus, writes against the Pope, &c. p. 269.

St. Matthew's Conversion and Death, p. 7.

St. Matthias his Life and Martyrdom, p. 10.

Maud the Empress, Lands with an Army, p. 185, she leaves London for fear of a surprize, p. 186, being besieged in Oxford, she escapes to Wallingford, ibid. she is pursued and forced to leave the Land, ibid: she subdues Normandy, and her Husband dies, ibid.

Mauritius and his Soldiers put to Death, p. 64.

Maxentius takes upon him the Empire, p. 66, his Cruelty, p. 67.

Maximinus, his deserv'd Death, p. 42.

Maximus, Olympiades, Audax, and Anatolia Martyrs, p. 45.

Melitus prevails with King Sigebert, to receive the Faith, p. 95.

The TABLE.

- Mentz, the unjust dealing with the Bishop thereof, just
punished by God, p. 178, 36 Citizens burnt, p. 278.*
Mercia divided into five Bishopricks, p. 101.
Metra Martyr, p. 45.
Melirzius Persecuted, p. 277.
*Monks, a Contention between them and the Married
Priests, p. 178.*
Mortimer Executed as a Traytor, p. 260.

N.

- Nero's Barbarous Cruelties, and his deserved Death,
p. 14, two of his Guards Converted and how, ibid.*
*Nicanor and 2000 more, suffer for the Name of Christ,
p. 4.*
Nicholas I. Pope, p. 114.
Nicomachus renounces his Religion, p. 47.
*Nicostratus Renounces his Faith, p. 48, he repents and
suffers Martyrdom, ibid*
*Norice (Thomas) and Laurence Ghest, Martyrs,
p. 373.*
Normandy taken by the French, p. 212.
Nuns, their wickedness discovered, p. 250.

O.

- Odo, Bishop of Bayonne, Conspires against the King,
p. 164.*
*Orem, Dr. Preaches against the Corrupt Lives of the
Clergy, p. 277.*
*Origen forced against his will to Sacrifice to Idols,
p. 47, he Gelds himself to preserve his Chastity,
p. 48.*
*Osbright's Lust, the occasion of an Invasion, p. 116,
as also the Death of Lothbroke, ibid.*
Oswald for his great Virtues Canonized, p. 99.
*Oxford, the Mad Parliament Assembled there, p. 227,
they displace corrupt Officers from about the Kings
Person, p. 228, a fray there and that City Interdi-
cted, p. 271.*

The TABLE.

P.

Palmerius Martyr, p. 342.

Pamphilus Martyr'd, p. 61.

Paschal Pope, deposes the Emperor and Crowns his Son, p. 179, the Emperor dies of grief, p. 179, the Pope taken Prisoner, *ibid.* and another set up by the Emperor, p. 180, he dies and is succeeded by Gelasius, *ibid.*
St. Paul, and Thousands more suffer Persecution, p. 13, Beheaded, p. 14.

St. Pauls Church burnt and rebuilt, p. 157.

Persecution I. under Nero, p. 12, II. under Domitian, p. 15, III. under Trajan, p. 20, III. under Hadrian, p. 24, IV. under Marcus Antoninus Verus, p. 27, V. under Septimius Severus, p. 36, VI. under Maximinus, p. 39, VII. under Decius, p. 43, VIII. under Valerianus and Galienus, p. 49, IX. under Aurelius, p. 55, X. under Dioclesian, p. 59, Divers Persecuted, p. 289, a cruel Act, but soon repealed, p. 290, a severe Persecution, p. 291, many Persecuted for the Truth, p. 367, Divers Persecuted, p. 374.

Persecutors differ amongst themselves, p. 46, they come to untimely ends, p. 48, Gods Judgment on a Persecuting Dr. p. 374.

Perpetua and others devoured by wild Beasts, p. 38.

St. Peter's Death and the manner of it, p. 12, his Wife Martyr'd, p. 13.

Peter of Phrygia, Martyr with several others, p. 44.

Peter a Pious Man, undergoes great Torments, p. 62.

Peter's St. in Westminster built, p. 98.

Peter-pence given by King Henry Ist. to the Pope, p. 177.

St. Philip's Preaching and Sufferings, p. 7.

Philip, the French Kings Answer to King Edward, p. 263.

Phocas, Bishop of Pontus, most Barbarously put to Death, p. 22.

Piqui-

The TABLE.

- Piquicolas**, *Divers suffer Martyrdom there*, p. 342.
Pliny Junior's Epistle in favour of the Christians,
 p. 21.
Poictiers, *a Battel there, and the French King and his
 Son Prisoners*, p. 267.
St. Polycarp's Dream, p. 28, *his Prayer before he suf-
 fered*, p. 29, *strange things happening at his Execu-
 tion*, p. 30, *twelve others, his Intimates Martyr'd*,
ibid.
Pope *incroaches on the English Church*, p. 158, *two
 Popes at once*, p. 167, *the Pope held to be Anti-christ
 and the whore of Babylon*, p. 193, *3 Popes at one
 time*, p. 302, *many Popes in a little time*, p. 342.
Praxedis and her Sister Potentiana Persecuted, p. 31.
Priest, *a factious one*, p. 283.
Printing a Battering Engine against Popery, p. 340.
Priscus, Malchus and Alexander, put to Death, p. 54.
Prophecy, *a Lying one*, p. 307, *a true one*, p. 317,
another true one, p. 368.
Ptolemy and Lucius suffer, p. 31.
Punishments, *Divers kinds inflicted upon the Christi-
 ans*, p. 19.

Q.

- Quinta the Matron Martyr**, p. 45.
Quiricius and his Mother Julia, *with a great many
 more put to Death*, p. 41.

R.

- Reynold, Bishop of Chichester Persecuted**, p. 341.
Rhedonensis (Tho.) Martyr, p. 335.
Richard Crowned King, p. 201, *causes some tumultu-
 ous English to be Executed*, *ibid.* *he sets out to War
 in the Holy Land*, p. 202, *he takes Cyprus and
 that King Prisoner*, p. 203, *he takes a great Ship of
 the Saracens*, *ibid.* *the Christians take the City of
 Acoa*, *ibid.* *his Courage in despising his Enemies*,
 p. 204.

The TABLE.

- p. 204, *he is chosen General of the Christian Armies, ibid. being deserted by the French, not able to win Jerusalem, ibid. he concludes a Peace and leaves the Holy Land, p. 205, he is Shipwrack'd and taken Prisoner, ibid. being Ransom'd, he drives the French out of Normandy, p. 206, he invades France, ibid. a new Broad Seal, p. 209, the King will not turn his back, ibid. he is wounded at the Siege of Chalons, ibid. he Pardons his Murderer, p. 210, his Death, ibid. his 3 Daughters properly bestowed, ibid.*
- Richard II. Crowned, p. 281, *a difference between him and his Nobles, p. 284, his Answer to the Clergy, p. 290, he accuses the Pope of cruelty, p. 292, he seizes on the Charter of London, p. 293, his evil Councillours Executed, ibid. his Imprisonment, p. 295, he is Murthered in Prison, p. 297.*
- Richard, Edward Persecuted, p. 332.
- Richard the Protector, *gets the Duke from the Queen, p. 355, he is Petitioned to take the Crown, p. 357, he accepts it, p. 358.*
- Richard III. and his Queen Crowned, p. 358, *he gets the two Princes Murthered in the Tower, p. 359, and Gods Judgment on the Murthers, p. 359, he labours to get the Earl of Richmond into his hands, p. 361, he is slain, p. 363.*
- Richmond, Earl, *Lands with Forces, p. 362.*
- Rivers, Lord, and the Lord Grey and Sir Tho. Vaughan, *Beheaded, p. 353.*
- Robert, the Kings Son rebels, p. 161, *Lands with an Army, p. 163, returns home, ibid. Lands another Army, p. 176, would submit, but is refused, p. 176, his Imprisonment and Death, p. 177.*
- R. Wimbledon's notable Sermon, p. 301.
- Robert Chapel Prosecuted, p. 322.
- Roberts Martyr, p. 373.
- Rodolphus's Speech to the Prelates, p. 160.
- Roman Primitive Church describ'd, p. 78.

The TABLE.

Rome See, made Universal Head, p. 97, Predominates over the Nation, p. 105, great dissensions at Rome, which create Bloodshed, p. 121, Divisions there, through the ill living of the Popes, p. 136, great troubles there, p. 180, a Detention of the Church of Rome, p. 275, a Schism at Rome 39 years, p. 288.

Rupe (Allen de) a Notorious Lying Friar wrote our Ladies Psalter, p. 351.

S.

Saturninus Beheaded, p. 38.

Saxons by Treachery become Masters of Britain, p. 84, the Idols they worshipped, *ibid.* they divide Britain into seven Kingdoms, p. 85, their Cruelty, *ibid.* sole Masters of Britain, p. 87, nine Saxon Kings shorn Monks, p. 106.

Scots rebel against Severus, whom he passes the Sea to suppress, p. 38, they invade England and are routed, p. 164, the King of Scots, Tributary to King William, *ibid.* the King of Scots and his Son slain, p. 169, they invade England and are routed, p. 184, they are subdued by King Edward, and apply themselves to the Pope, p. 238, the Scots overthrown, Bruce flies to Norway, p. 240, they overthrow the English, p. 252, they invade England, p. 267, and their King taken Prisoner, *ibid.* they are defeated, p. 306.

Scotus Dr. Preaches against the Popes proceeding and is Persecuted, p. 236.

Secundulus dies under the hand of his Tormentors in Prison, p. 38.

Serapion Martyr, p. 46.

Serapion renounces his Religion, p. 47.

Serena Wife of Dioclesian suffers, p. 62.

Sergius's revenge upon Formosus, p. 121, his Vices, p. 122.

Severn, whence so called, p. 38.

Severus's

The TABLE.

- Severus's Death, p. 38.
 Severus and his Mother Mammea slain, p. 39.
 Shaw Dr. a Mercenary Preacher, p. 356.
 Ships, 3600 Ships of War, p. 128.
 Sigebert builds St. Paul's, p. 95.
 Sigismund Emperor's advice to the Pope, p. 315.
 Simon, Bishop of Jerusalem, put to Death and how,
 p. 22.
 Simon Zelotes, Crucified, p. 4.
 Simon the Canaanite murder, p. 5.
 Simon, Bishop of Jerusalem, put to Death, p. 16.
 Simplicius, with many more suffer Death for the Name
 of Christ, p. 41.
 Sixtus the Second, Pope, and six of his Deacons Be-
 headed, p. 52.
 Sixtus the 4th, Pope, allowed stews in Rome, p. 342,
 his Luxury, p. 349, his Death, p. 352.
 Spencers Banished, p. 253, Lord Spencer, Quartered
 alive and his Son hanged, p. 255.
 Stanly Lord, his true Dream, p. 356, he is Beheaded,
 p. 366.
 St. Stephen Protomartyr, p. 3.
 Stephen of Blois Crown'd King, p. 184, concludes a
 Peace, p. 185, he is taken Prisoner, *ibid.* is exchan-
 ged and released, *ibid.* Omens of his bad success,
ibid. he dies at Dover, p. 189.
 Sulpitius, Servilius, and many others put to Death,
 p. 23.
 Sulpitius, and many others thrown to Wild Beasts, p. 61.
 Suns, Two visible at once in England, p. 192.
 Synod assembled by Cuthbert, Arch-Bishop of Can-
 terbury, p. 104, one held at London, p. 157, a de-
 cree against Covetousness in Monks, p. 158, a de-
 cree in the Synod held at London, p. 187, other de-
 crees, *ibid.*

The TABLE.

T.

- Tartars and Scythians raise a cruel Persecution, p. 242.
Taylor (William) Persecuted, p. 329, he suffers Martyrdom, p. 331.
Tertullian's Reflections upon Trajan's Answer to Pliny's Letter, p. 22.
Thaddæus put to Death, p. 4.
Tharatus, &c. suffer Martyrdom, p. 61.
St. Thomas slain, p. 4.
Thomas Becket made Chancellour, p. 190, is slain at the high Altar in Canterbury Church, p. 199.
Thurstan, Arch-Bishop of York, p. 182.
Tilsworth (William) Martyr, p. 372.
Towton, the fatal Battel there, p. 343.
Trajan seems to relent, p. 21.
Tythes first granted to the Clergy, p. 124.

U.

- Urban Pope, his Decrees, p. 168, his Death, p. 208.
Urban Vth Pope, stirs up dissention in Italy, p. 276, he began the Order of Jesuits, p. 277, and bestows most of the Benefices in England on strangers, p. 281.

V.

- Valerian's deserv'd Sufferings and Death, p. 55.
Victor and his Soldiers put to Death, p. 64.
Victor Pope, Poison'd in the Sacrament, p. 166.
Virgins, forty put to Death, p. 44.
Vision, the meaning of it, p. 50.
Vitalis, Theophilus, &c. Martyrs, p. 45.

W.

- Walser, first Christian King of Mercia, p. 100.
Waldenses

The TABLE.

Waldenses Persecuted, p. 193.

Wales *interdicted* by the Popes Legate, p. 221.

Wallis Executed for Treason, p. 240.

Warwick and Clarence, *fly the Land*, p. 346, Warwick slain, p. 347, an Impostor Earl of Warwick, p. 365, the true Earl wrongfully Beheaded, p. 366.

Wat Tyler and Jack Straw, *raise a Rebellion*, p. 283, Tyler slain and the Rebels dispersed, p. 284.

Wesalia Dr. Persecuted, p. 349, *he Recants*, p. 350.

White (William) Persecuted, p. 332, *his Martyrdom*, p. 333.

Wich (Richard) Martyr, p. 337, *his Prophecy*, and the Peoples superstition, p. 338.

Wickliffe (John) opposes the Pope's proceedings, p. 278, Articles Propounded by him, p. 286, *he is cited before the Bishops*, p. 287, his Protestation, *ibid.* his Books burnt at Oxford, p. 291, *his bones taken up and burnt*, *ibid.*

William D. of Normandy, *visits King Edmund*, p. 146, *he Lands in England*, p. 148, *fights the English and gains an entire Victory*, *ibid.* the Bishops and Nobles repair to him, p. 152, *they pray him to take the Government upon him*, *ibid.* *he is Crown'd King*, *ibid.* *he compells the English to give Hostages*, *ibid.* *his rigorous beginning to settle his Affairs*, p. 153, *he causes the Laws to be turn'd into French*, *ibid.* Churches, Monasteries and Villages, destroyed to make a Forest, p. 154, *God's Judgment follows*, *ibid.* *he divides Land to his Favourites*, *ibid.* *a Rebellion against him soon quieted*, p. 155, *he makes a miserable waste in the North*, *ibid.* *he is surprized in Kent*, and compelled to confirm their Customs, p. 156, *he abates his Rigor to the English*, *ibid.* *he deprives several Prelates of their Dignities*, p. 157, *the King dies at Caen in Normandy*, p. 162.

William, Sir-named Rufus, Crown'd King, p. 163, *he punishes corrupt States-men*, p. 164, *the Pope writes to him*, p. 171, *the Kings Answer*, *ibid.* *a brave Resolution*

The TABLE.

- Resolution of the King, ibid. he quiets the Rebelling Welch, p. 172, he defeats two Covetous Monks, ibid. he is slain in New Forest, p. 173.*
William Sawtree Persecuted, p. 297, Articles against him, p. 298, his Martyrdom, ibid.
William Thorp, Persecuted, p. 301.
Winchester, Bishop of, Quarrels with the Protector, p. 328.
Windsor, Knights of the round Table, p. 265.

Y.

- York, an Impostor Duke of that Name, p. 365.*

Z.

- Zemes, a Turkish Prince, Treacherously Poisoned by the Pope, p. 370.*
Ziska, a scourge to the Romish Church, p. 320, his Death, p. 321.



F I N I S.